

***VATICAN INFLUENCE: THE OTHER SIDE OF  
THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH  
UN-VEILED***

by Nolan McFadden



# TABLE OF CONTENTS:

INTRODUCTION .....	3
CHAPTER ONE: ORIGIN OF ROMAN CATHOLICISM .....	17
CHAPTER TWO: HISTORICAL DEVELOPMENT OF ROMAN CATHOLICISM .....	27
CHAPTER THREE: THE ROMAN CATHOLIC THEOLOGICAL BASIS FOR ACTS OF AGGRESSION AGAINST PROTESTANTS, BAPTISTS, EVANGELICALS AND JEWS .....	45
CHAPTER FOUR: THOMISM: A THEOLOGY OF DEATH FOR THOSE LABELED “HERETICS” OR “ENEMIES” BY ROME .....	51
CHAPTER FIVE: THE ROMAN CATHOLIC VATICAN: GUILTY OF CRIMES AGAINST HUMANITY? DID THEY REALLY INCITE AND DECREE INQUISITIONS, MASSACRES, WARS, AND HOLOCAUSTS?.....	56
CHAPTER SIX: THE JESUIT CONNECTION: THE SOCIETY OF JESUS FROM A BIBLICAL CHRISTIAN PERSPECTIVE .....	77
CHAPTER SEVEN: LIBERATION THEOLOGY: ROME’S NEW THEOLOGY OF DEATH.....	106
CHAPTER EIGHT: THE FIFTH COLUMN – ROME’S INFLUENCE ON CATHOLICS IN THE NEWS MEDIA, GOVERNMENT, MILITARY, NATIONAL SECURITY AND HEALTH CARE.....	120
CHAPTER NINE: THE EPIDEMIC OF PEDOPHILIA AMONG THE PRIESTS OF ROME .....	144
CHAPTER TEN: SILENCING THE CRIES OF THE MARTYRS.....	154
CHAPTER ELEVEN: WE WILL REMEMBER AND HONOR THE FALLEN.....	166
CHAPTER TWELVE: HERE WE STAND, WE CAN DO NO OTHER.....	176
APPENDIX A: A BIBLICAL EVALUATION OF <i>FRATTELI TUTTI</i> OF POPE FRANCIS....	186
APPENDIX B: A BIBLICAL EVALUATION OF <i>LAUDATO SI’</i> OF POPE FRANCIS.....	191
APPENDIX C: A SYNOPSIS OF POPE PAUL VI’s <i>POPULORUM PROGRESSIO</i> .....	209
APPENDIX D: A SYNOPSIS OF POPE JOHN XXIII’s <i>PACEM IN TERRIS</i> .....	211
APPENDIX E: OPEN LETTER FROM ARCHBISHOP VIGANO TO PRESIDENT TRUMP.....	215
BIBLIOGRAPHY .....	218

© 2014, revisions 2015, 2016, 2019, 2020, 2021 Nolan McFadden

All rights reserved

Copies by permission of author

email: nbmdisciple@juno.com

## About this study

The purpose of this study is to inform and educate the Christian community. Relevant statements, beliefs and actions of people, groups, agencies and institutions are cited herein. This study is not to be regarded in any manner as an attempt, either expressed or implied, to incite or condone hatred or violence against any person, religious group, private corporation, government agency, or educational institution mentioned in this document. It is this author's wholehearted recommendation that, as *Christians*, we pray for; love; do good to; and witness to all people including those who may harbor hatred or contempt in their hearts toward us (Luke 6). At the same time, my deep concern is for the well-being and safety of the *LORD's* people in the United States and in other nations. To this aim, it is this author's intent to love, support, educate, edify, strengthen and protect Bible-believing *Christians*, *churches* and Christian ministries throughout the world.

For such a time as this (2 Timothy 3:1-5), Nolan McFadden

# ***VATICAN INFLUENCE: THE OTHER SIDE OF THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH UNVEILED***

## **A**

### **VATICAN INFLUENCE? HOW REAL IS IT?**

**“WASHINGTON – In a landmark event, Pope Francis has agreed to address a joint meeting of Congress this fall...Francis will speak Sept. 24, marking the first time the head of the world’s Roman Catholics will address Congress. It will come during the first U.S. visit of Francis’ two-year old papacy, a trip also expected to include a White House meeting with President Barack Obama, a speech to the United Nations in New York and a Catholic rally for families in Philadelphia...”**

**“...Saying he had “a bit of good news,” House Speaker John Boehner delivered the first word of Francis’ speech Thursday. “We’re humbled that the Holy Father has accepted our invitation and certainly look forward to receiving his message on behalf of the American people,” Boehner, R-Ohio, told reporters. When he speaks to lawmakers, Francis will address a Congress that is 31 percent Catholic, well above the 22 percent of all Americans, according to a survey released last month by the nonpartisan Pew Research Center. Boehner and House Minority Leader Nancy Pelosi, D-Calif., are both Catholic...” (6 February 2015, “In historic first, pope will address Congress,” by Alan Fram, Associated Press, *Austin American Statesman*, p. A3) (1)**

**“Despotisms rooted in the past are lording over a present shaken by the thunderous march of giants racing for the mastery of the world. One of these, the Catholic Church, consumed by Cimmerian dreams of formidable expansion, is biding her time to enforce her dominion upon the human race – not only as a spiritual but also as a political power, buttressed by the unshakable conviction that it is her destiny to conquer the globe. In a century rocked by the ruthless administrations of dictatorships of immense magnitude, such a credence may be laughed to scorn. Yet a credence, if firmly believed, can become as real as reality; when magnified by multitudes, it is rendered irresistible. Beliefs have conquered conquerors, routed legions, made armies invincible, sired civilizations, dethroned nations. They have been, and still are, the curse or the blessing, the brake or the spur to progress. In the past Buddhism conquered Asia, Islam, the East, Christianity, the West. Today astounding new credos have come to the fore, determined as those of old to subjugate the whole of the human race...”**

**...FREEDOM IS THEIR CLARION CALL. AND YET, JUST BECAUSE OF IT, FREEDOM HAS NEVER BEEN SO THREATENED AS IT IS AT PRESENT. IN ITS NAME THESE NEW FORCES ARE ENSLAVING THE WORLD. WHOEVER HESITATES TO SUBMIT TO THEIR KIND OF FREEDOM IS BRANDED A FOE OF FREEDOM. TO THE CATHOLIC CHURCH, FREEDOM HAS ALWAYS MEANT CATHOLIC FREEDOM; NAMELY, IMPLEMENTATION OF HER MOST FUNDAMENTAL TENET: TOTAL EXTINCTION OF WHATEVER IS NON-CATHOLIC. HER EMPIRE HAS NEITHER GEOGRAPHICAL, JURIDICAL, POLITICAL NOR IDEOLOGICAL LIMITATIONS, FOR HER TERRITORY COMPRISES LITERALLY THE WHOLE OF OUR PLANET. HER SUBJECTS ARE ACTIVE AT EVERY CORNER OF THE EARTH, WITHIN EVERY CONTINENT AND WITHIN EVERY COUNTRY, WITHIN EVERY NATIONAL AND GLOBAL**

ORGANIZATION, IRRESPECTIVE OF RACE, COLOR, DOCTRINE OR LAW, SINCE A CATHOLIC'S PRIME ALLEGIANCE IS DUE EXCLUSIVELY TO HIS SUPREME LEADER, THE POPE...

...TO THE CATHOLIC THERE IS ONLY ONE CHURCH, THE CATHOLIC CHURCH; ONLY ONE CAPITAL, ROME; ONLY ONE LEADER, THE SUCCESSOR OF ST. PETER. THE POPE, TOWERING ABOVE CATHOLICS, NON-CATHOLICS, CHRISTIANS AND NON-CHRISTIANS ALIKE, AS THE REPRESENTATIVE OF GOD ON EARTH, LAYS CLAIM TO BEING DIVINELY COMMISSIONED, SUPREME, INFALLIBLE. HIS WILL IS LAW. A WORD FROM HIM AND AN OCEAN OF HUMAN BEINGS,...[MILLIONS] LED BY HIS ECCLESIASTICAL LEGIONS, WILL MOVE IN BATTLE ARRAY TO IMPOSE HIS RULE THROUGHOUT EUROPE, THE AMERICAS, AFRICA, AUSTRALIA, ASIA, EACH TEEMING CONTINENT A RIGHTFUL PROVINCE OF HIS IMMENSE DOMAIN. NO OTHER RULER, PAST OR PRESENT, RULED SO VAST AND SO POWERFUL AN EMPIRE. SUCH AN EMPIRE TODAY IS EXPANDING WITH ALARMING RAPIDITY AND IS OUT TO CONQUER EVERY RACE NOT YET UNDER ITS SPIRITUAL DOMINION. WITHIN AND OUTSIDE SUCH AN EMPIRE, NOTHING WHICH IS NON-CATHOLIC CAN OR WILL BE TOLERATED, INDIVIDUALS, INSTITUTIONS, CHURCHES AND GOVERNMENTS WILL HAVE TO SUBMIT TO CATHOLIC DICTA OR BE MADE TO PERISH...

...OUTSIDE THE CATHOLIC CHURCH THERE CAN BE NO SALVATION, SINCE OUTSIDE HER THERE IS ONLY ERROR. ERROR, BEING THE ENEMY OF TRUTH, MUST BE SUPPRESSED. WHATEVER IS NOT CATHOLIC, CONSEQUENTLY, BEING AGAINST THE TRUTH, HAS TO BE DESTROYED SO THAT [CATHOLIC] TRUTH BE MADE TO PREVAIL...

...THE ESSENCE OF CATHOLIC IMPERIALISM IS JUST THAT. CATHOLIC IMPERIALISM, THEREFORE, BEING THE REPOSITORY OF SUCH A FORMIDABLE CREDENCE, IMPERSONAL, RUTHLESS AND OMNIPOTENT, IS MORE DETERMINED EVEN THAN IN THE PAST TO ANNIHILATE ANY OBSTACLES WHICH CAN PREVENT IT FROM ATTAINING ITS ULTIMATE GOAL: A TOTALLY CATHOLIC WORLD. [I.E. GLOBAL UNIFICATION] IN SUCH A WORLD THERE WILL BE BUT ONE FREEDOM, CATHOLIC FREEDOM, FREEDOM FOR THE NON-CATHOLIC HAVING PERISHED. IGNORANCE OF THE TRUE NATURE, EXERTIONS, POLICIES AND AIMS OF THE [ROMAN] CATHOLIC CHURCH, THEREFORE, IS NO LONGER PERMISSIBLE. - Avro Manhattan, *VATICAN IMPERIALISM IN THE TWENTIETH CENTURY* (2)

In contrast to Vatican Imperialism, let us consider the beliefs of first century, Biblical Christianity:

1) *"For I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done to you."* – Jesus (from the Hebrew - Yah'shua), the true *Christ* of Israel (John 13:15)

2) *"If ye love me, keep my commandments."* – Jesus (from the Hebrew - Yah'shua), (John 14:15) Christ's commandments are recorded in the New Testament Scriptures.

3) *"By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another."* – Jesus, (from the Hebrew - Yah'shua), (John 13:35) Christ's model of love is taught in the New Testament Scriptures.

4) *"Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself."* – Jesus, (from the Hebrew - Yah'shua), (Matthew 22:37-38)

5) *“Owe no man any thing, but to love one another: for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law. For this, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Thou shalt not covet, and if there be any other commandment, it is briefly, comprehended in this saying, namely, Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself. Love worketh no ill [evil] to his neighbor: therefore love is the fulfilling of the law.”* – written by the apostle Paul to the church at Rome (Romans 13:8-10)

6) *“And hereby we do know that we know him [Jesus Christ], if we keep his commandments [recorded in the New Testament Scriptures]. He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him. But whoso keepeth his word [the Scriptures], in him verily is the love of God perfected: hereby know we that we are in him. He that saith he abideth in him [Jesus] ought himself also so to walk, even as he [Jesus] walked.”* – the apostle John (1 John 2:3-6)

7) *“And this is the record, that God hath given to us eternal life, and this life is in his Son [Jesus]. He that hath the Son hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God hath not life. These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; that ye may know that ye have eternal life, and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of God.”* - the apostle John (1 John 5:11-13)

Such was the biblical, pure, obedient, faithful, loving, kind, simple *church* with “*sound doctrine*” established by our Lord Jesus Christ in the first century as revealed in the New Testament. After the death, burial, resurrection and ascension of our Lord Jesus, the message of *the gospel* spread rapidly. Many converted to Christ Jesus and to “*the faith which was once delivered unto the saints*” (Jude 3). During the first century, many Christian *churches* were established in communities throughout much of the Roman Empire. One of these new local *churches* was located in Rome. In fact, an epistle in the New Testament known as “Romans” was sent by the apostle Paul to these new *Christians* to instruct them in the doctrines of the Christian faith (Romans 1:1-7). This *church* consisted of believers who were taught to follow and serve Jesus Christ according to His teachings recorded in the New Testament Scriptures (John 8:31-32; 10:35; 14:15-23; 17:6-8).

With this in mind, compare the beliefs and actions of the New Testament *church* of the first century to what now is called the Roman Catholic church and you will find that they are not the same. In fact, they are very different. We are right to conclude that things that are very different are not the same. Furthermore, it would be dishonest to claim that they are the same when, in fact, they are not the same.

**SO, HOW DID ROMAN CATHOLICISM CHANGE TO BECOME VERY DIFFERENT THAN NEW TESTAMENT CHRISTIANITY? THE PURPOSE OF THIS BOOK IS TO AID THOSE WHO ARE SINCERELY SEEKING TO KNOW THE TRUTH (TRUTH SEEKERS) ABOUT ROMAN CATHOLICISM. THIS BOOK WAS NOT WRITTEN FOR THE PURPOSE OF “BASHING” ROMAN CATHOLICS. IT HAS BEEN PREPARED FOR THE PURPOSE OF HELPING ALL WHO EMBRACE “THE LOVE OF THE TRUTH” (2 THESSALONIANS 2:10) TO HAVE ACCESS TO THE FACTS CONCERNING ROMAN CATHOLICISM.**

**MOREOVER, WE BELIEVE THAT GOD LOVES ROMAN CATHOLICS AND WANTS THEM TO GET “SAVED” AND “COME UNTO THE KNOWLEDGE OF THE TRUTH” FROM THE**

SCRIPTURES OF TRUTH (1 TIMOTHY 2:3-4). IN OBEDIENCE TO OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST, THEREFORE, WE ARE ACTIVELY PRAYING FOR THE SALVATION OF ROMAN CATHOLICS AND GLADLY WITNESS TO THEM FROM THE SCRIPTURES OF TRUTH (MATTHEW 28:19-20 MARK 16:15, ROMANS 1:16).

AS BIBLE-BELIEVING *CHRISTIANS*, WE BELIEVE THAT GOD LOVES ROMAN CATHOLICS AND WE ARE TO FOLLOW HIS EXAMPLE (JOHN 3:16-17, ROMANS 5:8). WE BELIEVE THAT WE ARE TO LOVE OUR ROMAN CATHOLIC NEIGHBORS AND DO GOOD TO THEM (MATTHEW 22:38, GALATIANS 6:10). LOVE SPEAKS THE TRUTH (EPHESIANS 4:15). TRAGICALLY, HOWEVER, WE MUST RECOGNIZE THAT THE PRIMARY OBJECTIVES OF THE LEADERSHIP OF THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH TOWARD THOSE OF US THEY LABEL “SEPARATED BRETHREN” ARE VERY DIFFERENT THAN OUR OBJECTIVES TOWARD THEM. THEIR AIMS INCLUDE:

- 1) GLOBAL UNIFICATION OF ALL RELIGIONS AND CHRISTIAN DENOMINATIONS UNDER THE SPIRITUAL LEADERSHIP AND INFLUENCE OF THE POPE
- 2) GLOBAL SOLIDARITY WITH THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH
- 3) PREPARING A NEW GLOBAL CIVILIZATION (NEW WORLD ORDER) UNDER THE SPIRITUAL LEADERSHIP AND INFLUENCE OF THE POPE
- 4) A NEW GLOBAL ECONOMIC ORDER
- 5) INCREASING THE GLOBAL WEALTH OF THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH (CURRENTLY MANY BILLIONS IN ASSETS)
- 6) GLOBAL POLITICAL POWER AND INFLUENCE OF ROME OVER THE RULERS OF THE NATIONS
- 7) A NEW GLOBAL EDUCATION SYSTEM WITH THE INFLUENCE OF ROME
- 8) A NEW GLOBAL HEALTH CARE SYSTEM WITH THE INFLUENCE OF ROME

YET, MANY ARE NOW TELLING US THAT THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH HAS CHANGED SINCE VATICAN II. BUT WHAT HAS CHANGED? HAS THE ROMAN CATHOLIC FAITH NOW EVOLVED INTO A BIBLE-BELIEVING, BIBLE-PRACTICING, GOSPEL-PREACHING CHRISTIAN CHURCH SINCE THE SECOND VATICAN COUNCIL OF 1962-1965? IS THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH NOW PROCLAIMING A MESSAGE OF SALVATION WHICH IS IN AGREEMENT WITH THE MESSAGE OF SALVATION TAUGHT IN THE NEW TESTAMENT SCRIPTURES? HAS ROME CEASED HER AMBITIONS OF GLOBAL DOMINION DECLARED BY FORMER POPES? HAS THE VATICAN PUBLICLY RENOUNCED HER FALSE CLAIM OF SUPREMACY OVER ALL CHRISTIAN CHURCHES? HAS THE POPE PUBLICLY RENOUNCED THE THREE ROMAN SUPREMACY TITLES OF: 1) *PONTIFEX MAXIMUS* 2) *VICAR OF CHRIST* AND 3) *BISHOP OF BISHOPS*?

HAS THE VATICAN PUBLICLY REPENTED AND APOLOGIZED FOR THE TENS OF MILLIONS OF PROTESTANT, (ANA)-BAPTIST, AND JEWISH VICTIMS TORTURED, ROBBED AND MURDERED IN THE INQUISITIONS, MASSACRES, ASSASSINATIONS, AND (UN)HOLY WARS INCITED AND DECREED BY HER POPES, CARDINALS, BISHOPS AND PRIESTS FOR CENTURIES? DOES THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH NOW RECOGNIZE THE MARRIAGES, BAPTISMS, ORDINATIONS, AND COMMUNION SERVICES PERFORMED IN PROTESTANT AND BAPTIST CHURCHES AS BEING VALID AND ACCEPTABLE IN THE SIGHT OF GOD?

**FURTHERMORE, SINCE THE PRIMARY MESSAGE TO PROTESTANTS AND BAPTISTS FOLLOWING VATICAN II IS A CALL TO “UNITY WITH THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH,” SHOULD WE LEAVE OUR CHRIST-CENTERED, BIBLE-BASED CHURCHES AND UNITE WITH ROME IN ORDER TO BE IN COMPLIANCE WITH THE TEACHING OF OUR SAVIOR FOUND IN JOHN 17:20-23? IS THIS THE KIND OF UNITY THAT OUR LORD JESUS HAD IN MIND WHEN HE DELIVERED THIS TEXT TO HIS FIRST CENTURY DISCIPLES? THESE ARE JUST SOME OF THE QUESTIONS THAT WE ARE COMPELLED TO ASK AS A RESULT OF THE RISE OF THE ECUMENICAL ROMAN CATHOLICISM THAT DEVELOPED FOLLOWING VATICAN II (1962-1965).**

**Moreover, during the past few decades we have noticed a current, religious trend. Many are forsaking Protestant, Evangelical and Baptist churches to convert to Roman Catholicism. Subsequently, a significant question comes to mind. Why are these people converting to the Roman Catholic church? Are they lured by the promise of increased financial support; political favor; political influence; employment opportunities; Catholic education; favor with family members; prestige and/or privilege? or Was their motive limited to the spiritual? In an article entitled “12 Political Converts to Catholicism – Besides Newt” Dan Gilgoff observed, “Newt Gingrich’s weekend conversion (from the Southern Baptist church) to Roman Catholicism got me thinking about how many Catholic converts from the world of politics and political commentary have been in the news in recent years. Here’s a quick list I came up with: [Judge] Robert Bork, [Kansas Governor] Sam Brownback, [former Florida Governor and brother of President George W. Bush] Jeb Bush, [talk show commentator] Laura Ingraham, [Louisiana Governor] Bobby Jindal, Lawrence Kudlow, Robert Novak, Ramesh Ponnuru,...[former British] Prime Minister Tony Blair...” (3) And the list goes on.**

**On the basis of these facts, it is beyond apparent that the Roman Catholic church continues to exert major political power and influence over many leaders in our time as well. But do these converts to Roman Catholicism truly have an accurate understanding of the origin, history, beliefs and actions of the Roman Catholic church? or Have both the historical and present facts concerning Roman Catholicism been disregarded by these “converts” in order to pursue their own political and/or career ambitions? Have they failed to see the other side of Rome? Are they deceived by the master Deceiver (John 8:43-44, Revelation 12:9)? or Has their decision to convert to Roman Catholicism brought them:**

- 1) 100% certainty that they have genuine peace with God**
- 2) 100% certainty that their sins are forgiven by God**
- 3) 100% certainty that they have eternal life in Heaven after this life (1 John 5:11-13)**
- 4) 100% certainty that they won’t have to spend untold years burning in the flames of the place the Roman Catholic church calls “purgatory” after death in order to pay the temporal penalty due for their sins**
- 5) 100% certainty that they are living in obedience to the teachings of Jesus Christ found in the New Testament Scriptures (John 8:31-32; 14:15-23)?**

**In 1991 I recall visiting a Roman Catholic church in Mexico. Inside were beautiful pictures, golden vessels, tapestries, images, candles, columns and wood structures. The building and gardens were truly impressive. However, just outside the splendid gates of this marvelous facility, I observed deteriorated, tiny homes and malnourished people living in poverty,**



hopelessness and spiritual darkness. One could not help but notice the incredible difference between the wealth of the Roman Catholic church and the evident poverty of the people living in the surrounding area. Moreover, I did not see the peace and joy of the Holy Spirit on the faces of those who were praying in this church. Rather, their countenances seemed to be a living demonstration of the teaching of the Roman Catholic church that no one can be certain in this life that he will attain to eternal life in Heaven. (4) These Roman Catholics did not appear to have peace with our *LORD* and personal assurance of eternal life in Heaven. Instead, they were believing that they must “merit” Heaven by means of their good works, keeping the sacraments and personal righteousness. For in their religious system, salvation is a life-long process attained to by being good and doing good. But in this system one never knows if he or she has done enough or been good enough to go to Heaven at death.

Moreover, Roman Catholics are taught the doctrine of purgatory by their priests and teachers. In the Roman Catholic *Catechism of the Catholic Church* (1994) we read, “III. THE FINAL PURIFICATION, OR PURGATORY 1030 All who die in God’s grace and friendship, but still imperfectly purified, are indeed assured of their eternal salvation; but after death they undergo purification, so as to achieve the holiness necessary to enter the joy of heaven. 1031 The Church gives the name *Purgatory* to this final purification of the elect, which is entirely different from the punishment of the damned.<sup>604</sup> The Church formulated her doctrine of faith on Purgatory especially at the Councils of Florence and Trent...1032...From the beginning the Church has honored the memory of the dead and offered prayers in suffrage for them, above all the Eucharistic sacrifice, so that, thus purified, they may attain the beatific vision of God.<sup>608</sup>...” (5)

Concerning the Roman Catholic belief in purgatory Dave Hunt pointed out in his book entitled *A Woman Rides the Beast*, “...Catholicism teaches that while Christ’s death made it possible for sins to be *forgiven*, the pardoned sinner must himself suffer some undefined pain or torment of unknown intensity and duration in order to be *purged* and thereby made fit for heaven. While Catholicism says it is theoretically possible to be cleansed through the sufferings of this life and one’s death, no one, not even the pope himself, can know whether that has occurred. Consequently, almost all Catholics expect to spend some unknown length of time in purgatory. Failure to accept the doctrine of purgatory brings automatic excommunication from the Roman Catholic Church. Both Trent and Vatican II speak of those who, even though Christ suffered for their sins, “must still make expiation [for their sins] in the fire of purgatory.”<sup>3</sup>...

“...The idea of purgatory, a fictitious place of final purgation, was invented by Pope Gregory the Great in 593. There was such reluctance to accept the idea (since it went contrary to the Scripture) that purgatory did not become an official Catholic dogma for nearly 850 years—at the Council of Florence in 1439. No doctrine has so increased the Church’s power over its members or added so much to its income. TO THIS DAY THE THREAT OF PURGATORY HANGS OVER CATHOLICS, WHO THEREFORE GIVE REPEATED OFFERINGS TO THE [ROMAN CATHOLIC] CHURCH FOR ITS HELP IN GETTING THEM OUT OF THAT PLACE OF TORMENT...”

“...Rome promises that if its decrees are followed one will eventually be released from purgatory and enter heaven. Yet the [Roman Catholic] Church has never been able to define

how long any person must spend in purgatory nor how much that time is shortened by any means it offers. It is utter folly to trust one's release from purgatory to a Church which cannot even define how long one must spend there for each sin or how much each ritual or act of penance reduces purgatorial suffering. Nevertheless, offerings are given by Catholics to the [Roman Catholic] Church and large sums left in wills (remember Henry VIII) to have multiple Masses said on one's behalf. That process never stops, "just in case" more Masses are needed...Neither the word "purgatory" itself nor the idea of purgatory is to be found even once in the entire Bible. Nor is it so much as hinted at by Jesus or the apostles. [Catholic] Apologist Karl Keating admits that the doctrine "is not explicitly set out in the Bible."<sup>7</sup>... (6)

In spite of very clear doctrinal and spiritual differences, in our time there is a strong movement to unify Roman Catholics, Protestants, Baptists and Evangelical groups. During my years in the ministry of the gospel, I have observed with great concern the development of this movement. In the Holy Scriptures of truth we are warned:

- 1) *"And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you. For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ (or in place of Christ): and shall deceive many [i.e., millions of people]...And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many..."* (Matthew 24:4-5, 11 KJV)
- 2) *"That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the [singular] head, even Christ..."* (Ephesians 4:14-15 KJV)
- 3) *"And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them."* (Ephesians 5:11 KJV)
- 4) *"And he [Jesus Christ] is the [singular] head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things he [and he alone] might have the preeminence."* (Colossians 1:18 KJV)
- 5) *"Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ. For in him dwelleth all the fullness of the Godhead bodily, and ye are complete in him [Jesus], which is the [singular] head of all principality and power:..."* (Colossians 2:8-10 KJV)
- 6) *"That thou keep this commandment without spot, unrebukeable, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ: Which in his times he shall shew, who is the [singular] blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords;..."* (1 Timothy 6:14-15 KJV)
- 7) *"I CHARGE thee therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at his appearing and his kingdom; Preach the word; be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine. For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables."* (2 Timothy 4:1-4 KJV)

- 8) ***“NOW the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils; Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron; forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth.”*** (1 Timothy 4:1-3 KJV)
- 9) ***“Thus saith the LORD, Learn not the way of the heathen, and be not dismayed at the signs of heaven; for the heathen are dismayed at them. For the customs of the people are vain: for one cutteth a tree out of the forest, the work of the hands of the workman, with the axe. They deck it with silver and with gold; they fasten it with nails and with hammers, that it move not.”*** (Jeremiah 10:2-4 KJV)
- 10) ***“Seest thou not what they do in the cities of Judah and in the streets of Jerusalem? The children gather wood, and the fathers kindle the fire, and the women knead their dough, to make cakes to the queen of heaven, and to pour our drink offerings unto other gods, that they may provoke me to anger. Do they provoke me to anger? saith the LORD: do they not provoke themselves to the confusion of their own faces? (Jeremiah 7:17-19 KJV)***
- 11) ***“As for the word that thou hast spoken unto us in the name of the LORD, we will not hearken unto thee. But we will certainly do whatsoever thing goeth forth of our own mouth, to burn incense unto the queen of heaven, and to pour out drink offerings unto her,...And when we burned incense to the queen of heaven, and poured out drink offerings unto her, did we make her cakes to worship her, and pour out drink offerings unto her, without our men? (Jeremiah 44:16-17,19 KJV)***
- 12) ***“But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balac to cast a stumblingblock before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit fornication. So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which thing I hate. Repent; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth.”*** – our Lord Jesus, the only, true Christ of Israel and only, true head of the church (Revelation 2:14-16 KJV)

In ***THE FACTS ON ROMAN CATHOLICISM*** by John Ankerberg, John Weldon and Dillon Burroughs we find the following report: “Can the differences between Catholics and Evangelicals be set aside? In 1994, prominent members of Protestant and Catholic churches wrote and endorsed “Evangelicals and Catholics Together: The Christian Mission in the Third Millennium.” Emphasizing Christian unity and tolerance, this document minimized the differences between Roman Catholicism and traditional Christianity to the point that Catholic doctrines could be interpreted as minor variances to biblical teachings:

First...we as Evangelicals and Catholics affirm that opportunity and means for growth in Christian discipleship are available in our several communities. Second, the decision of the committed Christian with respect to his communal allegiance and participation must be

assiduously respected. Third, in view of the larger number of non-Christians in the world and the enormous challenge of our common evangelistic task, *it is neither theologically legitimate nor a prudent use of resources for one Christian community to proselytize among active adherents of another Christian community...* Also to be rejected is the practice of comparing the strengths and ideals of one community with the weaknesses and failures of another.<sup>1...</sup>

...Although the document acknowledges several major differences between Catholicism and Protestantism, it goes on to say the following:

These differing beliefs...should be honestly presented to the Christian who has undergone conversion. But again, his decision regarding communal allegiance and participation must be assiduously respected...[He is] ultimately responsible to God, and *we dare not interfere with the exercise of that responsibility...*

...The Protestant signers of the document seemed to be saying that as long as people acknowledge God and his Son Jesus, it doesn't matter what they believe or practice. The fact that Roman Catholicism denies biblical salvation; that it teaches the need for a Pope and priests to intercede on behalf of the people; that it holds that the [Roman] Church is the only entity that accurately interprets the Scriptures; that it declares Mary should be prayed to and is essential to salvation; and that it believes that the Pope infallibly represents and speaks for God---all this and more is made to appear inconsequential...

...In 1999, a document called "The Gospel of Jesus Christ: An Evangelical Celebration" was produced and signed by the evangelical participants in ECT plus some 130 additional evangelical leaders.<sup>2...</sup> New attempts to encourage greater ecumenism with Rome continue to originate from various sources within Protestant Christianity [i.e. with the help of Roman Catholic infiltration]. For example, in October 1999 a "Joint declaration on the Doctrine of Justification" was signed by representatives of the Lutheran World Federation (LWF, which represents a majority of the world's Lutheran churches) AND THE VATICAN, with the World Methodist Council adding its official approval in 2006.<sup>4</sup> And in 2008, an ecumenical book titled *Is the Reformation Over?* was published by evangelicals.<sup>5...</sup>" (7)

In light of these developments, we are compelled to ask, Have we already entered the time of the foretold "*falling away*" (apostasy) of 2 Thessalonians 2:3-12? Is it possible that we are witnessing the beginning of the prophetic time of apostasy in which many will abandon "*sound doctrine*" and Christian morality to unite with the one-world, false church of Revelation chapter 17? This is to occur just before the rise to power of the *antichrist* in the last days. We must not forget that although notable changes occurred within the Roman Catholic church as a result of Vatican II (1962-1965), THE ESSENTIAL TEACHINGS OF THE ROMAN CATHOLIC FAITH REMAIN THE SAME. IT MUST BE CLEARLY UNDERSTOOD THAT THE ESSENTIAL ELEMENTS OF ROMAN CATHOLICISM HAVE NOT CHANGED.

In his book *YOU CAN LEAD ROMAN CATHOLICS TO CHRIST* author Wilson Ewin pointed out, "When Europe was awakened by the preaching of the Reformation, the Church of Rome assembled her most able theologians. They worked from 1540 to 1570 as the Council of Trent in preparation of a statement of faith. This document became, and has remained the standard for Catholic doctrine during the past centuries and up to the present hour. At the opening of the Second Vatican Council, Pope John XXIII stated, "I DO ACCEPT ENTIRELY ALL THAT HAS BEEN DECIDED AND DECLARED AT THE COUNCIL OF TRENT." EVERY CARDINAL, BISHOP

AND PRIEST WHO BECAME A MEMBER OF THE COUNCIL [VATICAN II], ALSO SIGNED THAT DOCUMENT.” (8) IT MUST BE REMEMBERED THAT IN THE COUNCIL OF TRENT DOCUMENT ALL THOSE DISAGREEING WITH ROMAN CATHOLIC TEACHINGS (INCLUDING PROTESTANTS AND ANA-BAPTISTS) WERE DECLARED TO BE “ACCURSED” MORE THAN 100 TIMES. AT THE TIME, PROTESTANTS AND ANA-BAPTISTS WERE REGARDED AS “HERETICS” AND “SCHISMATICS” WHO WERE DECREED TO BE WORTHY OF DEATH BY THE “HOLY” MOTHER CHURCH OF ROME.

Of course, by the time of the Second Vatican Council a “change of image” (9) from centuries of inciting wars, massacres, holocausts and inquisitions against religious dissenters was needed. Rather than referring to Protestants and Baptists who remained separate from the Roman Catholic church as “heretics” and “schismatics,” they were renamed “separate brethren.” After declaring that Catholic doctrine would not change, on October 11, 1962 Pope John XXIII proposed a new policy of “the medicine of Mercy” in place of “severity” toward those remaining separated from Rome. Regarding dissenters from the doctrines of Rome, speaking to the College of cardinals and bishops, Pope John XXIII stated, “...The Church has always opposed these errors. Frequently she has condemned them with the greatest severity. Nowadays, however, the Spouse of Christ prefers to make use of the medicine of mercy rather than that of severity...to show herself to be the loving mother of all, benign, patient, full of mercy and goodness toward the brethren separated from her.” (10)

In examining the Roman Catholic belief system, we must ask an important question: Is Roman Catholicism Christianity? Many would say it is because it is regarded as a Christian denomination. It is a religion that affirms the following beliefs: 1) Jesus is the Son of God 2) The deity of Christ 3) The death, burial and bodily resurrection of Christ 4) The Trinity 5) The Holy Bible is the Word of God 6) The literal second *coming* of Christ 7) Pro-family 8) Pro-life However, when we examine closely the PRIESTHOOD, RITES, CEREMONIES, TEACHINGS, SYMBOLS AND CUSTOMS of the Roman Catholic Church, we discover that Roman Catholicism is, in fact, counterfeit Christianity with a very beautiful veneer. For below the very attractive covering we find THE OTHER SIDE OF ROMAN CATHOLICISM. This side is called ROMANISM. It is an ancient pagan Roman system of religious tyranny which predates Christianity by many centuries. From the time of the reign of Emperor Constantine in the fourth century, this ancient pagan belief system was blended with Christianity at Rome. In this book you will discover that the “Christianity” of the Roman Catholic church is something very different than “*the faith which was once delivered to the saints*” in the first century as revealed in the New Testament Scriptures (Jude 3).

In addition, rather than proclaiming a biblical message of salvation, Roman Catholicism holds to sacerdotal salvation. Roman Catholic theologian Ludwig Ott explained the Roman Catholic teaching about salvation in *Fundamentals of Catholic Dogma*. Ott wrote, “The Sacraments are the means appointed by God for attainment of eternal salvation. Three of them [baptism, penance, holy orders] are in the ordinary way of salvation so *necessary* that without their use *salvation cannot be attained*.” (11)

Another factor to consider is that ROMAN CATHOLICISM IS MORE THAN A RELIGIOUS BELIEF SYSTEM. IT IS A SYSTEM OF GLOBAL HUMAN GOVERNMENT. Concerning the Roman Catholic church Professor Harnack explained, “It is a political creation...It is just as

essential to this [Roman] church to exercise governmental power as to proclaim the gospel...It employs all the means of which the states avail themselves, including, therefore, crafty diplomacy and force...[i.e. the Roman Mafia]" (12) In his book *THE PAPAL INVASION OR ROMAN CATHOLIC METHODS TO DATE* author J. F. Love warned, "...From one viewpoint Romanism is a religion; certain phases of the movement are unmistakably religious. Romanism is a [global] civilization. THE FUNDAMENTAL PURPOSE OF ROMANISM IS THE UNIFYING OF ALL THE INSTITUTIONS OF SOCIETY UNDER ONE CENTRAL CONTROL – THE POPE OF ROME. The home, the school, the state, the church in a democratic civilization are institutions, interrelated and interdependent; and all personal liberty is conditioned upon the preservation of these institutional relationships. Romanism triumphant means nothing less than the most colossal tyranny ever conceived by the mind of man: ABSOLUTE CONTROL OVER THE MENTAL, MORAL, SOCIAL AND RELIGIOUS LIFE OF EVERY HUMAN BEING. The dream of the Vatican is that the pope shall be the Emperor of humanity, ruling with autocratic and relentless power the thoughts as well as the activities of men. Dr. Love calls to the witness box the Roman clergy of America and they boldly and unhesitatingly tell what they are doing to overthrow our democratic institutions in the interest of A PAPAL [GLOBAL] CIVILIZATION..." (13)

In his research author Wilson Ewin came to the conclusion that Roman Catholicism, "...IS A POLITICO-RELIGIOUS SYSTEM." (14) Mr. Ewin cited two books by Roman Catholic Jesuit priest and Professor Malachi Martin revealing, "...the blueprint of the Holy See in allowing traditional beliefs and practices to be trampled underfoot in its mad scramble to achieve global supremacy as the religious component of the [new] world government." (15) Numerous times in his writings, Jesuit Professor Malachi Martin referred to this new emerging world government as the "new world order." Malachi Martin's two books are entitled: 1) *THE KEYS OF THIS BLOOD THE STRUGGLE FOR WORLD DOMINION BETWEEN POPE JUAN PAUL II, MIKHAIL GORBACHEV & THE CAPITALIST WEST* 2) *THE JESUITS The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church*.

It should be noted that the phrase "new world order" (NOVUS ORDO SECLORUM) had its origin in the Bavarian Illuminated Freemasonry (Jacobinism) of Jesuit-trained Professor Adam Weishaupt (1748-1830). In order to better understand Weishaupt's involvement with the Jesuits, read my article entitled "A Biblical Evaluation of Universalism". Sarah Tusa noted, "Inspired by the revolutionary writings of Rousseau, Jean-Jacques, Weishaupt founded the Illuminatenorden in 1776. The members of this secret society sought to promote the ideals of the Enlightenment by recruiting civil servants, university professors, the clergy and nobility to infiltrate government." (16) They used terror tactics and helped incite the murderous, anti-Christian French Revolution.

These teachings were introduced to Marxists (now known as "Progressives") and Fabian Socialists in the nineteenth and twentieth centuries. Inspired by Darwinism, the Theosophy of Freemason and Socialist Annie Besant and Fabian socialism, H. G. Wells wrote the book entitled *THE NEW WORLD ORDER* which was originally published in 1940. This esoteric doctrine of the creation of a new world order had a tremendous impact on key leaders in the West, Catholics and non-Catholics, throughout the twentieth century. These include President Franklin Roosevelt, Vice-President Henry Wallace, President Richard Nixon, President George Bush and many others. During the past eight decades, this book has been used as a practical

blueprint for the incremental establishment of the “New World Order.”

Several years prior to the founding of the “United Nations”, Mr. Wells, who was a British Socialist and very influential author of the twentieth century, advocated in this book: 1) “the World State” in Chapter 12; 2) a “United States of the World” in Chapter 7; 3) a “great synthesis of nations” in Chapter 11; 4) “a secular movement toward a single world order” in Chapter 11; 5) “world community” in Chapter 10; 6) “a new world order” in Chapters 8, 10, 11, 12; 7) “world socialism” in Chapters 8, 10; 8) “world citizenship” in Chapter 12; 9) “new world money” in Chapter 12; 10) “world collectivization” in Chapters 4, 7, 10, 11; 11) “internationalism” in Chapter 12; 12) “socialization” in Chapter 12; 13) “collective unity” in Chapters 11, 14; ) self-realization” in Chapters 7, 12; 15) “international policeman” term used three times in Chapter 7; 16) “disarmament police” found twice in Chapter 12; etc. (17)

Mr. Ewin noted, “As early as 1974, the [Roman Catholic] Church had thrown its doors open to the religions of the world. On that date, the Second World Conference on Religion and Peace met in Louvain, Belgium. Pope Paul VI gave his blessing to the event while Cardinal Suenens, as host, gave the opening speech. The Louvain declaration reads in part: “Buddhists, Christians, Confucianists, Hindus, Jains, Jews, Muslims, Shintoists, Sikhs, Zoroastrains and still others, we have sought here to listen to the spirit within our varied and venerable religious traditions....We rejoice that...the long era of prideful, and even prejudiced isolation of the religions of humanity is, we hope, now gone forever...WE APPEAL TO THE RELIGIOUS COMMUNITIES OF THE WORLD TO INCULCATE THE ATTITUDE OF PLANETARY CITIZENSHIP....[capitalization added]” (*Catholic Register*, Toronto, September 21, 1974).” (18)

Wilson Ewin added, “Then came the first dress rehearsal at Assisi, Italy in November, 1986. The diocese of Assisi lies just north of Rome and significantly, is immediately subject to the Holy See. Seated together with Pope John Paul II were 160 religious leaders from Buddhism’s Dalai Lama, Mother Teresa of Calcutta, and Greek Orthodox priests down to a Crow Indian medicine man from Montana in full-feathered headdress. This latter recited: “O great Spirit, I raise my pipe to you, to your messengers the four winds, and to mother earth....I pray that you bring peace to all my brothers and sisters of this world” (*Time*, November 10, 1986). The pace quickens in the drive towards an amalgamation of all the formerly conflicting religions, for the politico-religious program has been carefully predetermined. Each faith will retain its own distinctive features while observing a collective submission to the leadership of the Holy See.” (19)

In addition, the Roman Catholic church is a giant religious business. After his ten year investigation of Vatican finances, in his book *THE VATICAN EMPIRE* Roman Catholic Nino Lo Bello called the Vatican “a tremendous financial empire.” He reported, “At best, this report on Vatican finances, which I have arduously pieced together during the past ten years, will reveal this venerable organization as one of the greatest fiscal powers in the world.” (20) Also, in recent years the Vatican Empire has been plagued with numerous financial scandals.

Moreover, the vast majority of Roman Catholic church members in this present era have no realistic idea just how lethal and harmful their religion has been to millions of Protestants, Baptists, Evangelicals, Jews and others labeled “heretics” or “infidels” over the centuries. If we were to ask the average Catholic church member today about some oppressive and murderous teachings and practices of their faith, he or she would most likely be found uninformed. For example, how many Catholics are familiar with:

- 1) The “Holy Office of the Inquisition” of the Roman Catholic Church
- 2) The Twenty-Seven Principles of pope Gregory VII
- 3) The doctrine of “the two swords” found in the *Unam Sanctam* issued by pope Boniface VIII in 1302 A.D.
- 4) The many “anathema” declarations against Protestants and (Ana)-Baptists found in the canons of the Roman Catholic Council of Trent (1545-1563 A.D.)
- 5) The teachings of Thomas Aquinas in *Summa Theologica* concerning what to do to those labeled “heretics” by the Roman Catholic church

We can be sure that the living God of Israel, *Jehovah* (Hebrew – *YHWH*, English - *JHVH*), places no premium on ignorance. As Bible-believing *Christians*, we must be educated and informed regarding the past, present and future. To ignore, deny or carelessly overlook the many atrocities done by Roman Catholics on the basis of unchanged Roman Catholic teachings against our Protestant, Baptist or Evangelical brethren in the past, sets us up to become future victims of these same Roman ideologies. Likewise, to ignore the clear warnings found in Bible prophecies about conditions that will come in the latter days of the Church Age is beyond careless. An accurate and honest understanding of the history, development, actions and contemporary teachings of the Roman Catholic religion will enable us to more fully understand how this religious system has impacted the lives of millions in the past; is impacting our daily lives in the present and will impact people in the future.

Decades ago Wilson Ewin boldly proclaimed, “We live in a day when discussion of TRUTH in Christian circles is regarded as a lack of love. Doctrine has become an ugly word. Many choose to unite on the basis of what is termed Christian love. TRUTH has been placed in a spiritual dark-room and the door is padlocked. No mention of it is tolerated. The results are obvious and most tragic. A tremendous ecumenical system is emerging. Its constant cry of “unity” is often based on the gospel called “experience.” Unfortunately, multitudes of believers in Christ are building their faith on what the Bible calls shifting sand (Matthew 7:21-27). Worse still, many of those with whom these Christians associate on the basis of experience, are unregenerate. Among them are fervent, or practicing Roman Catholics...”

“...WE CERTAINLY WISH THESE PEOPLE COULD BE WON TO CHRIST WITHOUT DISCUSSING THAT WHICH IS TRUTH, AND WITHOUT COMPARING WITH THAT WHICH IS FALSE. BUT THERE IS NO OTHER WAY. IN FACT, BEGINNING WITH THE DAYS OF THE GARDEN OF EDEN AND ENDING WITH THE COMPLETION OF TIME, THE BIBLE REMINDS US THAT THE CAUSE OF CHRIST HAS BEEN AND ALWAYS WILL BE A CONFLICT INVOLVING TRUTH AND ERROR, LIGHT AND DARKNESS. WE MUST PRESENT THE TRUTH TO THOSE WHO DO NOT KNOW THE TRUTH [capitalization added].” (21)

In the first century our Lord Jesus promised His followers, “...*If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed; And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.*” (John 8:31-32) Notice that Jesus did not say “If ye continue in Roman Catholicism...ye shall know the truth...” Rather, Christ Jesus taught that it is “*my word*” in which we must continue. “*The words*” of Jesus were taught to his first century *disciples* during His time of ministry with them. Shortly thereafter, these words and teachings were recorded in the New Testament Scriptures (Luke 1:1-4, John 17:6-8; 10:35). Jesus declared that God’s word “*is truth.*” (John 17:17) Therefore, if we continue to believe and obey the teachings of Jesus as



recorded in the New Testament Scriptures, we will demonstrate that we are truly the disciples of Christ Jesus. In addition, by means of these Scriptures of truth we will “*know the truth*” and the truth will make us “*free.*”

May your heart and mind be enlightened by *the Spirit of truth*  
in the Scriptures of truth – the Holy Bible (Psalm 119:130-173, John 16:13; 17:6-17).

For such a time as this (2 Timothy 3:1-5), Nolan McFadden

## CHAPTER I: THE ORIGIN OF ROMAN CATHOLICISM

***“Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do. And he said unto them, Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition.”***  
– Jesus (Mark 7:7-9 KJV)

What is the origin of Roman Catholicism? Roman Catholic vestments; Assyrian fish-head mitre; prayers for the dead; purgatory; relic worship; confessionals; the mass; the rosary; the mystic keys; worship of the sacred heart; the ancient Roman title of “Pontifex Maximus”; the practice of having celibate priests, cardinals, monks and nuns all have their origin in ancient paganism. Many of the pagan aspects of Roman Catholicism originated in the Babylonian religion associated with Nimrod, the founder of the ancient kingdom of Babylon in Mesopotamia (Genesis 10:8-11:6). Over the centuries, the essential elements of the religion of Babylon (worship of the sun god, priesthood, rites, symbols, customs, teachings) were preserved in the ancient *MYSTERY RELIGIONS* of Egypt, Persia, India, Greece and Rome.

Beginning in the fourth century during the reign of Emperor Constantine, many of the rites, symbols, teachings and customs of the *ROMAN MYSTERIES* were added to Christian teachings in a compromised mixture in the Roman Catholic church. EMPEROR CONSTANTINE PRACTICED RELIGIOUS SYNCRETISM. While professing to believe in the Christian God, he also venerated “the Unconquered Sun” (*Sol Invictus*). At the dedication of his “triumphal arch” in 315 A.D., Constantine honored the pagan goddess Victoria and had sacrifices given to the pagan Roman gods Apollo, Diana and Hercules. See [https://es.wikipedia.org/wiki/Constantino\\_I](https://es.wikipedia.org/wiki/Constantino_I)

In his book *CONTINUITY AND CHANGE IN ROMAN RELIGION* Liebschuetz pointed out, “...But he (Constantine) did not publicly declare himself a Christian, or provide any official definition of his religious position...In one important respect THE CHRISTIANITY OF CONSTANTINE AT THE TIME OF HIS CONVERSION IN 312 WAS SOMETHING NEW. IT DIFFERED FROM THE RELIGION OF EARLY CHRISTIANS, and even from that of ‘Roman’ Christians such as Arnobius and Lactantius in that Constantine, was not, in the first place, concerned to save his soul or the souls of others. His object was to obtain the support of the supreme ruler of the universe<sup>3</sup> for himself in his struggles with a rival for power, and more generally in the defence and administration of his realm. The prayers of the Church, especially of its professional element, were to ensure that the most powerful source of supernatural assistance was always enlisted on his side.<sup>4</sup> The basic conception was Roman rather than Christian. Constantine wished to maintain the *pax deorum* as his predecessors had done, but he looked to a new divinity and for new procedures to maintain it...”

...Constantine, in various ways, some more successful than others, tried to Christianize the Roman Empire. At the same time Christianity, as a result of being the religion of the emperor, was being Romanized and the [Roman] church became something like an image of the empire. As more members of the ruling classes were converted the social status of bishops and that of secular dignitaries began to converge.<sup>1</sup> The ecclesiastical administration based on city,

province, <sup>2</sup> and patriarchate <sup>3</sup> began to mirror the imperial model based on cities, provinces, and dioceses. The great prestige [i.e., pride] of the bishops of the capital cities of Rome <sup>4</sup> and Constantinople <sup>5</sup> became comparable – if only remotely – to that of the emperor himself. More significantly, in the matter of unity of belief the emperor sought to exercise leadership in the Church scarcely less authoritatively than he was accustomed to exercise it in secular affairs...The architecture of the great churches constructed at the expense of Constantine was based on that of imperial audience halls. The ceremonies that took place in these imposing structures, would also be seen to have **BORROWED ELEMENTS FROM [ROMAN] IMPERIAL ART AND CEREMONIAL.** <sup>7</sup> **CHRISTIANITY WAS BECOMING AN IMPERIAL ROMAN RELIGION...**” (22)

This fourth century fusion of Christianity with Roman paganism created Christo-paganism and thereby marked the origin of the Roman Catholic church. From the fourth century onward, “the church” in Rome was no longer the same kind of New Testament “*church*” that was originally established there in the first century. It had become **A SYNTHESIS OF ROMAN PAGANISM WITH NEW TESTAMENT CHRISTIANITY.** In the years following, similar assimilations of paganism continued as Roman Catholicism spread and more churches submitted themselves to usurped Roman supremacy.

Concerning the origin of the mass and the worship of the saints, in his book *A DOMINANT ROMANISM – ITS RELIGIOUS AND POLITICAL SIGNIFICANCE*, Charles Miller wrote, “In regard to the Sacrifice of the Mass, the *Catholic Encyclopedia* states: “The Sacrifice of the Mass is the general designation for the Eucharistic Sacrifice in the West, after the time of Gregory the Great-604.”...But where do you find in any part of the New Testament, a single mention of the Mass? And where will you find in any Father or other doctor of the Church, in the first five or six centuries, the slightest hint of the Sacrifice of the Mass, which soon after became so celebrated? Let the learned therefore inquire by what means it penetrated into Christian worship, and they will not have much difficulty in discovering its origin. <sup>1</sup> In the Roman Catholic Catechism, in the section dealing with the Mass, the following definition is given in answer to several specific questions: The Mass is the unbloody sacrifice of the body and blood of Christ. The bread and wine are changed into the body and blood of Christ at the Consecration of the Mass...

...There came into the Roman Catholic Church great immigrations of Barbarians with their crudeness, ignorance and superstition. The clergy could greatly congratulate themselves on this state of things, because they rose at once into great power, and a still greater wealth....

...These Barbarians too had their own bloodless sacrifices of bread, they called *panificia*, and the chief thing in this is that in the first place they called it Sacrificial bread, *Hostia*; second, it was always exhibited in the morning; and thirdly, they always burnt in the ceremony something that made a smoke; fourthly, the priest at the end sprinkled the people with holy or purifying water, taken from the sacred basin; and hence it is impossible not to recognize the perfect imitation of these pagan ceremonials in the Sacrifice of the Mass in the Catholic Church. <sup>2</sup>...

...The identity of the two systems is still more apparent when we call to mind that the ancient Pagan priests in offering their Masses, were always assisted by young ministers, who, from head to foot resembled the boys (altar boys) employed in the Mass, and that the priests themselves were dressed exactly like those who read the Mass (in the Roman Church)...

...Certainly it was not chance which produced so extraordinary a facsimile. It was the Roman clergy who so studiously put paganism and Christianity in harmony in order to please the great masses of people who came over with their Emperors...

...Here too, you have the explanation of the transfer of the supper from the evening as celebrated by Christ and the early Christians, to the morning, the time of the pagans' sacrifice, and also of the fact of giving to the people the bread, the pagan sacrifice being in the *panificia* of bread only. 3...

...In a word, the Catholic Mass took the place of the *panificia* of the pagans, and therefore it was no longer called the Mass, but rather the sacrifice of the Mass. Another detail which certainly adds to and helps to clinch the resemblance is the Holy Water. And the Holy Water, is that not a palpable copy of the *aqua lustralis*? This was found in every temple, in the portico, in the great basin of marble, so that every one could wash or sprinkle himself before entering into the consecrated house of God, as sings Tibullus: 'He does not please God who is not pure, Clothe yourself in clean linen, wash your hands, and sprinkle yourselves in the water of the fountain...' "

...But already, before then, besides washing materially, the body, they attributed the power of taking away sins, purifying internally [i.e., purification of sins by water baptism]. 4 Euripides says: "Water washes away the sins of men." By water, they believed that they received a formal absolution, e.g., in the time of Augustus, one Peleus, who had murdered his brother Phocus, was sprinkled with water by the priest Acestus to purge him from the crime. 5 Following the close of these pagan services, ...the Priest of Isis dismissed the people, exclaiming in Greek, "Let the people depart," and precisely so said the Roman priests when at the conclusion of the divine service they cried to the devotees, "*Ite missa est*" or "*Missio est concio*" – the assembly is at an end. 6...

...THE WORSHIP OF THE SAINTS The pagan gods were removed and the saints were put in their places. The altars were retained as in the heathen temples. Every class of persons, every trade had its protective deity. For instance, if they wanted rain, they prayed to Jupiter Pluvius. When they wanted to lay storms, they prayed to Neptune. When they wanted good harvests, they prayed to Demetrius or to Ceres. The priests and the orators invoked Apollo and the Muses; the doctors, Aesculapius; the soldiers, Mars; and the hunters, Minerva or Diana; the smiths, Vulcan; the merchants, Mercury, and so forth...

...The Roman Church through its priests put the saints in the places of these pagan gods and assigned to each his special function. We shall see now what the worship of the saints (supposedly) does. Precisely what the pagan gods (supposedly) did. Thus St. Urban is exalted to the rank of the protector of the vineyards, St. Cecelia of music, St. Damianus is made patron of the doctors, St. Ivan of the lawyers, St. Eustace of the hunters, St. Nicholas of the mariners, St. Luke of painters, and St. Margaret of lying-in women. 7...

...Likewise every evil and disease has its saint. He who suffers from a fever, prays to St. Petronilla, he who has bad eyes to St. Lucia, and he who has a sore throat to St. Bingus. 8...

...Pope Adrian I (772-795) expressed himself without reserve when writing to the Empress Irene, "What madness is it not to adore images!" And thus through the Middle Ages, Christians no longer prayed to God, but only to the images of the saints, as if they had dethroned God Almighty and in his place had restored in another form the old ruined world of the gods...

...Speaking of the Mass, the humanist Erasmus, in a letter written to the Elector Herman, Archbishop of Cologne, says in part: The Mass has been made a trade for illiterate and sordid priests, and a contrivance to quiet the conscience of reprobates. Saint-worship has been carried so far that Christ has been forgotten. Therefore, respect for saints is idolatry, and orders founded in their names must be dissolved. 9" (23)

Referring to the development of Romanism, in *Roman Catholicism* Loraine Boettner explained, "One of the first things that we want to point out in this study is that the Roman Catholic Church has not always been what it is today. Rather, it has reached its present state as the result of a long, slow process of development as through the centuries one new doctrine, or ritual, or custom after another has been added. Even a superficial reading of the following list will make clear that most of the distinctive features of the system were unknown to Apostolic Christianity, and that one can hardly recognize in present day Romanism the original Christian doctrines. Not all dates can be given with exactness since some doctrines and rituals were debated or practiced over a period of time before their formal acceptance.

**SOME ROMAN CATHOLIC HERESIES AND INVENTIONS** and the dates of their adoption over a period of 1650 years:

1. *Prayers for the dead*, began about A.D...300
2. Making the *sign of the cross*...300
3. *Wax candles* about...320
4. *Veneration of angels and dead saints*, and use of *images*...375
5. *The Mass*, (in its early development) as a daily celebration...394
6. *Beginning of the exaltation of Mary*, the term "Mother of God" first applied to her by the Council of Ephesus...431
7. Priests began to dress differently from laymen...500
8. *Extreme Unction*...526
9. The doctrine of *Purgatory* established by Gregory I...593
10. *Latin language*, used in prayer and worship, imposed by Gregory I...600
11. *Prayers directed to Mary*, dead saints and angels, about...600
12. *Title of pope*, or universal bishop, given to Boniface III by emperor Phocas...610
13. *Kissing the pope's foot*, began with Pope Constantine...709
14. *Temporal power of the popes*, conferred by Pepin, king of France...750
15. *Worship of the cross, images and relics*, authorized in ...786
16. *Holy water*, mixed with a pinch of salt and blessed by a priest...850
17. *Worship of St. Joseph*...890
18. *College of Cardinals* established...927
19. *Baptism of bells*, instituted by Pope John XIV...965

20. *Canonization of dead saints*, first by Pope John XV...995
21. *Fasting on Fridays and during Lent*...998
22. *The Mass*, developed gradually as a sacrifice, attendance made obligatory in the 11<sup>th</sup> century
23. *Celibacy of the priesthood*, decreed by Pope Gregory VII (Hildebrand)...1079
24. *The Rosary*, mechanical praying with beads, invented by Peter the Hermit...1090
25. *The Inquisition*, instituted by the Council of Verona...1184
26. *Sale of Indulgences*...1190
27. *Transubstantiation*, proclaimed by Pope Innocent III...1215
28. *Auricular Confession* of sins to a priest instead of to God, instituted by pope Innocent III, in Lateran Council...1215
29. *Adoration of the wafer (Host)*, decreed by pope Honorius III...1220
30. *Bible forbidden to layman*, placed on the Index of Forbidden Books by the Council of Valencia...1229
31. *The Scapular*, invented by Simon Stock, an English monk...1287
32. *Cup forbidden to the people* at communion by Council of Constance...1414
33. *Purgatory* proclaimed as a dogma by the Council of Florence...1438
34. The doctrine of *Seven Sacraments* affirmed...1439
35. The *Ave Maria* (part of the last half was completed 50 years later and approved by Pope Sixtus V at the end of the 16<sup>th</sup> century)...1508
36. *Jesuit* order founded by Loyola...1534
37. *Tradition* declared of equal authority with the Bible by the Council of Trent...1545
38. *Apocryphal books* added to the Bible by the Council of Trent...1546
39. *Creed of Pope Pius IV* imposed as the official creed...1560
40. *Immaculate Conception* of the Virgin Mary, proclaimed by Pope Pius IX...1854
41. *Syllabus of Errors*, proclaimed by Pope Pius IX, and ratified by the Vatican Council; condemned freedom of religion, conscience, speech, press, and scientific discoveries which are disapproved by the Roman Church; asserted the pope's temporal authority over all civil rulers...1864
42. *Infallibility of the pope* in matters of faith and morals, proclaimed by the Vatican Council...1870
43. *Public schools condemned* by Pope Pius XI...1930
44. *Assumption of the Virgin Mary* (bodily ascension into heaven shortly after her death), proclaimed by Pope Pius XII...1950

Add to these many others: monks-nuns-monasteries-convents-forty days Lent-holy week-Palm Sunday-Ash Wednesday-All Saints day-Candlemas day-fish day-meat days-incense-holy oil-holy palms-Christopher medals-charms-novenas-and still others.

There you have it-the melancholy evidence of Rome's steadily increasing departure from the simplicity of the Gospel (II Cor. 11:3-4), a departure so radical and far-reaching at the present time that it has produced a drastically anti-evangelical church. It is clear beyond possibility of doubt that the Roman Catholic religion as now practiced is the outgrowth of centuries of error. Human inventions have been substituted for Bible truth and practice...The distinctive attitude of the present day Roman Church was fixed largely by the Council of Trent

(1545-1563), with its more than 100 anathemas or curses pronounced against all who then or in the future would dare to differ with its decisions...the people are being told that the way to approach Christ is through His mother. "To Christ through Mary," is the slogan. Her images outnumber those of Christ, and more prayer is offered to her (Mary) than to Christ...And still the Roman Church boasts that she never changes or teaches new doctrines! *Semper idem*- "Always the same"- is her motto! The fact that not one of the doctrines in the above list has any support in the Bible disproves conclusively the claim of the priests that their religion is the same as that taught by Christ and that the popes have been the faithful custodians of that truth.

The fact is that many of the above listed rites and ceremonies were taken directly from paganism or from Old Testament Judaism. Some scholars say that as much as 75 percent of the Roman ritual is of pagan origin. John Henry Newman, later cardinal, in his book *The Development of the Christian Religion*, admits that "Temples, incense, oil lamps, votive offerings, holy water, holy days and seasons of devotion, processions, blessings of fields, sacerdotal vestments, the tonsure (of priests, monks and nuns), images, etc., are all of pagan origin" (p.359).

While the Roman Catholic Church has been so free to hurl the name "heretic" at all who differ with her, the above list shows that the real heretics are the Roman Catholics themselves [including the Roman popes], and that the true orthodox are the evangelical Christians [whom they have murdered by the millions in their "(un)holy Inquisitions"]. Says the Scripture: "But in vain they do worship me, teaching as their doctrines the precepts of men....Making void the word of God by your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things ye do" (Mark 7:7,13)." (24)

Consequently, many of the essential rites, teachings, symbols and customs of the ancient Babylonian religion were preserved into modern times by means of Roman Catholicism and her daughter occult organizations. The Scriptures describe this obscured continuation of the religion of Babylon as, "*MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH*" (Revelation 17:5 KJV).

Moreover, the ancient pagan Roman emperors could be both priests and kings in the Roman system. Within their religious hierarchy, the title "Supreme Pontiff" or "*Pontifex Maximus*" carried great esteem. Concerning the pagan priests of ancient Rome, R. M. Ogilvie noted, "...the major offices of religion were usually held by prominent figures of political life...A priesthood came to be thought of both as an important social distinction and also as a useful lever in politics...In the late republic and early Empire there were four chief colleges of priests which were generally responsible for the cult of the gods...All the priesthoods, unlike a political magistracy, could be held for life...Julius Caesar was *pontifex maximus* and augur. Only the emperor would be a member of all the colleges, as, for instance, Augustus records in his *Res Gestae* (VII, 3)...

...The senior college was undoubtedly that of the pontifices. Originally, as their name 'bridge-builders' suggests, charged with the sacred duties involved in the construction and maintenance of bridges, they had, shortly after the expulsion of the kings, annexed the overall responsibility for the conduct of religion at Rome and were recognized as the premier priesthood. Successive colleges had compiled over the years a manual of religious

precedents, the *Commentaries of the Pontifeces*, which they invoked for determining all disputed questions of procedure. [SOUND FAMILIAR?]...They had ultimate authority over the religious calendar, fixing holy days, deciding when to insert an intercalary month, and so on. **AT THEIR HEAD WAS THE PONTIFEX MAXIMUS**, who was elected as such and not chosen from among the existing *pontifices*. Although expected to consult the rest of the college, he had a great deal of power and freedom of action. His official residence was the Palace (*regia*) in the centre of the Forum, where the PONTIFICAL ARCHIVES were kept. He also seems to have had a general jurisdiction over all the other priests, including the Vestal Virgins [i.e., nuns]...” (25)

Likewise, in the book *THE WORLD OF THE VATICAN* Robert Neville reported, “In fact, the norms of the Roman Empire weigh heavily on the [Roman] Church. In certain respects the Pope himself appears to be the lineal descendant of the Caesars. A good deal of the cherished terminology of the Roman Catholic Church antedates the Christian era. For example, the title of Pontifex Maximus, or Supreme Pontiff, which originally meant “bridge builder” but now simply denotes the Pope, was used to describe THE OFFICE OF THE HEAD OF THE PAGAN CULTS centuries before the Emperor Constantine recognized Christianity as a legal religion. Julius Caesar, among other notables, was a Roman Pontiff. So were Lepidus and Augustus.” (26) In short, **THE PONTIFEX MAXIMUS WAS THE POPE – FATHER, PAPA OF THE PAGAN ROMAN MYSTERY RELIGIONS.**

In addition, there are other terms used today by the Roman Catholic church which were assimilated from the ancient, pagan Roman Empire. Author Robert Neville found, “The expression “Roman Curia,” which today means the Church’s headquarters in the Eternal City, originated in the early days of Rome. It then meant an assembly of tribes; later, during the Republic, IT BECAME A VIRTUAL SYNONYM FOR THE ROMAN SENATE. The term “diocese,” meaning today the territory under a bishop’s jurisdiction, was originally AN ADMINISTRATIVE UNIT DEvised BY THE EMPEROR DIOCLETIAN, who was, incidentally, noted for his persecution of Christians.” (27)

Regarding the paganizing of Christianity, author Dave Hunt pointed out, “When Emperor Constantine supposedly became a Christian in A.D. 313 (really a clever political maneuver), he gave freedom to Christians as well as official status alongside paganism to the Christian church. Since the church was now a recognized religious body in the empire, [in the Roman system] Constantine, as emperor, had to be acknowledged as its de facto head. As such, he convened the first ecumenical council, the Council of Nicea, in A.D. 325, set its agenda, gave the opening speech, and presided over it as Charlemagne would over the Council of Chalon 500 years later. **INTERESTED NOT IN THE TRUTH OF THE GOSPEL BUT IN UNIFYING THE EMPIRE, CONSTANTINE WAS THE FIRST ECUMENIST AND INTRODUCED THAT ERROR INTO THE PERSECUTION-WEARIED CHURCH...**”

“...WHILE HEADING THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH, CONSTANTINE CONTINUED TO HEAD THE PAGAN PRIESTHOOD, TO OFFICIATE AT PAGAN CELEBRATIONS, AND TO ENDOW PAGAN TEMPLES EVEN AS HE BEGAN TO BUILD CHRITIAN CHURCHES. AS HEAD OF THE PAGAN PRIESTHOOD HE WAS THE *PONTIFEX MAXIMUS* AND NEEDED A SIMILAR TITLE AS HEAD OF THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH. THE [ROMAN] CHRISTIANS HONORED HIM AS “BISHOP OF BISHOPS,” WHILE CONSTANTINE CALLED HIMSELF VICARIUS CHRISTI, VICAR OF CHRIST.



He meant that he was “ANOTHER CHRIST” ACTING IN PLACE OF CHRIST. When translated into Greek, however, as we have seen, *Vicarius Christi* literally means *Antichrist*. Constantine was the prototype of the Antichrist prophesied in Scripture and who is yet to come...”

“...In the Middle Ages, the bishops of Rome began to claim that they were the sole representatives of Christ upon earth. DEMANDING THAT THE ENTIRE CHURCH WORLDWIDE MUST BE SUBJECT TO THEIR RULE, THEY FORBADE ANY OTHER BISHOPS TO BE CALLED “PAPA” OR POPE AND TOOK TO THEMSELVES THE THREE TITLES OF CONSTANTINE--- PONTIFEX MAXIMUS, VICAR OF CHRIST, AND BISHOP OF BISHOPS---WHICH THEY RETAIN TO THIS DAY...”

“...AS THE POPES’ CLAIMS TO ABSOLUTE POWER OVER KINGDOMS, PEOPLE, AND PROPERTY WERE REALIZED, GREAT CORRUPTION ENTERED THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH. The Reformers and their creeds were unanimous in identifying each pope as the Antichrist. Scripture, however, does not support that claim. THE ANTICHRIST IS A *UNIQUE* INDIVIDUAL WITHOUT PREDECESSORS OR SUCCESSIONS. HE WILL BE THE NEW “CONSTANTINE,” THE RULER OF THE REVIVED WORLDWIDE ROMAN EMPIRE.” (28)

In like manner, Dave Hunt noted, “Will Durant, a purely secular historian with no religious axe to grind, comments upon the marriage of Christianity and paganism that came about through Constantine’s pretended “conversion” and assumption of church leadership: Paganism survived...in the form of ancient rites and customs condoned, or accepted and transformed, by an often indulgent Church. An intimate and trustful worship of saints replaced the cult of pagan gods...Statues of Isis and Horus were renamed Mary and Jesus; the Roman Lupercalia and the feast of purification of Isis became the Feast of the Nativity; the Saturnalia were replaced by Christmas celebration...an ancient festival of the dead by All Souls Day, rededicated to Christian heroes; lights, flowers, processions, vestments, hymns which had pleased the people in older cults were domesticated and cleansed in the ritual of the Church...soon people and priests would use the sign of the cross as a magic incantation to expel or drive away demons,,,,[paganism] passed like maternal blood into the new religion and captive Rome captured her conqueror,...the world converted Christianity...<sup>11</sup>” (29) This is how Roman Catholicism was born.

Subsequently, decades after the reign of Emperor Constantine, in approx. 378-380 A.D. the Roman religious/political title “*Pontifex*” [*Maximus*] was officially given to Damasus, bishop of Rome. BY MEANS OF THIS ASSIMILATION, THE BISHOP OF ROME WAS GIVEN THE TITLE OF SUPREME PONTIFF OF THE PAGAN ROMAN MYSTERIES, WHILE AT THE SAME TIME, RETAINING HIS AUTHORITY IN THE ROMAN CHURCH. THIS MARKED THE REAL ORIGIN OF THE OFFICE OF THE POPE IN THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH. In *Babylon Mystery Religion-Ancient and Modern* Ralph Woodrow points out “That the papal office was produced by a mixture of paganism and Christianity there can be little doubt. The pallium, the fish-head mitre, the Babylonish garments, the mystic keys, the title Pontifex Maximus, were borrowed from paganism. All these things, and the fact that Christ never instituted the office of the Pope in his church, plainly show that the pope is neither the Vicar of Christ nor the successor of the apostle Peter.” (30)

In his book *Secrets of Romanism* Joseph Zacchello observed, “*Romanism is simply the old Roman paganism revived under Christian names*. Romanism and paganism bear to each other the most exact and extraordinary resemblance. Had paganism its temples and altars, its

pictures and images? So has popery. Had paganism its use of holy water and its burning incense? So has popery. Had paganism its tonsured priests, presided over by a pontifex maximus, or sovereign pontiff? So has popery. Had paganism its claim of sacerdotal infallibility? So has popery. Had paganism its adoration of a visible representative of deity carried on men's shoulders? So has popery. Had paganism its ceremony of kissing the feet of the sovereign pontiff? So has popery. Had paganism its college of pontiffs? So has popery, in the college of Cardinals. Had paganism its adoration of idols, its worship of the queen of heaven, its votive offerings? So has popery. Had paganism its rural shrines and processions? So has popery. Had paganism its pretended miracles, its speaking images, and weeping and bleeding images? So has popery. Had paganism its begging orders and fictitious saints? So has popery. Had paganism its canonization of saints, as in the deification of the dead Caesars? So has popery. Had paganism its idolatrous calendar and numerous festivals? So has popery. Had paganism its enforced celibacy, its mystic signs, its worship of relics? So has popery. Had paganism its cruel persecution of those who opposed idolatry? So has popery. Was paganism satanically inspired? So is popery. God overthrew paganism; Satan revived it under Christian names; but God shall destroy it, and sweep its hateful presence from the earth." (*Romanism and Reformation*, H. Grattan Guinness)." (31)

Mr. Zacchello added, "In the transition from pagan to papal Rome much of the old material was worked up. The heathen temples became Roman churches. The altars of the gods became altars of the saints. The curtains, incense, tapers, votive tablets remained the same. The aquarinarium was still the vessel for holy water. St. Peter stood at the gate, instead of Cardea; St. Roque or St. Sebastian in the bedroom, instead of Phrygian Penates. St. Nicholas was the sign of the vessel, instead of Castor and Pollux. The Matre Deum became the Maddona. Alms pro Matre Deum became alms for the Maddona. The Festival of the Matre Deum, the Festival of the Maddona. The Lugentes campi, or dismissalal regions, became purgatory. The offerings to the Manes were masses for the dead. The name purgatorium was taken from the pagan feast of purification called 'Sacrum Purgatorium.' The Feast of the Purification of Mary replaced the Feast of Lupercalia (in honor of Pan). The Feast of Rogations replaced the Feast of the Ambarvalia (in honor of Ceres). Litanies and processions invoking Christ replaced those to Jupiter." *W. S. Blunt...*"

"...What are nuns with their vows of celibacy, but a new edition of the vestal virgins? The monarchism was, in its origin, a purely pagan institution, common to the religions of India, Tibet and Syria. The daily sacrifice of the mass is copied from the victim – hostia- of the heathen ritual. The pope himself with the triple crown on his head replaced the old Cerberus with his three heads, who keeps guard as the custos of Tartarus and Elysium. The very same piece of brass which the old Romans worshipped as Jupiter, with a new head on its shoulders – like an old friend with a new face – is now, in St. Peter's Church of Rome, adored with equal devotion by the modern Roman Catholics. And, as if they wished to make the resemblance as perfect as possible, they have, in imitation of his pagan prototype, surrounded the (supposed) tomb of the apostle with a hundred ever-burning lights as the '*Centum aras posuit, vigilemque sacraverat ignem*' (He erected a hundred altars, and consecrated the ever-burning fire)." Virgil's *Aneid* 4, From *Rome, Pagan and Papal*: Mourant Brock. **AND THE ROMAN CHURCH CALLS ITSELF THE ONLY ONE, HOLY, CATHOLIC, APOSTOLIC CHURCH, WHEREAS IT IS PAGAN TO THE CORE.**" (32)

See the video entitled “Iglesia católica adoración al dios del sol” (“Catholic church worship of the sun god.”) by Santiago Camacho at: [www.vimeo.com/es/](http://www.vimeo.com/es/) In this video Camacho demonstrates that “the host” used in the Roman Catholic “sacrifice of the mass” is regarded as more than the literal body of Christ Jesus. From ancient times, it has also been regarded as the literal flesh of the sun god worshipped by the pagan Romans in the ancient, pagan Roman mass. The Roman Catholic “sacrifice of the mass” involves religious syncretism. This is why in Roman Catholicism Christ is referred to as the “Sun of righteousness.” Consequently, Romanism includes sun worship.

According to the Holy Scriptures, sun worship is an act of idolatry. See Deuteronomy 4:19; 17:2-3; 18:9-14, 2 Kings 23:5, Jeremiah 8:2 and Ezekiel 8:15-18. The *LORD (JEHOVAH)* our God commands, *“I am the LORD thy God, which brought thee out of the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage. Thou shalt have none other gods before me. Thou shalt not make thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above [such as an image of Mary, a saint or an angel], or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the waters beneath the earth: thou shalt not bow down thyself unto them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me, and shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love me and keep my commandments.”* (Deuteronomy 5:6-10 KJV)

In addition to the previous commandment, which includes the prohibition of bowing down to an image of the sun or any other false god or serving and worshipping them, the *LORD (JEHOVAH)* God warns His people (Israel) of the consequences of practicing idolatry: *“If there be found among you, within any of thy gates which the LORD thy God giveth thee, man or woman, that hath wrought wickedness in the sight of the LORD thy God, in transgressing his covenant, and hath gone and served other gods, and worshipped them, either the sun, or moon, or any of the host of heaven, which I have not commanded;...”* (Deuteronomy 17:2-3 KJV)

THUS, ROMAN CATHOLICISM IS MOST ACCURATELY DEFINED AS A SYNTHESIS OF THE ANCIENT PAGAN ROMAN RELIGIOUS PRIESTHOOD, RITES, CEREMONIES, TEACHINGS, SYMBOLS AND CUSTOMS WITH CHRISTIANITY. As evidenced by her doctrines and actions, she is: 1) a false church 2) counterfeit Christianity 3) an unholy synthesis.

## CHAPTER II: HISTORICAL DEVELOPMENT OF ROMAN CATHOLICISM

*“But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, even Christ; and all ye are brethren. And call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven. Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, even Christ. But he that is greatest among you shall be your servant. And whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abased; and he that shall humble himself shall be exalted. But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in.”*

- Christ Jesus (Matthew 23:8-13)

### HISTORICAL DEVELOPMENT OF THE ROMAN CATHOLIC OFFICE OF THE POPE

Who is the true *Rock* of Christianity? Is it the apostle Peter or is it our Lord Jesus Christ? For centuries the Roman Catholic church has claimed that Peter is the rock of the Church and the first pope. In *Catechism of the Catholic Church* (1994) the apostle Peter is referred to as “the unshakeable rock of the Church.” (33) On the basis of these claims and a misinterpretation of one verse of Scripture – Matthew 16:18, the Roman Catholic church claims apostolic succession for Roman Catholic popes and bishops. The Roman Catholic church affirms: 1) Peter was the head of the apostles. 2) The Catholic bishops are the successors of the apostles (*Catechism of the Catholic Church* - 552, 765, 861-862, 880, 938). 3) The pope, as the bishop of Rome, is the successor of the apostle Peter. 4) The Roman Catholic bishops, with the pope as their head, rule the universal church (*Catechism of the Catholic Church* - 882-883, 894-896, 936).

Whereas, the apostle Peter never claimed to be a pope. Likewise, during the first three centuries of church history, no pastor or bishop in the Christian Church at Rome claimed to be a pope or claimed apostolic succession from Peter for headship of the Church. Moreover, the apostle Peter himself identified our Lord Jesus as “*the stone*” (Acts 4:11, 1 Peter 2:7 KJV); “*chief cornerstone*” (1 Peter 2:6 KJV); “*the head of the corner*” (Acts 4:11, 1 Peter 2:7 KJV); “*a stone of stumbling*” (1 Peter 2:8 KJV); “*a rock of offence*” (1 Peter 2:8 KJV).

In addition, nowhere in his epistles did the apostle Paul teach that Peter was the *Rock*. Rather, Paul recognized our Lord Jesus Christ as “*that Rock*” (1 Corinthians 10:4 KJV); a “*rock of offence*”; “*a stumbling stone*.” (Romans 9:33, KJV) Also, early Hebrew *Christians* were familiar with the Psalms. In numerous verses in the Psalms we find that our “*LORD*” is referred to as the “*rock*.” Early believers confessed Jesus as “*Lord*.” (John 20:27-29, Romans 10:9, Philippians 2:9-11) King David declared:

- 1) “*For who is God save the LORD? or who is a rock save our God?*” (Psalm 18:31 KJV)
- 2) “*UNTO thee will I cry, O LORD my rock; be not silent to me: lest, if thou be silent to me, I become like them that go down into the pit.*” (Psalm 28:1 KJV)

- 3) *"IN thee, O LORD, do I put my trust; let me never be ashamed: deliver me in thy righteousness. Bow down thine ear to me; deliver me speedily: be thou my strong rock, for a house of defense to save me. For thou art my rock and my fortress; therefore for thy name's sake lead me, and guide me." (Psalm 31:1-3 KJV)*
- 4) *"Hear my cry, O God; attend unto my prayer. From the end of the earth will I cry unto thee, when my heart is overwhelmed: lead me to the rock that is higher than I." (Psalm 61:1-2 KJV)*
- 5) *"TRULY my soul waiteth upon God: from him cometh my salvation. He only is my rock and my salvation; he is my defense; I shall not be greatly moved." (Psalm 62:1-2 KJV)*
- 6) *"And they remembered that God was their rock, and the high God their redeemer." (Psalm 78:35 KJV)*
- 7) *"To show that the LORD is upright: he is my rock, and there is no unrighteousness in him." (Psalm 92:15 KJV)*
- 8) *"But the LORD is my defense; and my God is the rock of my refuge." (Psalm 94:22 KJV)*
- 9) *"O COME, let us sing unto the LORD: let us make a joyful noise to the rock of our salvation." (Psalm 95:1 KJV)*

What is the origin of the Roman office of the pope? During the reign of Roman emperor Constantine, conditions emerged which prepared the way for the rise of the papacy. In *Secrets of Romanism* Joseph Zacchello explained, "The Roman church had its origin as follows: The removal of the capital of the empire from Rome to Constantinople in 330 left the Western church practically free from imperial power to develop its own form of organization. THE BISHOP OF ROME, IN THE SEAT OF THE CAESARS, WAS NOW THE GREATEST MAN IN THE WEST, AND SOON BECAME THE POLITICAL AS WELL AS THE SPIRITUAL HEAD. To the Western world, Rome was still the political capital – hence, the whole habit of mind, all ambition, pride, and sense of glory, and every social prejudice favored the evolution of the great city into the ecclesiastical capital. The primacy of the Bishop of Rome, established in the pre-Constantine period, was emphasized and magnified after 313 [Edict of Milan]...The organization of the [Roman] church was thus put on the same divine basis as the revelation of Christianity. This idea once accepted led inevitably to the medieval papacy..." (34)

Subsequently, the conferring of the pagan Roman title "*Pontifex*" [*Maximus*] to Roman bishop Damasus in approx. 378-380 A. D. marked the beginning of the rise of Roman ecclesiastical supremacy and the "Roman" Catholic papacy. During his reign, Damasus was zealous in suppressing all religious dissent. In a ruthless act of "Roman" religious tyranny, supporters of Damasus were ordered to attack his ecclesiastical opponents resulting in a massacre of 137 people. The victims were supporters of Ursinus, his rival to the office of Roman bishop. [See [https://www.newworldencyclopedia.org/entry/Damasus\\_I](https://www.newworldencyclopedia.org/entry/Damasus_I)] Keep in mind that Damasus is regarded as a "saint" by the Roman Catholic church. The papacy continued to evolve with the election of each new bishop of Rome. In 440 A.D. Leo I was the first to publicly refer to himself as "pope."

As the years passed, the political and religious power and influence of the Roman popes increased. With the advent of the "Holy Roman Empire" (800-1806 A.D.) at the crowning of Frankish king Charlemagne by pope Leo III in 800 A. D., the pope had become a major political

and religious power broker in Europe. The Holy Roman Empire was, in fact, regarded as, “the re-embodiment of the Roman Empire as a universal political unity over which the Pope had spiritual control.” (35) The pope was viewed as a monarch over the spiritual, while the emperor was considered a monarch over the temporal. (36) The church and the state were interconnected. The two were united as one with the same agenda. Thus, the popes and the emperors asserted global dominion.

Under such a system of religious tyranny, abuses of authority were inevitable. In his book *A Woman Rides the Beast* Dave Hunt observed, “From Persecuted to Persecutor - Referring to developments after Constantine, Peter Brown writes: “Far from being a source of improvement, this alliance [with the state] was a source of ‘greater danger and temptation’ [than persecution had been]....The spread of Christianity in Africa, by indiscriminately filling the churches, had simply washed away the clear moral landmarks that separated the ‘church’ from the ‘world.’”<sup>12</sup> Political considerations began to subtly influence Christian life and doctrine (just as today), because what was best for the state loomed large in ecclesiastical affairs and the emperor was now in charge of both. WITH THE FALL OF THE ROMAN EMPIRE, THE POPES WOULD ASSUME THE EMPEROR’S ROLE AND THE MARRIAGE WITH THE WORLD WOULD BE COMPLETE. In its new role as the favored (and eventually official) religion of the empire, “Christianity” became polluted by its avid pursuit of secular power. The purity and spiritual power of the early church had been so awesome that unbelievers dared not join it (Acts 5:13)...” “...From being persecuted, the [Roman] Church became the chief persecutor, not only of religious faith but, as we have seen, of any form of freedom of conscience. Hasler explains how the metamorphosis occurred: “Once Christianity became the state religion, deviations from [Roman] orthodoxy threatened both the unity of the empire and of the Church. And it was the emperor who had the greatest interest in settling doctrinal disputes. He convened ecumenical councils and largely dictated their results.”<sup>14</sup> THE POPES, HOWEVER, HAD THE TRUMP CARD---THE KEYS TO HEAVEN---AND USED IT TO INTIMIDATE KINGS AND EMPERORS INTO BECOMING THE SECULAR ARM WHICH DID THEIR BIDDING, ESPECIALLY THE EXECUTIONS DURING THE INQUISITIONS...”

“...In 1864, [pope] Pius IX’s *Syllabus of Errors* condemned “the whole existing view of the rights of conscience and religious faith and profession.” The *Syllabus* said it was “a wicked error to admit Protestants to equal political rights with Catholics, or to allow Protestant immigrants the free use of their worship; on the contrary, to coerce and suppress them is a sacred duty, when it has become possible...the Church will, of course, act with the greatest prudence in the use of her temporal and physical power, according to altered circumstances....”<sup>15</sup>” (37)

Roman Catholic Professor Malachi Martin observed, “We know of over forty popes who bought their way into the papacy.” (38) In like manner, Martin pointed out, “Cardinal Robert of Geneva was expert in the tactical use of Breton pike-men, wielded no mean pike himself, marched at the head of a contingent of these butchers over the Alps, and massacred every man, woman, and child he could find in the town of Cesena, Italy – all in all, about 6,000 people [Vatican love in action - Matthew 22:39-40]. The statesman most responsible for the rise of Protestant England, Protestant Germany, and Protestant Sweden was Cardinal Richelieu, who was not at all bothered by the cannibalism and terrorism of the Thirty Years’

War which he fomented, and who died as he crawled about on all fours, neighing and persuaded that he was a horse.” (39)

Desiring even more political authority, lands and money, pope Gregory VII laid down the groundwork for a “new system of international government” during his papacy. (40) By the time of pope Innocent III, the papacy had become an actual monarchy with the papal states in Italy, and popes began regarding themselves as rulers over the rulers of the nations. They believed that they had been given divine right to appoint, depose and/or judge kings, queens, princes, nobles and local rulers. Nations were seen as vassals of the popes. In his chapter entitled “Lord of the World” Roman Catholic priest Malachi Martin noted, “And another major factor had emerged by the opening of the 1200s: THE MOST IMPORTANT LAND OWNER IN EUROPE WAS THE POPE; THE MOST IMPORTANT PARTS OF EUROPE WERE FIEFS OF THE POPE. HE COMMANDED THEIR MILITARY SUPPORT, THEIR POLITICAL LOYALTY, DETERMINED WHO THEIR RULERS WERE TO BE, AND COULD CALL ON THEIR FINANCIAL CONTRIBUTIONS. Most importantly, the men and women of the age knew no other means of discerning legitimate government except by the approval of that one resident bishop of Rome who claimed ceaselessly to be the successor of St. Peter and the Vicar of Jesus. On his will depended, therefore, their civil order and the legitimacy of their laws...

...Besides, the pope possessed spiritual weapons he could use against his enemies. He could excommunicate individuals and whole communities. As a consequence, nobody could be forgiven their sins or receive the sacraments. He could place the whole city, the whole country, if necessary, under interdict: all other Christians [Catholics] were forbidden to have any intercourse with them, even in cases of necessity. All trading was illegal. All business deals were invalid in law. It was the [Roman] churchly version of the old classical Roman punishment meted out to fugitives, traitors, and criminals, the refusal of “fire, water, bread, and roof.” And no one could long survive under an effective interdict. Every ruler wished to have some control or call on the man who sat on THE THRONE OF PETER IN ROME, AND WHOSE CARDINALS WERE PRINCES IN THEIR OWN RIGHT. These very circumstances – THE POWERFUL TEMPORAL DOMINION OF THE POPE, HIS SPIRITUAL OVERLORDSHIP, and the irreconcilable clash between these two claims – inevitably produced a new way of choosing a pope: the conclave. Nothing illustrates more graphically than the lives of certain popes why and how the conclave method arose.” (41)

The religious tyranny and political tyranny of Romanism has been clearly demonstrated by the teachings, decrees and actions of the popes, cardinals, bishops, and priests of Rome for centuries. One of the Roman Catholic teachings that provides theological support for Roman dominion and despotism is the doctrine of the infallibility of Roman popes.

It was Sir John Dalberg-Acton who so eloquently addressed the rise of the nineteenth century doctrine of papal infallibility in a letter to Mandell Creighton in April, 1887. Correctly understanding human nature (Romans 3:23), Acton proclaimed, “But if we might discuss this point until we found that we nearly agreed, and if we do agree thoroughly about the impropriety of Carlylese denunciations and Pharisaism in history, I do not accept your canon that we are to judge Pope and King unlike other men, with a favourable presumption that they did no wrong. If there is any presumption it is the other way, against the holders of power, increasing as the power increases, Historic responsibility has to make up for the want of legal responsibility. Power tends to corrupt and absolute power corrupts absolutely. Great

men are almost always bad men, even when they exercise influence and not authority, still more when you superadd the tendency or the certainty of corruption by authority. There is no worse heresy than that the office sanctifies the holder of it...and the end learns to justify the means..." (42)

In the book entitled **PAPAL INFALLIBILITY ITS COMPLETE COLLAPSE BEFORE A FACTUAL INVESTIGATION** author J. B. Rowell observed, "*The Roman Church Claims Infallibility for her Pope* The Roman Catholic church undertook the role as spiritual guide, claiming that, when speaking *ex cathedra*, her pope is infallible. This means that, in such pronouncements, on faith or morals, the pope cannot err. He is free from the normal results of failure of memory, defect of information, or any human weakness whatsoever. *What the Roman Church Teaches The Vatican Decrees*, the authoritative voice of the Roman church, says: The Roman Pontiff, when he speaks *ex cathedra* – that is, when in the discharge of the office of Pastor and Doctor OF ALL CHRISTIANS, by virtue of his supreme Apostolic Authority, he defines a doctrine regarding faith or morals to be held by the Universal Church, by the divine assistance promised him in blessed Peter, is possessed of that infallibility, with which the divine Redeemer willed that his church should be endowed for defining doctrine regarding faith or morals; and that therefore such definitions of the Roman Pontiff ARE IRREFORMABLE OF THEMSELVES, AND NOT FROM THE CONSENT OF THE CHURCH. But if any one which may God avert – presume to contradict this our definition: let him be anathema (chapter IV)..."

"...*No Shred of Logical Proof* This means that dogmas or articles of faith, for acceptance, because they are *definitions of the Roman Pontiff and not from the consent of the church*, are irreformable, that is, they are in no way subject to revision or improvement. It also demands UNCONDITIONAL SUBMISSION under the threat of the pope's anathema or curse. There is not a shred of logical proof anywhere for this teaching, or for this claim. Holy Scripture testifies against it. The verdict of history is opposed to it. The outstanding theologians and scholars of the Roman church registered their protest as unquestionably opposed to it..." (43) Yet, the Vatican, with the aid of the Jesuit order and selected clerics elevated to the position of *titular bishops*, was able to offset the voting power of bishops who opposed the doctrine of papal infallibility and thereby force this teaching on all professing Christians at the First Vatican Council in 1870.

Nevertheless, there were many witnesses who boldly opposed this nineteenth century Roman Catholic false teaching both within the Roman Catholic church and outside of it. One such witness was John J. Ignaz von Dollinger. He was a Roman Catholic professor of theology at the Royal University of Munich. Professor von Dollinger clearly understood the dangerous implications of the new doctrine of papal infallibility and boldly denounced it. In chapter XII entitled "DR. DOLLINGER'S FOURFOLD DECLARATION," found in his previously mentioned book, J. B. Rowell noted, "Papal infallibility would take away man's inherent right to have any religious conviction or opinion of his own. Our Lord's gracious word, "If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed," is nullified by papal infallibility, which deprives man of freedom or the liberty to think and choose for himself, even though under the guidance of the unerring Holy Spirit (John 8:36)..."

"...*Dreading the Stigma of Heretic* "A heretic means one who chooses his own belief without regard to the authority of the church." Heresy is "deciding for oneself what one shall believe and practice" instead of accepting the teachings of the Roman church (see *The New Catholic*



*Dictionary – Vatican Edition*, p. 440). “All Christians who reject the teaching of the Catholic Church are heretics” (*Compendium of Christian Doctrine*, published by the Vatican Press, 1906, p. 131). *Daring to Think Contrary to the Pope* Lord Acton, one of the greatest of scholars in the Roman church, reporting from Rome as to conditions at the Vatican Council (Feb. 16, 1870), made this disclosure: ...The Pope has been for several weeks past in a chronic state of mingled indignation and astonishment at *finding so many bishops—even at Rome, in his own immediate neighbourhood—daring to think the contrary to what he, Pius IX., thinks and says* (*Letters from Rome*, p. 283)...

“...*Submission or Excommunication* Many weighty names were among those who resisted the passage of the dogma of papal infallibility. Lord Acton affirmed ...all who are *eminent for authority and knowledge—especially historians and theologians—protest against the new dogma* (*ibid.* p. 280). Yet, the fact remained that, when the Pope had defined the dogma *ex cathedra*, much of the opposition subsided into A SERVILE SUBMISSION. Henry Edward Manning, who for his support of pope and papacy was elevated to the cardinalate, dared to suggest to all who opposed the dogma, the alternative, SUBMISSION OR EXCOMMUNICATION. Lord Acton exposed this piece of tyranny, May 20, 1870, when he wrote: Manning...now maintains that all who do not submit to the majority might well be excommunicated directly after the promulgation of the decree (*ibid.* p. 548)...”

“...*Implications of Excommunication* Excommunication places the excommunicated person out of [Roman Catholic] *communion*. It is a spiritual censure which excludes from the communion of the faithful and imposes “consequences inseparably attached by canon law to such exclusion. It is also called anathema,” and is regarded as “the Church’s most serious penalty.” Such are to be “stigmatized by name, publicly and through judicial sentence,” and are to be “carefully shunned” (see *The New Catholic Dictionary – Vatican Edition*, p. 353). *Courage of Conviction* knowing full well all the serious implications of excommunication, there were some courageous scholars of great knowledge and deep convictions who refused to sacrifice their mental freedom and liberty of conviction. Among these courageous souls was Dr. John J. Ign. von Dollinger, Professor of Theology in the Royal University of Munich...”

“...*Cannot Submit Without Sacrificing Truth* In the crisis hour, when the Jesuits had, by forgery and falsification, framed the doctrine of papal infallibility and had plotted and piloted it through the Vatican Council, and had brought it to the mouth of the pope for *ex cathedra* definition, there were those who could not and would not bow conscience and conviction to its acceptance...*Facing the Issue* In spite of the fact that Dr. Dollinger knew of the penalties facing him if he persisted in his belief that papal infallibility altogether lacked Scriptural, historical, and traditional proof, so firm were his convictions that he continued to maintain his unflinching stand...”

“...*No Personal or Corporate Freedom* Very few have understood all the serious implications of papal infallibility. Dr. Dollinger stressed some of these in his answer to the Archbishop. Speaking of the Pope – As he has become infallible, he can, at any moment, with the one little word ‘orbi’ (thereby addressing the whole Church), *Make every statute, every doctrine, and every postulate, an infallible and irrevocable article of faith. AS OPPOSED TO HIM, THERE EXISTS NO RIGHT, NO PERSONAL OR CORPORATE FREEDOM, OR AS THE CANONISTS SAY, ‘THE TRIBUNALS OF GOD AND THE POPE ARE ONE AND THE SAME.’*

(*ibid.* p. 102).

**“A GRAND AND NOBLE DECLARATION “As *Christian, as theologian, as historian, as citizen, I cannot accept this doctrine.*” [von Dollinger] “*I cannot do so as a Christian*, because it is incompatible with the spirit of the gospel, and with the lucid sayings of Christ and the apostles; it simply wishes TO ESTABLISH THE KINGDOM OF THIS WORLD, which Christ declined to do, and to possess the SOVEREIGNTY OVER THE CONGREGATIONS, which Peter refused for every one else, as well as for himself. *I cannot do so as a theologian*, because the whole genuine tradition of the Church stands irreconcilably opposed to it. “*I cannot do so as a historian*, because, as such, I know that the persistent endeavours to realize THIS THEORY OF A UNIVERSAL SOVEREIGNTY HAS COST EUROPE STREAMS OF BLOOD, DISTRACTED AND RUINED WHOLE COUNTRIES, SHAKEN TO ITS FOUNDATIONS THE BEAUTIFUL ORGANIC EDIFICE OF THE CONSTITUTION OF THE OLDER CHURCH, AND BEGOTTEN, NURSED AND MAINTAINED THE WORST ABUSES IN THE CHURCH. Finally, *I must reject it as a citizen*, BECAUSE WITH ITS CLAIMS ON THE SUBMISSION OF STATES AND MONARCHS AND THE WHOLE POLITICAL ORDER OF THINGS TO THE PAPAL POWER, AND BY THE EXCEPTIONAL POSITION CLAIMED BY IT FOR THE CLERGY, *it lays the foundation for an endless and fatal discord between the state and the church, between the clergy and the laity* (*ibid.* pp. 102, 103)...this outstanding scholar was brought to trial and condemned by his [Roman] church’s anathema [excommunication].” (44)**

**ALL THINGS CONSIDERED, IT WAS A GREAT HONOR FOR JOHN J. IGN. VON DOLLINGER TO BE EXCOMMUNICATED FROM THIS FALSE CHURCH FOR BOLDLY DECLARING THE TRUTH TO THOSE DECEIVED BY ROMANISM. MY HOPE IS THAT PROFESSOR VON DOLLINGER FOUND PEACE WITH GOD AND TRUE ASSURANCE OF ETERNAL LIFE IN HEAVEN THROUGH PERSONAL FAITH IN JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF AND HIS DEATH (SINGULAR) AS FULL EXPIATION FOR OUR SINS – BIBLICAL SALVATION (John 3:16-18; 3:36; 5:24; 14:6, Acts 4:12; 16:30-31, Romans 5:1-2; 8:1, 2 Corinthians 5:21, 1 Timothy 2:5-6, Hebrews 7:25; 10:1-22, 1 John 1:6-10; 2:1-2).**

In the book *The Church of Rome a Dissuasive* by R. P. C. Hanson and R. H. Fuller it is pointed out: “WHEN Roman Catholics are trying to show that their church is the only true church they almost always begin with an argument which can be simply stated in the form of a syllogism, thus:

It is inconceivable that Christ should have founded a church which is not divinely preserved from error. The Roman Catholic Church alone claims to be divinely preserved from error [i.e. infallible]. Therefore the Roman Catholic Church is the only true Church...

...At first sight this looks impressive and even convincing. But we must first point out that this argument depends entirely upon a *priori* reasoning, that is to say, reasoning which at no point descends to examine the actual facts of the history of the Church but remains solely in the field of conjecture as to what we should like to be the case. A similar syllogism depending entirely on a *priori* (for two can play at this game) could be constructed in a very different sense, e.g.:

It is inconceivable that Christ should have intended his Church to be despotically governed. The Roman Catholic Church is despotically governed. Therefore the Roman Catholic Church cannot be Christ’s Church...

...We must ask, first, how far exactly does the Roman Catholic Church claim to be infallible?

And we must enquire secondly, is there any positive evidence suggesting that this church is infallible, or (what surely must be easier to demonstrate) suggesting that it is not infallible? The answer which immediately suggests itself to the first question is that Roman Catholics believe the Pope to be infallible. But (according to Roman Catholics) we must not imagine that this means that the Pope is thought to be invariably infallible or infallible in a general way. We must not assume that if the pope were to remark that Glorious Boy will certainly win the 2.30 at Kempton Park next Tuesday he would be regarded by Roman Catholics as having made an infallible utterance. He is not infallible, according to Roman theory, except on the subject of faith and morals, and even on those in only very much restricted circumstances. It is as well to quote the words of the Vatican Council of 1870 which defined his infallibility: '(The Pope is infallible) when he speaks *ex cathedra* [i.e. from his apostolic throne], that is, when exercising his function of shepherd and teacher of all Christians, in virtue of his supreme, apostolic authority, he defines a piece of teaching, concerning faith and morals, to be held by the church as a whole.'<sup>1</sup> ...

...This is restriction enough. But since 1870 Roman Catholic theologians have been much exercised in limiting the statement even further. The Pope, they hold, 'is not infallible in the reasons by which he is led, or on which he relies. Nor is it necessary to hold that he is directly and actually exercising his infallibility in the "prefaces and introductions" to his definitions.'<sup>2</sup>

...Now this limitation of papal infallibility is in one sense useful to Roman apologists, because it renders the Pope less vulnerable to damaging evidence that he has made mistaken utterances and decisions. Any case which apparently suggests that the Pope made a mistake can usually be explained as not fulfilling the conditions of infallibility and so not forming an exception to the rule of infallibility. For instance, no Pope for the first three hundred years of the Church's existence even remotely dreamed that he had 'supreme apostolic authority' in the modern Roman sense of that term and no Pope for many centuries after that imagined or claimed that he was a 'shepherd and teacher of all Christians' in the modern Roman sense of that term. Therefore it is possible to hold that no Pope during these centuries violated the rule of infallibility, because none of them apparently attempted to be infallible, or even seemed to know that they could be infallible. Pope Liberius (352-366) in the year 357 signed an heretical formula and excommunicated Archbishop Athanasius whom all subsequent Christian tradition acknowledges to have been in the matter then under dispute wholly orthodox. Pope Honorius (625-638) was condemned as impious and heretical at the Sixth General Council because of the (open) letters which he wrote in 638 to Sergius, Patriarch of Constantinople, on the subject of the Monothelite controversy...

...Again, in later ages Pope Eugenius IV, in the middle of the fifteenth century, defined what constitutes the sacrament of orders in a manner which has been proved by later historical research to be utterly wrong; if Eugenius did not, according to modern Roman apologists, fulfill the conditions laid down by the Vatican Council; he was only giving an answer to some Armenian Christians (who were presumably consulting him under the mistaken impression that as teacher of the whole Church he would give them a reliable answer), and therefore in the utterance he was providing no exception to the rule of infallibility. Pope Pius V in 1615 informed the scientist Galileo that his theory that the earth moved round the sun and not *vice versa* was heretical and Pius' successor, [pope] Urban VIII, approved a decree of the Holy Office in 1632 to the same effect. But neither of these outstanding blunders of Popes came

precisely within the limits of the Vatican Council's definition. Apparently declaring that a scientific theory is heretical is not the same as defining a piece of teaching concerning faith, and approving a decree of the holy Office is not giving an *ex cathedra* definition.<sup>1</sup>...

...This limitation of the circumstances in which Papal infallibility functions is obviously useful to Roman Catholic theologians, as it restricts the field in which Papal infallibility can be examined and disproved. But it carries with it two embarrassing consequences. The first of these is that it in effect turns the Pope, as far as his infallibility is concerned, into a magic oracle, very like the ancient pagan oracles at places like Cumae and Delphi. If the Pope is not infallible in the reasons by which he is led or which he relies on, nor in the prefaces nor introductions to his infallible utterances, and therefore all these could be entirely mistaken or wholly inadequate to support the infallible utterance itself, then it is impossible to avoid the conclusion that he is not infallible in the *motives* which induce him to make an infallible utterance (indeed it seems to us that Butler virtually concedes this). We know of no other example in history of a human mind which attains to religious and moral truth without being necessarily true in its reasons or motives for arriving at that truth; we cannot even make an exception of our Lord's mind during his earthly ministry in this respect...

...Roman Catholic apologists are very loth to admit this consequence, because they like to insist that the Pope is the organ of the Church's infallibility, that he sums up in his decisions the Church's knowledge of divine truth, that he is the expression and symbol of what the Church infallibly knows about God, and that somehow the Church reflects upon the Pope and the Pope throws back upon the Church this elusive but powerful quality of infallibility. They like to think that the *obiter dictum* of Pope Pius IX, *io son' la tradizione* ('I am tradition'), though not formally infallible, is in fact true. It is obviously very difficult to hold this doctrine and also to hold that the Pope's infallibility is as discontinuous with the rest of his mental and spiritual activity, as oracular and magical, as a consideration of Papal pronouncements throughout history forces them to conclude that it must be...

...Or we may take all the Popes who reigned in the second half of the fifteenth century after Pius II, a succession of Pontiffs who behaved exactly as if they were petty Italian princelings [i.e. mafia], playing ruthlessly the sordid game of mediaeval power-politics, but using the Church's revenues and (worse) the Church's excommunication and the Church's slogans to aid them. This series ended with the notorious Pope Alexander VI (1492-1503), that outstanding peak of Borgia infamy. These did not behave as if they were the organs of the Church's infallible knowledge of God,; they did not look like it; every single indication suggests that they were wholly incapable of acting in this capacity...

...The argument that the unworthiness of the minister does not hinder the effect of the sacrament will not hold here. We are now concerned, not with the external and objective action of consecrating water or bread or wine, but with the case of a human being uttering truth. This is essentially a personal activity involved with the character and mind of individual persons; indeed this fact shows how unreal and ridiculous it is to attribute truth to a definition but not to the reasons and motives in the mind of the utterer of the definition..." (45)

The results of believing the Roman Catholic doctrines of papal infallibility and papal supremacy are found in the sermons and writings proclaimed by the priests of Rome. In his book *THE PAPAL INVASION OR ROMAN CATHOLIC METHODS TO DATE* J.F. Love quoted

from a message preached on June 30, 1912 by Roman Catholic priest D. S. Phelan of Our Lady of Mount Carmel of St. Louis, Missouri. At the time, Mr. Phelan was editor of the Roman Catholic journal *The Western Watchman*. Priest Phelan stated, "...Why is it the pope is such a tremendous power? Why, the pope is the ruler of the world. All the emperors, all the kings, all the princes, all the presidents of the world today are as these altar boys of mine. The pope is the ruler of the world. Why? Because he is the ruler of the Catholics of the world; and the Catholics of all the world would die for the rights of the pope. He is the head of the church and they would die for the church. And the church is the church of Jesus Christ, and they need not have any misgivings on that score; there need be no misconceptions there – the Catholics of the world are Catholics first and always; they are Americans, they are Germans, they are French, or they are English afterward..."(46)

In like manner Mr. Love wrote, "I hold in my hand *The Sunday Watchman* of September 24<sup>th</sup>, 1911, "A Catholic journal devoted to the interests of the Catholic church in the West." In it is an address by Archbishop Bourne entitled, "The Civil Independence of the Papacy," from which I quote the following verbatim: "Civil independence is of absolute necessity for the free and untrammelled exercise of the supreme Pontificate. The supreme head of the universal church CANNOT consistently with the dignity of his office or the exercise of the powers of which he is a depository BE THE SUBJECT OF ANY GOVERNMENT, BUT MUST NOT ONLY POSSESS BUT FREELY EXERCISE SOVEREIGN RIGHTS." That is the political policy of Rome brought down to date, and it is an interpretation of the pope's policy for many centuries...A half a century ago Cardinal Manning said: "The Catholic church interdicts the right of private judgment in matters of faith; She has ever interdicted it, and She will continue to interdict it to the end of time. Free inquiry, individual preference, liberty of mind, freedom of thought, private judgment in the domain of faith, are words which She has no ears to hear. She will not, She cannot listen to them; they would rend the rock on which she rests...In his famous Syllabus, pope Pius IX, said of the church: "She has the right to exercise her power without the permission or consent of the state," and again, "She has the right to require that the Catholic religion shall be the only religion of the state, to the exclusion of all others...She has the power of requiring the state not to permit free exercise of opinion." (47) Thus, with these views and policies the Vatican helped pave the way in the twentieth century for numerous wars and the rise of the notorious "Godfather," despotic, murderous, fascist regimes of Roman Catholic dictators: 1) Benito Mussolini (1883-1945); 2) Adolf Hitler (1889-1945?); 3) Francisco Franco (1892-); 4) Ante Pavelic (1889-1959); and 5) Ngo Dinh Diem (1901-1963).

In his book entitled *A HISTORY OF POPERY: GIVING A FULL ACCOUNT OF ALL THE CUSTOMS OF THE PRIESTS AND FRIARS, AND THE RITES AND CEREMONIES OF THE PAPAL CHURCH* Anthony Gavon pointed out, "The church of Rome claims to be infallible. In consequence of this attribute, she decides what is, and what is not scripture, and what the scriptures teach; she asserts the right also, to prescribe for faith and practice as necessary for salvation, other things than those contained in the scriptures; AND ALL MEN ARE BOUND IMPLICITLY, TO SUBMIT TO HER DECISIONS. Romanists, however, differ very much among themselves about the seat of this tremendous power; some assert that it is in the Pope, others, that it is in a general Council, and others again, in the Pope and Council combined. This very doubt concerning the place of its existence, shows that the pretension itself is

unfounded and ridiculous. For what is the use of infallibility, if none can with certainty, discover where it is, and by whom it is exercised?...

...But this is not all, the claim of infallibility is [a] most blasphemous presumption. GOD ALONE IS INFALLIBLE. --- HIS WORD ALONE CANNOT ERR, --- IN THAT ARE ALL THINGS NECESSARY TO SALVATION, AND TO HIM ALONE OUGHT WE IMPLICITLY TO SUBMIT. THE MAN OR CHURCH, WHO CLAIM TO THEMSELVES INFALLIBILITY, USURP THE PLACE OF GOD, AND EXHIBIT THE VERY CHARACTER OF ANTICHRIST, who opposeth and exalteth himself," says the apostle, "above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he, as God, sitteth in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God." It were easy to swell out this article, so as to fill large volumes, with the account of the gross errors, oppressions, and enormities which have proceeded from infallible Popes, and an infallible church. IT WAS BY AN ALMOST UNIVERSAL ACKNOWLEDGMENT OF THIS IMPIOUS CLAIM TO INFALLIBILITY, THAT THE SPIRITUAL DESPOTISM OF THE DARK AGES WAS MAINTAINED. INDIVIDUALS AND NATIONS WERE STRIPT OF ALMOST EVERY CIVIL AND RELIGIOUS RIGHT, AND TRAMPLED IN THE DUST, BENEATH THE FEET OF THE ROMISH HIERARCHY. The evils at last became intolerable; men almost every where endeavored to burst the yoke; the glorious reformation followed, and multitudes obtained the blessings of freedom. This liberty, purchased by the labours, and tears, and blood of thousands, it is ours to maintain against the claims of infallible "Mother Church..."

...As the church of Rome asserts her infallibility, she can never change; what she has once declared to be truth, must ever remain so---else what becomes of her infallibility? Such a claim then, it is manifest, makes all attempts to *reform* the Romish system of religion utterly hopeless. Being infallibly right in all its essential principles, it never can be altered. THERE IS NO SUCH THING, THEREFORE, AS GETTING RID OF THE EVILS OF SUCH A SYSTEM, BUT BY ALTOGETHER ABANDONING IT. THEY WHO WOULD ESCAPE HER PLAGUES, MUST, IN THE LANGUAGE OF GOD'S WORD, COME OUT OF HER." (48)

In the light of the incredible claims of the Roman Catholic church concerning the office and authority of the pope, many have speculated whether or not the office of the pope is, in fact, the office of the foretold "*antichrist*." Let's consider what the Scriptures teach about the "*antichrist*." He is a person (having the attributes of a person). He is called "*antichrist*." The term "*antichrist*" is found in 1 John 2:18. This title is translated from the Koine Greek word αντιχριστος. It means in place of Christ or in covert opposition to Christ (49). Spiros Zodhiates noted, "Antichristos; antichrist from anti (473), instead of or against. It may mean substitution or opposition. The term antichristos is peculiar to John's Epistles (1 John 2:18, 22; 4:3; 2 John 1:7). It occurs nowhere else in the N. T. Paul's references to the same person include the man of sin, son of perdition, wicked one (anomos 459) as in 2 Thessalonians 2:3, 8. He is the one opposing (antikeimenos 480) as in 2 Thessalonians 2:4. He will attempt to assert the fulfillment of God's Word in himself and will seek to establish his own throne. See pseudochristos (5580), false Christ (50)."

In 1 John 2:18 the apostle John distinguishes between "*many antichrists*" and the one person identified as the "*antichrist*." Also, the "*spirit of antichrist*" referred to in 1 John 4:3 is associated in the same text with false prophets, false teachings, and "*the spirit of error* (4:6)." We find in 1 John 4:1-6 that a person can have the "*spirit of antichrist*" by embracing false

teachings about Christ. Thus, the Scriptures reveal that a person can have the “*spirit of antichrist*” and thereby be one of “*many antichrists*” (plural). However, the singular usage of “*antichrist*” refers to the coming, false, global messiah described in Daniel 7-8 and Revelation 13:1-10.

Also known as “*the man of sin*,” in the Scriptures, the *antichrist* will be revealed “*in his time*” (2 Thessalonians 2:3-6, 1 John 2:18, Revelation 13). When we consider what the Scriptures reveal about the Antichrist, two questions come to mind. 1) When will the Antichrist be revealed? 2) How can he be identified?

The answer to the first question is found in 2 Thessalonians 2:6. It is, “*in his time*” (ἐν τῷ αὐτοῦ καιρῷ). In other words, the *antichrist* will be revealed in the *LORD*’s sovereign, predetermined time of his rise to power. It could be next month; next year; or years from now. The second question is reserved for those to whom he will be revealed. But to whom will he be revealed? Who will recognize him? Regarding this issue, *Holy Spirit* given discernment is necessary. Who will recognize this evil son of perdition for the devil in human flesh that he is? Only genuine *Christians* will recognize and discern who the *antichrist* is by means of the indwelling *Holy Spirit* and biblical data. To the unsaved he will be regarded as a global hero, a new messiah, a great world leader. But the *LORD*’s people will recognize him by his actions foretold in Bible prophecies. Perhaps the first among *Christians* to recognize him will be those to whom the Holy Spirit has given the spiritual gift of “*discerning of spirits*” (1 Corinthians 12:10).

Never before in the history of humanity have conditions been more prepared for the rise of the global leader identified in the Scriptures as the *antichrist*. Global problems have led many to believe that there is need for “change” to a new global civilization. But, to where will this “change” lead humanity? In the Holy Bible we find the answers. The move toward global oneness (or “global solidarity”) and a new global order have helped prepare the necessary spiritual and political conditions for the rise of the *Devil*’s ultimate, ascended master. He is a false messiah who will deceive most of the world’s population in the last days. As we study the Scriptures, we locate identifying characteristics that will enable us to create a Bible prophecy composite picture of the “*antichrist*.” As *Christians*, we take the prophetically foretold rise to power of the global leader known as the *antichrist* very seriously. Why? Because we understand from the Scriptures what he will do to the genuine *saints* and to the nations in the last days.

Throughout church history, a number of views have emerged concerning the “*antichrist*.” For years, many early *Christians* believed that the “*antichrist*” would be a Roman emperor. Many who lived during the time of the homosexual, pedophile Roman emperor Nero thought that he was the “*antichrist*.” Later, there were those who spiritualized or explained away the person of “*antichrist*” as a figurative representation. Then came the rise of Islam stirring Muslim jihad – murders, invasions and genocides against *Christians*. Many began believing that the “*antichrist*” would be Muslim. Others believed that the “*antichrist*” would need to be Jewish in order to win over the Jews to his global agenda and portray himself as their deliverer/messiah in the last days.

Due to the many persecutions, massacres, holocausts and wars ordered by Rome against Bible-believing *Christians* over the centuries, the Reformers identified the “*antichrist*” as the

pope of the Roman Catholic church. For the office of the pope was viewed as being “in place of” (See Greek for meaning of the prefix anti-) Jesus Christ and as the head of the Church by many. See Ephesians 5:23-24, Colossians 1:18-20; 2:8-10 and 1 Timothy 6:14-15. In these passages our Lord Jesus is presented as the only, true “*head*” (singular) and “*Potentate*” (singular) of the Church.

George Ladd provided historical perspective in *The Blessed Hope*. He explained, “After the first centuries, the expectation of an *antichrist* as an evil world ruler to appear just before the return of Christ gradually disappeared. Revelation came to be interpreted along spiritual lines, and after the time of Augustine, his “amillennial” view that the thousand years began with Christ’s earthly life and would continue to the end of the church age became the predominant interpretation...

...During the Middle Ages, the “historical” interpretation of Revelation arose in which the book was thought to give in symbolic form an outline of the history of the Church. Antichrist was frequently interpreted to mean the Saracens, and the false prophet to mean Mohammed. Pope Innocent III made effective use of the Revelation to stir up support for his crusade...

...*The “Protestant” Interpretation* The Reformers took over this type of historical interpretation of prophetic truth and found in the Antichrist a prophecy of the Papacy...This “historical” type of interpretation with its application of the Antichrist to papal Rome so dominated Protestant study of prophetic truth for three centuries that it has frequently been called “the Protestant” interpretation...Many of the great Christians of Reformation and post-Reformation times shared this view of prophetic truth and identified Antichrist with the Roman Papacy...Among adherents of this interpretation were the Waldenses, the Hussites, Wycliff, Luther, Calvin, Zwingli, Melanchthon, the Baptist theologian John Gill, the martyrs Cranmer, Tyndale, Latimer and Ridley. John Wesley,...” (51)

However, many *Christians* would disagree with this interpretation. Many believe that the “*antichrist*” (also known as “*the beast*” of Revelation 13:1-10) will be a global political leader, while the false prophet (the 2<sup>nd</sup> beast - “*another beast*” of Revelation 13:11-18) will be a global religious leader. The false prophet described in Revelation 13:11-18 may be the final pope or a different global religious leader who rises to power in the latter days. Regardless of who emerges as the “*antichrist*”, the Roman Vatican will play a key role in his rise to power since she rides “*the beast*.” (Revelation 17)

## HISTORICAL DEVELOPMENT OF THE ROMAN CATHOLIC SACRAMENT OF THE EUCHARIST (THE MASS)

The Roman Catholic church recognizes seven sacraments. In the Roman Catholic *Catechism of the Catholic Church* (1994) we read, “1113 The whole liturgical life of the Church revolves around the Eucharistic sacrifice and the sacraments.<sup>29</sup> There are seven sacraments in the Church: Baptism, Confirmation or Chrismation, Eucharist, Penance, Anointing of the Sick, Holy Orders, and Matrimony.<sup>30</sup>” (52) Moreover, the Roman Catholic church teaches that it is “necessary” to receive the Roman Catholic sacraments given through the Roman Catholic church “for salvation.” **THUS, FROM ROME’S PERSPECTIVE, SALVATION IS MEDIATED IN AND THROUGH THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH. THIS IS KNOWN AS SACERDOTAL**



**SALVATION – SALVATION BY MEANS OF KEEPING THE ROMAN CATHOLIC SACRAMENTS THAT ARE MEDIATED BY ROMAN CATHOLIC PRIESTS.** In *Catechism of the Catholic Church* (1994) we find, “1129 the Church affirms that for believers the sacraments of the New Covenant are *necessary for salvation*.<sup>51</sup>” (53)

We will now focus our attention on one of the seven sacraments of the Roman Catholic church known as the Eucharist which is celebrated in the Mass. Having previously established in chapter one the historical fact that key elements of the Roman Catholic “sacrifice of the Mass” were assimilated from the **PAGAN ROMAN MYSTERIES** of ancient Rome, we will now consider how the sacrifice of the Mass and the practice of the sacrament of the Eucharist developed in *church* history. The “Eucharist” refers to: “1. Holy Communion; Lord’s Supper. 2. The consecrated bread and wine used in this.” (54) In the Roman Catholic church the Eucharist is celebrated as part of the Mass. Historically, “*High Mass* is celebrated with incense and music, the priest being assisted by a deacon and sub-deacon; *Low Mass* is celebrated by one priest, without music and with little ceremony.” (55)

Let’s consider how the sacrifice of the Mass and the sacrament of the Eucharist are defined from Roman Catholic sources. Notice the very clear anti-Protestant/Evangelical bias observed in the definition from this Vatican approved Encyclopedia. The Catholic Encyclopedia reads,

1) “**MASS, SACRIFICE OF THE.** – A. The Dogmatic Doctrine of the Mass. – The word Mass (*missa*) first established itself as the general designation for the Eucharistic sacrifice in the West after the time of pope Gregory the Great (d. 604), the early church having used the expression “the breaking of bread” (*fractio panis*) or “liturgy” (Acts xiii, 2, Atiroupyouvtg); the Greek Church has employed the latter name for almost sixteen centuries. There were current in the early days of Christianity other terms: “The Lord’s Supper” (*cena dominica*),...The simple fact that numerous heretics, such as Wyclif and Luther, repudiated the Mass as “idolatry,” while retaining the Sacrament of the true Body and Blood of Christ, proves that the Sacrament of the Eucharist is something essentially different from the Sacrifice of the Mass. In truth, the Eucharist performs at once two functions: that of a sacrament and that of a sacrifice. Though the ensepapableness of the two is most clearly seen in the fact that the consecrating and sacrificial powers of the priest coincide, and consequently that the sacrament is produced only in and through the Mass, the real difference between them is shown in that the sacrament is intended primarily for the sanctification of the soul, whereas the sacrifice serves primarily to glorify God by adoration, thanksgiving, prayer and expiation [for sins]...Consequently the Mass is the impetratory and propitiatory sacrifice. As for the special reference to the propitiatory character, the record of institution states expressly that the blood of Christ is shed in the chalice [the gold cup] “unto the remission of sins” (Matt., xxvi, 28)... ” (56)

2) Eucharist. (Gr. tuxapicrria, thanksgiving), the name given to the Blessed Sacrament of the Altar under its two fold aspect of sacrament and Sacrifice of the Mass, and in which, whether as sacrament or sacrifice, Jesus Christ is truly present under the appearances of bread and wine.”...(57)

In the book *Roman Catholicism* Professor Loraine Boettner reported, “In the New York Catechism we read, “Jesus Christ gave us the sacrifice of the Mass to leave to His Church a visible sacrifice which continues His sacrifice on the cross until the end of time. *The Mass is the same sacrifice as the sacrifice of the cross* [italics ours]. Holy Communion is the receiving

of the body and blood of Jesus Christ under the appearance of bread and wine.”...

“...The Creed of Pope Pius IV, which is one of the official creeds of the Roman Church, says, “I profess that in the Mass is offered to God a true, proper, and propitiatory sacrifice [that is, a sacrifice which satisfies the justice of God and so offsets the penalty for sin] for the living and the dead; and that in the most holy sacrament of the Eucharist there is truly, really, and substantially, the body and blood, together with the soul and divinity, of our Lord Jesus Christ; and that there is a conversion of the whole substance of the bread into the body, and of the whole substance of the wine into the blood, which the Catholic Church calls Transubstantiation.”...

“...The Council of Trent declared: “The sacrifice [in the Mass] is identical with the sacrifice of the Cross, inasmuch as Jesus Christ is a priest and victim both. The only difference lies in the manner of offering, which is bloody upon the cross and bloodless on our altars.” A Roman Catholic, John A. O’Brien, whose books are widely read, says: “*The Mass with its colorful vestments and vivid ceremonies is a dramatic re-enactment in an unbloody manner of the sacrifice of Christ on Calvary*” (*The Faith of Millions*, p. 382)...

“...A Catechism of Christian Doctrine asks the question: “What is the Holy Mass?” and the answer is given: “The Holy Mass is the sacrifice of the body and blood of Jesus Christ, really present on the altar under the appearance of bread and wine, and offered to God for the living and the dead.” The doctrine of transubstantiation and the power of the priests is clearly stated by Ligouri in the following words: “With regard to the power of the priests over the real body of Christ, it is of faith that when they pronounce the words of consecration, the incarnate God has obliged Himself to obey and come into their hands under the sacramental appearance of bread and wine. We are struck with wonder when we find that in obedience to the words of His priests --- *Hoc est corpus meum* (This is my body) --- God Himself descends on the altar, that He comes whenever they call Him, and as often as they call Him, and places Himself in their hands, even though they should be His enemies. And after having come He remains, entirely at their disposal and they move Him as they please from one place to another. They may, if they wish, shut Him up in the tabernacle, or expose Him on the altar, or carry Him outside the church; they may, if they choose, eat his flesh, and give Him for the food of others. Besides, the power of the priest surpasses that of the Blessed Virgin because she cannot absolve a Catholic from even the smallest sin.” (*The Dignity and Duties of the Priest*).” (58)

We find proclaimed in the *Catechism of the Catholic Church* (1994), “1367 The sacrifice of Christ and the sacrifice of the Eucharist are *one single sacrifice*: “The victim is one and the same: the same now offers through the ministry of priests, who then offered himself on the cross; only the manner of offering is different.” In this divine sacrifice which is celebrated in the Mass, the same Christ who offered himself once in a bloody manner on the altar of the cross is contained and is offered in an unbloody manner.”<sup>188</sup> ... “1371 The Eucharistic sacrifice is also offered for *the faithful departed* who “have died in Christ but are not yet wholly purified, [i.e., Catholics in purgatory] so that they may be able to enter into the light and peace of Christ:...1411 Only validly ordained priests can preside at the Eucharist and consecrate the bread and the wine so that they become the Body and Blood of the Lord.” (59)

**BUT PROFESSOR BOETTNER EXPLAINS HOW THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH HAS HIJACKED AND CHANGED THE BIBLICAL DOCTRINE OF THE LORD’S SUPPER AND TURNED IT INTO A COUNTERFEIT SUBSTITUTE FOR BIBLICAL SALVATION – “THE SACRIFICE OF**

THE MASS.” IN THE MASS CHRIST IS RE-SACRIFICED OVER AND OVER AGAIN. WHEREAS, TRUE SALVATION IS BASED TOTALLY ON PERSONAL FAITH IN THE COMPLETED, ONCE FOR ALL SACRIFICE (SINGULAR) OF JESUS CHRIST ON CALVARY FOR OUR SINS (Hebrews 10:1-19, 1 Peter 3:18, 1 John 1:7-10; 2:1-2). Mr. Boettner wrote, “It is surprising how many Protestants do not understand the significance of the Roman Catholic mass. Some think of it as merely a church ritual and dismiss it as just another form of the Lord’s supper or holy communion. But that is far from being the case. For Protestants and Roman Catholics alike the Lord’s supper or holy communion is a sacrament (However, for many Baptists and Evangelicals it is not a sacrament but, rather, a memorial). For Protestants it is a means of spiritual blessing and a memorial service, recalling to mind the glorious person of Christ and the great service that He rendered for us on Calvary. But for Roman Catholics it is something quite different. For them it is also a *sacrifice*, performed by a priest. And its sacrificial element is by far the most important. In fact the sacrifice of the mass is the central point in their worship, while even the preaching of the gospel is assigned a subordinate role and is not even held to be an essential of the priestly office...”

“...In the Roman church this further distinction should be noted between the two parts of the mass, the mass proper, and holy communion. In the mass the so-called sacrifice is offered only by the priest and only he partakes of both the bread and the wine. In holy communion the people partake of the bread but not of the wine and have no other active part in the service [i.e., similar to receiving the bread only in the *panificia* of the ancient pagan Mass of the *ROMAN MYSTERIES*]...”

“...According to Roman teaching, in the sacrifice of the mass the bread and wine are changed by the power of the priest at the time of consecration into the actual body and blood of Christ. The bread, in the form of thin, round wafers, hundreds of which may be consecrated simultaneously, is contained in a golden dish. THE WINE IS IN A GOLDEN CUP. The supposed body and blood of Christ are then raised before the altar by the hands of the priest and offered up to God for the sins both of the living and the dead. During this part of the ceremony the people are little more than spectators to a religious drama. Practically everything is done by the priest, or by the priest and his helpers. The audience does not sing, nor are there any spontaneous prayers either on the part of the priest or the people. The liturgy is so rigid that it can be carried out mechanically, almost without thought. In the observance of holy communion the priest partakes of a large wafer, then he drinks the wine in behalf of the congregation. The lay members go to the front of the church and kneel before a railing with closed eyes, and open mouths into which the priest places a small wafer. Roman Catholic theology holds that the complete body and blood of Christ are in both the bread and the wine...”

“...But what a miserable form of play-acting is all of that! What a poor substitute for the Gospel do the people depend on for eternal life! In contrast how simple was the scene in the upper room as Christ instituted the Lord’s supper! In I Corinthians 11:23-26, in just four verses, Paul outlines the whole simple service: The Lord Jesus in the night in which He was betrayed took bread; He gave thanks; He broke the bread; and He gave it to them as a memorial of His body which was to be broken for them. Just four simple actions concerning the bread. Then two actions are recorded concerning the wine: He took the cup; and He

**gave it to them as symbolical of His blood which was to be shed for them. All that we are asked to remember is that He died to save sinners and that we are so to commemorate His death until He returns. But this simple event the Church of Rome has magnified into the glaring, elaborate, showy pageantry and drama of the mass!..."**

**"...The celebration of the mass is the chief duty of the Roman priest-hood. Yet the New Testament gives no instruction as to how to offer mass, as in fact there is not so much as one line on the subject in Scripture. Christ sent the apostles to teach and to baptize, not to say mass. His final instructions to the church were: "Go ye therefore, and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them...teaching them..." (Matt. 28:19). Search the Gospels, the book of Acts, and the Epistles, and you find many admonitions to prayer, praise, preaching the Gospel, etc., but not one word about the mass. Paul gave many instructions and exhortations concerning the government and duties of the churches, but he says nothing about the sacrifice of the mass..."**

**"...The Church of Rome holds that the mass is a continuation of the sacrifice that Christ made on Calvary, that it is in reality a re-crucifixion of our Lord over and over again, in an unbloody manner. It also holds that this sacrifice is just as efficacious to take away sin as was the sacrifice on Calvary. Christ supposedly is offered in sacrifice every time the mass is celebrated, that is, daily, in thousands of Roman Catholic churches throughout the world. The mass, therefore, is not a memorial, but A RITUAL in which the bread and wine are transformed into the literal flesh and blood of Christ, which is then offered as a true sacrifice. The only difference is the manner in which the two are made. ROME THUS CLAIMS TO CONTINUE AN ACT WHICH THE SCRIPTURES SAY WAS COMPLETED NEARLY TWO THOUSAND YEARS AGO..."**

**"...We must, of course, take strong exception to such pretended sacrifice. We cannot regard it as anything other than a deception, a mockery, and an abomination before God. The so-called sacrifice in the mass certainly is not identical with that on Calvary, regardless of what the priests may say. There is in the mass no real Christ, no suffering, and no bleeding. And a bloodless sacrifice is ineffectual. The writer of the book of Hebrews says that "apart from shedding of blood there is NO REMISSION" of sin (9:22); and John says, "THE BLOOD OF JESUS [CHRIST] HIS SON CLEANSETH US FROM ALL SIN" (I John 1:7). SINCE ADMITTEDLY THERE IS NO BLOOD IN THE MASS, IT SIMPLY CANNOT BE A SACRIFICE FOR SIN..." (60)**

**Wilson Ewin observed, "Obviously, the "gospel" as taught by Rome, states that man is a sinner and that Christ died for him. However, Christ did not completely redeem the sinner; that is, he did not completely atone for man's sin. In terms familiar to Roman Catholics, Christ did neither fully "expiate" nor "satisfy" for their sins. *This must be done by the person himself, or with the help of others...*"**

**"...The expiation of the Catholic's sins involves a process of works that extend throughout his whole life on earth and even on after death. Any hope that Catholics might trust in Christ's atonement is nullified by what they must personally do to atone for or expiate their own sin. They must, as says the New Saint Joseph Catechism, "*make satisfaction for our sins*" (p. 54). This expiation of their sin can be done through personal penance, saying of the rosary, earthly sufferings, the gaining of indulgences, many forms of prayers including those to the saints, the saying of masses, many forms of good works, alms-giving, works of charity,**

and finally, suffering for an unknown period of time after death in a place called purgatory.” (61)

In the days of the Reformer and former Roman Catholic priest Martin Luther, the Roman Catholic church sold “indulgences” for sinning to Catholics. Luther protested against and wholeheartedly opposed this abhorrent false doctrine of Rome. In the Roman theology of “indulgences” each specific sin has a price and money must be paid to the Roman Catholic church for “forgiveness” of each sin. This doctrine of the Roman Catholic church is beyond sickening. Keep in mind that for centuries Catholics have paid money for “indulgences” [i.e., permits] to this false church in order to supposedly receive forgiveness for such sins as murder, theft, adultery, incest, homosexuality, fornication, extortion, etc. These became nothing more than “licenses” to sin granted by “The [un]Holy Roman Catholic” church. Subsequently, in the minds of many Catholics, forgiveness of sin became “for sale.” Many trusted that the money paid was sufficient payment to merit forgiveness of sins from Rome.

One of the best, concise overviews of the Roman Catholic church currently available was recorded by author Dave Hunt. The study is entitled “Dave Hunt – Roman Catholic church – The Mother of Harlots Mystery..” It is found at:

<http://www.bing.com/videos/search?q=Roman+Catholicism+Dave+Hunt&FORM=VIRE2#a>  
I highly recommend viewing this overview which lasts about 58 minutes. It helps provide a better understanding of Roman Catholicism from a biblical perspective.

Thus, as a result of discovering the facts regarding the origin and historical development of Roman Catholicism, we find that Roman Catholicism is not genuine Christianity. ROMAN CATHOLICISM IS MOST ACCURATELY DEFINED AS A SYNTHESIS OF THE PAGAN ROMAN RELIGIOUS PRIESTHOOD, RITES, CEREMONIES, TEACHINGS, SYMBOLS AND CUSTOMS WITH CHRISTIANITY. The Scriptures clearly identify her as *“MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH”* (Revelation 17:5).

## CHAPTER III: THE ROMAN CATHOLIC THEOLOGICAL BASIS FOR ACTS OF AGGRESSION AGAINST PROTESTANTS, BAPTISTS, EVANGELICALS AND JEWS

*“THESE things have I spoken unto you, that ye should not be offended. They shall put you [the true disciples of Jesus Christ] out of the synagogues [i.e., excommunication of Romanism]: yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service. And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me.” – Jesus (John 16:1-3 KJV)*

Please allow me to begin this chapter with these thoughts. In our day the views of many Catholics have changed. There is a broad spectrum of beliefs, opinions and attitudes found within the contemporary Roman Catholic church. Many Catholics in our day are no longer anti-Protestant or anti-Baptist as were many Roman Catholics in past centuries. There are in our time many Catholics who would have no part in actions of bias or persecution against Bible-believing Christians, even if so directed by Roman Catholic leaders. In fact, many Catholics in the present era are not in agreement with the Roman Catholic church regarding a number of issues. Moreover, let us be careful to remember that twenty-first century Catholics are not responsible for the evil actions of their Catholic ancestors.

Nevertheless, as we investigate centuries of horrific crimes against persons and properties carried out by Roman Catholic individuals and groups with the authorization of the Roman Catholic church, let us first turn our attention to the Roman Catholic doctrinal basis of persecutions and murders of biblical Christians by Roman Catholics. As we consider past atrocities done by Roman Catholics to Protestants, Baptists and Evangelicals, an important question emerges. WHY did Roman Catholics believe that they had the approval of the Roman Catholic church to persecute and execute Protestants, Baptists and Evangelicals?

THE BASIS OF THE PERSECUTIONS AND MASSACRES AGAINST GROUPS OF BIBLE-BELIEVING CHRISTIANS OVER THE CENTURIES BY THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH IS CLEAR: FROM ROME’S PERSPECTIVE, THOSE WHO REFUSE TO UNITE WITH ROME ARE DOOMED. THOSE CHRISTIANS WHO WILL NOT PLACE THEMSELVES UNDER THE USURPED AUTHORITY OF THE POPE AND CONFORM TO THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH ARE LABELED HERETICS AND CONDEMNED TO DIE. THE “INFALLIBLE” POPES HAVE DECLARED THAT YOU HERETICS (PROTESTANTS, BAPTISTS, EVANGELICALS) HAVE NO RIGHT TO WORSHIP GOD DIFFERENTLY; NO RIGHT TO STUDY THE BIBLE FOR YOURSELF; NO RIGHT TO MARRY OUTSIDE THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH (YOUR “PROTESTANT” MARRIAGE IS CONSIDERED INVALID); NO RIGHT TO SERVE IN THE GOVERNMENT, WORK OR LIVE.

SUCH WAS THE TREATMENT OF OUR PROTESTANT/EVANGELICAL/ BAPTIST BROTHERS AND SISTERS IN CHRIST THROUGHOUT CHURCH HISTORY BY THE “HOLY” ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH. LIKE THE ROMAN EMPERORS BEFORE THEM, THE POPES DECREED ALLEGIANCE AND OBEDIENCE. THE ROMAN EMPERORS WERE TYRANTS WHO CONTINUALLY ABUSED THEIR AUTHORITY AND EXPECTED THE ALLEGIANCE, CONFORMITY AND OBEDIENCE OF ALL PEOPLE. SO, LIKEWISE, THROUGHOUT CHURCH

**HISTORY, THE ROMAN POPES HAVE DEMONSTRATED THAT THEY ARE RELIGIOUS TYRANTS WHO CONTINUALLY ABUSE THEIR AUTHORITY AND EXPECT THE ALLEGIANCE, CONFORMITY AND OBEDIENCE OF ALL.**

Catholic Juan Antonio Llorente explained, “**FIRST EPOCH OF THE CHURCH TILL THE CONVERSION OF THE EMPEROR CONSTANTINE.** The Christian religion was scarcely established before heresies arose among its disciples. The Apostle Paul instructs Titus, the Bishop of Crete, in his duty towards heretics, saying, that a man who persists in his heresy, after the first and second admonition, shall be rejected; but St. Paul does not say that the life of the heretic shall be taken: and our Saviour, addressing to Peter, commands that a sinner shall be forgiven, not only seven times, but seventy times seven, which infers that he ought never to be punished with death by a judgment of the church. Such was the doctrine of the church during the three first centuries, until the peace of Constantine. Heretics were never excommunicated until exhortation had been employed in vain...**THESE FAITHFUL IMITATORS OF THEIR DIVINE MASTER [JESUS CHRIST] WERE AVERSE TO OPPRESSIVE MEASURES...**

**...SECOND EPOCH. – From the Fourth to the Eighth Century.** If the primitive system of the church towards heretics had been faithfully pursued, as it ought to have been, after the peace of Constantine, the tribunal of the Inquisition would never have existed...but the popes and bishops of the fourth century, **PROFITING** by the circumstance of the emperors having embraced Christianity, **BEGAN TO IMITATE, IN A CERTAIN DEGREE, THE CONDUCT WHICH THEY HAD REPREHENDED IN THE HEATHEN PRIESTS...**These pontiffs, though respectable for the holiness of their lives, sometimes carried their zeal for the triumph of the Catholic faith, and the extirpation of heresy, to too great a height; and to ensure success, **ENGAGED CONSTANTINE AND HIS SUCCESSORS TO ESTABLISH CIVIL LAWS AGAINST ALL HERETICS...**

**...THIS FIRST STEP WHICH THE POPES AND BISHOPS HAD TAKEN CONTRARY TO THE DOCTRINE OF ST. PAUL, WAS THE PRINCIPLE AND ORIGIN OF THE INQUISITION;** for when the custom of punishing a heretic by corporeal pain, although he was a good subject, was once established, it became necessary to vary the punishments, to augment their number, to render them more or less severe, according to the character of each sovereign, and to regulate the manner of prosecuting the culprit...**THE EMPEROR THEODOSIUS PUBLISHED, IN 382, AN EDICT AGAINST THE MANICHEANS, DECREERING THAT THEY SHOULD BE PUNISHED WITH DEATH, AND THEIR PROPERTY CONFISCATED FOR THE USE OF THE STATE, AND COMMISSIONING THE PREFECT (PREFET DU PRETOIRE) TO APPOINT INQUISITORS AND SPIES TO DISCOVER THOSE WHO SHOULD CONCEAL THEMSELVES. [SOUND FAMILIAR?]**

**...It is here that inquisition and accusation are first mentioned in relation to heresy, for until that time only those great crimes which attacked the safety of the empire were permitted to be publicly denounced. The successors of Theodosius modified these edicts, some of which menaced heretics with the prosecutions of the impartial judges, if they did not voluntarily abjure their errors...” (62)**

In his well researched book entitled *Roman Catholicism*, Loraine Boettner reported, “Pope Boniface VIII, in 1302, issued the *Unam Sanctam*, a document in which he claimed to be the representative of God on earth, and concurrently claimed authority over every nation and

government on earth. This decree, which sets forth THE DOCTRINE OF “THE TWO SWORDS,” reads as follows:

“In her (the Church) and within her power there are two swords, we are taught in the Gospels, namely, the spiritual sword and the temporal sword...the latter to be used for the Church, the former by the Church; the former by the hand of the priest, the latter by the hand of the princes and kings, but at the nod and sufferance of the priest. The one sword must of necessity be subject to the other, the temporal authority to the spiritual...For the truth being the witness, the spiritual power has the function of establishing the temporal power and sitting in judgment on it if it would prove not good...but if the supreme power (the papacy) deviate, it cannot be judged by man but only by God alone...”

“...THIS POWER OF CONTROL OVER THE TWO SWORDS IS ASSUMED TO BE INHERENT IN THE PAPAL OFFICE AND SUPERIOR TO ALL OTHER SUCH POWERS. MEN ARE TO BE COMPELLED TO SUBMIT TO THE ROMAN PONTIFF BY THE SWORD OF THE STATE, AS WIELDED BY KINGS AND SOLDIERS, BUT AT THE DIRECTION OF THE PRIESTHOOD. THIS, IS, IN FACT, THE TRADITIONAL POSITION OF THE ROMAN CHURCH, THAT THE ACTUAL PERSECUTION OR EXECUTION OF THOSE JUDGED BY THE CHURCH TO BE HERETICAL SHOULD BE DONE, NOT BY THE CHURCH, BUT BY THE STATE AT THE DIRECTION OF THE CHURCH. BY SUCH SUBTERFUGE THE [ROMAN] CHURCH SEEKS TO ESCAPE RESPONSIBILITY FOR HER CRIMES...”

“...The doctrine of “the two swords” was the basis for the persecution and massacre of thousands of the Waldensians in Italy and France, one of the worst massacres having taken place in France, in 1545, when twenty-one of their towns were burned and the inhabitants plundered, tortured, and murdered in circumstances of the utmost cruelty. Two years later the dying monarch, Francis I, remembering his bitter remorse his ultimatum to the Waldensians that they embrace Roman Catholicism or be destroyed, pleaded with his son that the men who persuaded him to that course and led the massacre be given their just deserts...” (63)

In addition, Boettner explained, “...The Inquisition was created by the Roman Catholic Church to search out, examine, and punish heretics...Spanish king, Ferdinand III of Castile (died, 1252), had so pleased the Roman Church by his vigorous actions against dissenters that he was made a saint (by Rome) in 1671 and the church inserted in the Breviary (book of daily readings and prayers for the priests) these words in praise to him: “He permitted no heretics to dwell in his kingdom, and with his own hands brought wood to the stake for their burning” (*The Stability and Progress of Dogma*, by cardinal Lepicier, p. 202, 1910)...

...The Inquisition also carried on its work with great effectiveness in Italy, where thousands of Protestants were put to death simply because they would not give up their faith and become Roman Catholics. Today Spain, Italy, Portugal, and to some extent France, Quebec, and Latin America, remain the devout children of the Inquisition...” (64)

Boettner noted, “...Even today every Roman Catholic bishop at the time of his consecration takes an oath of allegiance to the pope which contains these words: “With all my power I will persecute and make war upon all heretics, schismatics and those who rebel against our lord (the pope) and all his successors...So help me God and these the holy gospels of God.” (*Pontificale Romanum Summorum Pontificum*. Belgium. Mechlin, p. 133. Cited by Emmett McLoughlin, in *American Culture and Catholic Schools*, p. 125)...” (65)

He concluded, “...We need not ask ourselves what the Roman Catholic Church would do in



the United States if it came into power. All we need do is to look at what it has done where it has been in power...But the doctrines concerning the temporal domain of the pope, and the right of the Roman Church to use physical force to attain spiritual ends, have never been renounced by any pope or (Roman) church council..." (66)

Moreover, the pope's claim to supreme authority over both temporal power (human government) and spiritual power (over all in the Church) is similar to the claim of the ancient Roman emperors and ceasars who were regarded as BOTH PRIESTS AND KINGS. In addition, the ancient, pagan Romans believed in the pagan doctrine of the deification of man. The Roman emperors and ceasars were regarded as deities to be worshipped and venerated. Correctly understanding the New Testament teachings of Jesus and His 1<sup>st</sup> century apostles, that THEY HAD ONLY ONE TRUE LORD, EARLY CHRISTIANS REFUSED TO PRACTICE EMPEROR/RULER WORSHIP. THE RESULT WAS SEVERE PERSECUTION BY THE ROMANS.

In the *New International Greek Testament Commentary – THE EPISTLES TO THE THESSALONIANS* Charles Wanamaker pointed out, "...As I have argued in the commentary, following the lead of several other scholars, the initial oppression of the Christians at Thessalonica very probably resulted from the challenge that their new faith posed to Roman imperial ideology: in principle, either the imperial claims of Rome and its emperors or the claims of Christians regarding their Lord, Jesus Christ, who was to come from heaven to assert his sovereignty, had to be honored. THE CHRISTIANS AT THESSALONICA CHOSE JESUS AS THEIR LORD, NOT CAESAR [i.e., the pope/king – *Pontifex Maximus*], and so paid the price for rejecting the ideology of the dominant culture [emperor or ruler worship]..." (67) Thus, the claims of the ancient, pagan Roman emperors as deified priests/kings and the present claims of papal supremacy are remarkably similar. Are the current claims of papal supremacy rooted in the Roman imperial ideology (i.e. "Holy Roman Empire")?

Is it plausible that the occult Babylon of the last days described in Revelation chapters seventeen and eighteen is Rome? How can we know for certain that the woman riding the beast, "*the great whore*" (Revelation 17:1; 19:2) referred to in Revelation chapters 17-19 is identified with the Roman Catholic religion? There are a number of solid evidences that direct us to this conclusion. Let's consider data from the book of Revelation that will help us to identify her:

- 1) It is said that she "*sitteth upon many waters*" (Revelation 17:1). These words are interpreted for us in Revelation 17:15. It refers to multitudes of people found throughout the nations (Revelation 17:15). Thus, it is a world-wide organization consisting of multitudes of members that are found throughout the nations. The Roman "Catholic" church fits this description. The word catholic means "universal." She has hundreds of millions of members found throughout the nations.
- 2) She is referred to as "*the woman*" who is carried by "*the beast*" in John's vision (Revelation 17:7). This indicates that this organization will influence, aid and guide (piggy-back) the rise of the global leader identified in the Scriptures as the *antichrist* (the first beast – Revelation 13:1-10). She works in union and mission with government and religion.
- 3) She is found clothed with the colors of "*scarlet*" and "*purple*" (Revelation 17:4). For centuries, these have been the very colors of the garments of Roman Catholic popes,

cardinals, bishops, etc.

- 4) She is ***“decked with gold and precious stones and pearls.*** Amazingly, large quantities of these items are included in the vast wealth of the Vatican. Rome’s wealth was greatly increased by means of the money, jewelry and properties stolen from Protestants and Jews in Roman Catholic Inquisitions, massacres and unholy wars. In addition, much wealth has continually been added to the “mother” church each year through the offerings of millions of Roman Catholics (Revelation 17:4). Thus, over the years, the Roman Catholic church has become a very wealthy business.
- 5) She is seen holding ***“a golden cup”*** in her hand (Revelation 17:4). This is a graphic description of the golden chalice being raised during the Mass.
- 6) She aids the beast in obtaining a ***“seat”*** (translated from the Greek word *Opovov*) having ***“great authority”*** (Revelation 13:2; 16:10). Concerning the word ***“seat”*** Vine’s noted, ***“1. THRONOS (Opovoc), a throne, a seat of authority...”*** (68) This could easily be referring to ***“the chair of Peter”*** at the Vatican from which the pope speaks *ex cathedra*.
- 7) She is identified with ***“that great city Babylon”*** (Revelation 18:10). Rome is often called ***“Babylon”*** in ancient historical writings.
- 8) She is the organization ***“With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication.”*** (Revelation 17:2). This description matches the Roman Catholic church which commits spiritual fornication through her continual re-sacrifice of Christ in the Mass; worship of ***“the host”*** (sun god) in the Mass; worship of and prayers to Mary; images; relics; indulgences; prayers and Masses for the dead supposedly in purgatory = salvation for sale, etc.
- 9) At her future time of judgment it is revealed that merchants ***“were made rich by her”*** (Revelation 18:15). This may be referring to the financial profit obtained via Vatican wealth and influence.
- 10) She is ***“drunken with the blood of the saints and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus...”*** (Revelation 17:6). This refers to the outcome of centuries of Roman Catholic led Inquisitions, massacres, assassinations and wars directed against Protestants, Baptists and Evangelicals.
- 11) She is called ***“MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND THE ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.”*** (Revelation 17:5). This is consistent with the fact that the Roman Catholic priesthood, rites, symbols, customs and teachings are found to be a continuation of the essential elements of the ancient religion of Babylon.
- 12) She is identified as ***“that great city”*** which ***“reigneth over the kings of the earth.”*** (Revelation 17:18) Another translation of Rev. 17:18 reads, ***“...having a kingdom over the kings of the earth.”*** THERE IS ONLY ONE CITY AND ORGANIZATION IN THE WORLD TODAY THAT HAS CLAIMED AUTHORITY OVER KINGS IN THE PAST AND CONTINUES TO CLAIM PRESENT GLOBAL DOMINION. IT IS VATICAN CITY IN ROME.

It is worth noting that Malachi Martin referred to an old claim found in the Russian Orthodox Church tradition centered in the Patriarchate of Moscow. This group has influence over about 100 million members. Failing to mention the fact of past atrocities done against the Orthodox people by Roman Catholics as the primary basis of their strong distrust of the Vatican, Martin reported, ***“Indeed, today, at least one***

**solid faction in the Patriarchal Church is virulently antipapal. Throughout the remaining branches of Eastern Orthodoxy there persists a deeply buried antipapal and anti-Roman prejudice; it is felt that any aggrandizement of the papacy can come only at the cost of Orthodox dignity and privilege. For Greek Orthodoxy, centered historically in Constantinople, always claimed that this city (now Istanbul of the Turks) was the Second Rome replacing the First Rome (of the Popes); and in Russian Orthodoxy, in its long-distant high days of preeminence, claimed that Moscow was the Third (and Final) Rome, replacing that Second Rome and that First Rome.” (69)**

**This claim may play a significant part in the future fulfillment of the prophecy concerning an attack against Israel from the north by an alliance of nations which will include Russia (the descendants of Meshech and Tubal) at the future battle of Armageddon (Ezekiel 38-39, Joel 3:2, Revelation 19).**

## CHAPTER IV: THOMISM: A THEOLOGY OF DEATH FOR THOSE LABELED “HERETICS” OR “ENEMIES” BY ROME

*“In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother...Not as Cain, who was of that wicked one, and slew [murdered] his brother. And wherefore slew he him? Because his own works were evil, and his brother’s righteous. Marvel not, my brethren, if the world hate you. We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren. He that loveth not his brother abideth in [spiritual] death. Whosoever hateth his brother is a murderer: and ye know that no murderer hath eternal life abiding in him.” – the apostle John (1 John 3:10-15 KJV)*

Next, we will consider the TEACHINGS OF THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH KNOWN AS “THOMISM” WHICH HAVE FOR CENTURIES INCITED PERSECUTIONS AND MURDERS DIRECTED TOWARD THOSE WHO CHOOSE NOT TO BELIEVE HER FALSE DOCTRINES. The following excerpts are from: ST. THOMAS AQUINAS SUMMA THEOLOGICA COMPLETE ENGLISH EDITION IN FIVE VOLUMES, VOLUME THREE IIa IIae 1-148, Translated by Fathers of the English Dominican Province, (New York, NY, Benziger Bros.), 1948, pp. 1218-1224

\*It must be noted that Thomas Aquinas, a thirteenth century Roman Catholic Dominican priest, is considered by the Roman Catholic church to be its greatest theologian and philosopher. In Roman Catholicism his writings are very influential. For centuries, he has been praised by the popes, and is regarded as the master and patron of Catholic schools. In Roman Catholicism, Thomas Aquinas is regarded as the model teacher for those studying for the priesthood. Let us examine closely what Roman Catholic priests and lay people have been taught for centuries:

**“QUESTION 11 Of Heresy (In Four Articles)...(3) Whether heretics should be tolerated?...THIRD ARTICLE Whether Heretics Ought to Be Tolerated?...On the contrary,** The Apostle says (Tit. lii, 10, 11): *A man that is a heretic, after the first and second admonition, avoid: knowing that he, that is such an one, is subverted.* **I answer that,** With regard to heretics two points must be observed: one, on their own side, the other, on the side of the Church. On their own side there is the sin, whereby they deserve not only to be separated from the Church by excommunication, but also to be severed from the world by death. For it is a much graver matter to corrupt the faith which quickens the soul, than to forge money, which supports temporal life. Wherefore if forgers of money and other evil-doers are forthwith condemned to death by the secular authority, much more reason is there for heretics, as soon as they are convicted of heresy, to be not only excommunicated but even be put to death.

On the part of the Church, however, there is mercy which looks to the conversion of the wanderer, wherefore she condemns not at once, but *after the first and second admonition*, as

the Apostle directs: after that, if he is yet stubborn, the Church no longer hoping for his conversion, looks to the salvation of others, by excommunicating him and separating him from the Church, and furthermore delivers him to the secular tribunal to be exterminated thereby from the world by death. For Jerome commenting on Gal. v. 9, *A little leaven, says: Cut off the decayed flesh, expel the mangy sheep from the fold, lest the whole house, the whole paste, the whole body, the whole flock, burn, perish, rot, die. Arius was but one spark in Alexandria, but as that spark was not at once put out, the whole earth was laid waste by its flame.*

**Reply Obj. 1.** This very modesty demands that the heretic should be admonished a first and second time: **and if he be unwilling to retract, he must be reckoned as already sub-verted**, as we may gather from the words of the Apostle quoted above.

**Reply Obj. 2.** The profit that ensues from heresy is beside the intention of heretics, for it consists in the constancy of the faithful being put to the test, and *makes us shake off our sluggishness, and search the Scriptures more carefully*, as Augustine states (*De Gen. Cont. Manich. i. 1*). What they really intend is the corruption of the faith, which is to inflict very great harm indeed. Consequently we should consider what they directly intend, **and expel them**, rather than what is beside their intention, and so, tolerate them.

**Reply Obj. 3.** According to *Decret. xxiv. (qu. iii, can. Notandum)*, *to be excommunicated is not to be uprooted*. A man is excommunicated, as the Apostle says (I Cor. V. 5) that his *spirit may be saved in the day of Our Lord*. **Yet if heretics be altogether uprooted by death, this is not contrary to Our Lord's command**, which is to be understood as referring to the case when the cockle cannot be plucked up without plucking up the wheat, as we explained above (Q. 10, A. 8, *ad 1*), when treating of unbelievers in general.

**FOURTH ARTICLE Whether the Church Should Receive Those Who Return from Heresy?...**The other good is that which charity considers secondarily, viz. temporal good, such as life of the body, worldly possessions, good repute, ecclesiastical or secular dignity, for we are not bound by charity to wish others this good, except in relation to the eternal salvation of them and of others. Hence if the presence of one of these goods in one individual might be an obstacle to eternal salvation in many, we are not bound out of charity to wish such a good to that person, rather should we desire him to be without it, both because eternal salvation takes precedence of temporal good, and because the good of the many is to be preferred to the good of the one. Now if the heretics were always received on their return, in order to save their lives and other temporal goods, this might be prejudicial to the salvation of others if they relapsed again, and because, if they escaped without punishment, others would feel more assured in lapsing into heresy. For it is written, (Eccles. Viii. 11): *For because sentence is not speedily pronounced against the evil, the children of men commit evils without any fear.*

For this reason the Church not only **admits to Penance those who return from heresy for the first time**, but also safeguards their lives, and sometimes by dispensation, restores them to the ecclesiastical dignities which they may have had before, should their conversion appear to be sincere: we read of this as having frequently been done for the good of peace. **But when they fall again, after having been received, this seems to prove them to be inconstant in faith, wherefore when they return again, they are admitted to Penance, but are not delivered from the pain of death.**

**Reply Obj. 1.** In God's tribunal, those who return are always received, because God is a searcher of hearts, and knows those who re-turn in sincerity. **But the Church cannot imitate God in this, for she presumes that those who relapse after being once received, are not sincere in their return; hence she does not debar them from the way of salvation, but neither does she protect them from the sentence of death...**

**QUESTION 12 Of Apostasy (In Two Articles)...SECOND ARTICLE Whether a Prince Forfeits His Dominion over His Subjects, on Account of Apostasy from the Faith, So That They No Longer Owe Him Allegiance?...On the contrary, Gregory VII says (Concil. Roman, v) : *Holding to the institutions of our holy predecessors, we, by our apostolic authority, absolve from their oath those who through loyalty or through the sacred bond of an oath owe allegiance to excommunicated persons: and we absolutely forbid them to continue their allegiance to such persons, until these shall have made amends.* Now apostates from the faith, like heretics, are excommunicated, according to the Decretal.\* Therefore princes should not be obeyed when they have apostatized from the faith. *I answer that,* As stated above (Q. 10, A. 10), unbelief, in itself, is not inconsistent with dominion, since dominion is a device of the law of nations which is a human law: whereas the distinction between believers and unbelievers is of Divine right, which does not annul human right. Nevertheless a man who sins by unbelief may be sentenced to the loss of his right of dominion, as also, sometimes, on the account of other sins.**

Now it is not within the competency of the Church to punish unbelief in those who have never received the faith, according to the saying of the Apostle (I Cor. v. 12): *What have I to do to judge them that are without?* She can, however, pass sentence of punishment on the unbelief of those who have received the faith: and it is fitting that they should be punished by being deprived of the allegiance of their subjects: for this same allegiance might conduce to great corruption of the faith, since, as was stated above (A. 1, Obj. 2), *a man that is an apostate...with a wicked heart deviseth evil, and ...soweth discord,* in order to sever others from the faith.

Consequently, as soon as sentence of excommunication is passed on a man on account of apostasy from the faith, his subjects are *ipso facto* absolved from his authority and the oath of allegiance whereby they were bound to him..." (70)

**[How perverse are these teachings of Thomas Aquinas! They are the exact opposite of the teachings of Christ Jesus and His true apostles. And what about obedience to these verses of Scriptures that clearly reveal God's will regarding how to treat people labeled as heretics by the Roman Catholic religion? What does God's Word teach? In Romans 13:8-10 how are *Christians* instructed to treat others by the apostle Paul? "*Owe no man any thing, but to love one another: for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law. For this, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Thou shalt not covet; and if there be any other commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. Love worketh no ill to his***

***neighbour: therefore love is the fulfilling of the law.”]***

The previous excerpts in English will now be presented in Latin from: S. THOMAE AQUINATIS SUMMA THEOLOGICA, TOMUS QUARTUS SECUNDA SECUNDAE: I-XCI, DILIGENTER EMENDATA NICOLAI, SYLVII, BILLUART, ET C.-J. DRIOUX, NOTIS ORNATA, IN LIBRARIIS CONSOCIATIONIS SANCTI PAULI, PARISIIS, 6, VIA DICTA CASSETTE, BARRIDUCIS, VIA DICTA DE LA BANQUE, 36, FRIBURGI HELV., VIA DICTA GRAND'RUE, 13, TRAJECTI AD MOSAM, 1885), pp. INDEX II, 88-94

DE VITIIS OPPOSITIS FIDEI QUANTUM AD HAERESIM. – Quaestio 11...- haeretici sint tolerandi...ARTICULUS III. – UTRUM HAERETICI SINT TOLERANDI. De his etiam Sent. IV, dist. 13, quaest. II, art. 1 corp. et quodl. X, art. 15...Sed *contra* est quod Apostolus dicit (Tit. III, 10): *Haeticum hominem post primam et secundam correptionem evita, sciens quia subversus est qui hujusmodi est.*

CONCLUSIO. – Quanquam haeretici tolerandi non sunt ipso illorum demerito, usque tamen ad secundam correptionem expectandi sunt, ut ad sanam redeant Ecclesiae fidem; qui vero post secundam correptionem in suo errore obstinati permanent, non modo excommunicationis sententia, sed etiam saecularibus principibus exterminandi, tradendi sunt.

Respondeo dicendum quod circa haeticos duo sunt considerata : unum quidem ex parte ipsorum, aliud vero ex parte Ecclesiae. Ex parte quidem ipsorum est peccatum, per quod meruerunt non solum ab Ecclesia per excommunicationem separari, sed etiam per mortem a mundo excludi. Multo enim gravius est corrumpere fidem, per quam est animae vita, quam falsare pecuniam, per quam temporali vitae subvenitur. Unde si falsarii pecuniae vel alii malefactores statim per saeculares principes juste morti traduntur, multo magis haeretici statim ex quo de haeresi convincuntur, possunt non solum excommunicari, sed et juste occidi. – Ex parte autem Ecclesiae est misericordia ad errantium conversionem ; et ideo non statim condemnat, sed *post primam et secundam correptionem*, ut Apostolus docet ; postmodum vero si adhuc pertinax inveniatur, Ecclesia de ejus conversione non sperans, aliorum saluti providet, eum ab Ecclesia separando per excommunicationis sententiam ; et ulterius relinquit eum iudicio saeculari a mundo exterminandum per mortem. Dicit enim Hieronymus (sup. Illud Galat. V, *Modicum fermentum*, et habetur 24, quaest. III, cap. 16) : “Resecandae sunt putridae carnes, et scabiosa ovis a caulis repellenda, ne tota domus, massa, corpus, et pecora ardeant, corrumpantur, putrescant, intereant. Arius in Alexandria una scintilla fuit ; sed quoniam non statim oppressus est, totum orbem ejus flamma populata est.”

Ad *primum* ergo dicendum, quod ad modestiam illam pertinet ut primo et secundo corripatur; quod si redire noluerit, jam pro subverso habetur; ut patet in auctoritate Apostoli inducta (in arg. *Sed cont.*).

Ad *secundum* dicendum, quod utilitas quae ex haeresibus provenit, est praeter intentionem haeticorum, dum scilicet constantia fidelium comprobatur, ut Apostolus dicit ; et “ut excutiamus pigritiam, divinas Scripturas sollicitius intuentes,” sicut Augustinus dicit (De Gen. cont. Manich. Lib. I, cap. 1, circa med.). Sed ex intentione eorum est corrumpere fidem, quod est maximi nocimenti. Et ideo magis respiciendum est ad id quod est per se de eorum intentione ut excludantur, quam ad hoc quod est praeter eorum intentionem ut sustineantur.

Ad *tertium* dicendum, quod sicut habetur (Decr. 24, quaest. III, cap. *Netandum*), “aliud est excommunicatio, et aliud eradicatio.” Excommunicatur enim ad hoc aliquis, ut ait Apostolus (I

Cor. v, 5), *ut spiritus ejus salvus fiat in die Domini*. Si tamen totaliter eradicentur per mortem haeretici, non est etiam contra mandatum Domini; quod est in eo casu intelligendum, quando non possunt extirpari zizania sine extirpatione tritici, ut supra dictum est (quaest. praec. art. 8, arg. 1), cum de infidelibus in communi ageretur...

QUAESTIO XII. DE APOSTASIA, IN DUOS ARTICULOS DIVISA...2. Utrum propter apostasiam a fide subditi absolvantur a dominio praesidentium apostatarum...ARTICULUS II. – UTRUM PRINCEPS PROPTER APOSTASIAM A FIDE AMITTAT DOMINIUM IN SUBDITOS, ITA QUOD EI OBEDIRE NON TENEANTUR...Sed *contra* est quod Gregorius VII dicit (ut habetur caus. 4, 15, quaest. VI): “Nos sanctorum praedecessorum statuta tenentes, eos qui excommunicatis fidelitate aut juramenti sacramento sunt constricti, apostolica auctoritate a sacramento absolvimus; et ne eis fidelitatem observent, omnibus modis prohibemus, quousque ad satisfactionem veniant.” Sed apostatae a fide sunt excommunicati, sicut et haeretici, ut dicit Decretalis (extra, De haereticis, cap. *Ad abolendam*). Ergo principibus apostatantibus a fide non est obediendum.

CONCLUSIO. - Quum quis per sententiam denuntiatur propter apostasiam excommunicatus, ipso facto, ejus subditi a dominio et juramento fideiatis ejus liberati sunt. Respondeo dicendum quod, sicut supra dictum est (quaest. X, art. 10), infidelitas secundum seipsam non repugnat dominio : eo quod dominium introductum est de jure gentium, quod est jus humanum; distinctio autem fidelium et infidelium est secundum jus divinum, per quod non tollitur jus humanum. Sed aliquis per infidelitatem peccans potest sententialiter jus dominii amittere, sicut etiam quandoque propter alias culpas. Ad Ecclesiam autem non pertinet punire infidelitatem in illis qui nunquam fidem susceperunt, secundum illud Apostoli (I. Corinth. V, 12) : *Quid mihi de his qui foris sunt judicare?* Sed infidelitatem illorum qui fidem susceperunt, potest sententialiter punire; et convenienter in hoc puniatur quod subditis fidelibus dominari non possint; hoc enim vergere posset in magnam fidei corruptionem ; quia, ut dictum est (art. praec. Arg. 2), “homo apostata pravo corde machinatur malum, et jurgia seminat,” intendens homines separare a fide. Et ideo quam cito aliquis per sententiam denuntiatur excommunicatus propter apostasiam a fide, ipso facto ejus subditi sunt absoluti a dominio ejus et juramento fidelitatis, quo ei tenebantur...” (71)



## CHAPTER V: THE ROMAN CATHOLIC VATICAN: GUILTY OF CRIMES AGAINST HUMANITY? DID THEY REALLY INCITE AND DECREE INQUISITIONS, MASSACRES, WARS AND HOLOCAUSTS?

*“Jesus saith unto them, If ye were Abraham’s children, ye would do the works of Abraham. But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth, which I have heard of God: this did not Abraham. Ye do the deeds of your father... Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it...He that is of God heareth God’s words [i.e., the Scriptures of truth – John 10:35]: ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God.”*

– Jesus (John 8:39-41, 44, 47 KJV)

One of the most tragic aspects of the persecutions and executions incited by the Roman Catholic church against millions of her victims is THE COLLABORATION OF PRIESTS, BISHOPS, CARDINALS AND POPES OF THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH IN PERSECUTIONS AND MURDERS DIRECTED TOWARD THOSE WHO CHOOSE NOT TO BELIEVE HER FALSE DOCTRINES.

For over sixteen centuries Rome’s influence and actions have often been very lethal toward those who will not convert or submit to her false claim of authority over all religious and political governance. Those who will not convert or submit to Rome she labels “heretics” “Protestants” or “enemies” of the pope thereby making them targets for persecution and even death by Roman Catholics. The writings of her theologians, canons and edicts of her popes (example-Council of Trent) have resulted in untold sufferings and deaths among Orthodox, Protestants, Baptists, Jews and other people groups. Rome often uses her influence over her cardinals; bishops; priests; Roman Catholics in the media; Jesuits (the CIA of the Vatican); Roman Catholic civil authorities; leaders in “national/international security” forces; military authorities; professors; teachers; lawyers; health care providers; etc. to carry out her agenda.

The Roman Catholic church has often been responsible for assassinations, massacres, wars, “holy”(in reality-unholy, sinful and murderous acts) inquisitions and persecutions. And as evidenced by her financial support of the Bolshevik Revolution in Russia and her willingness to work with Muslims who were eager to kill Jews in Croatia during World War II, Rome is capable of working with any group that will help her accomplish her agenda. The Vatican is literally, “*drunken with the blood*” of millions of Bible-believing *Christians* and Jews over the

centuries (Rev. 17:6). **GOD'S MESSAGE TO ROME IS CLEAR – REPENT! (Acts 17:30-31)**

The historical evidence clearly demonstrates that the primary aims of the Roman Catholics who ordered the inquisitions, holocausts and wars against Protestants, Orthodox, Anabaptists, Baptists, Evangelicals and Jews from the fifteenth century to the twentieth century were fivefold: 1) Seizure of properties/assets 2) Eradication of teachings viewed by the Roman Catholic church to be “heresy” (Protestantism) 3) Extermination of those who believed in Protestant, Ana-Baptist, Baptist, or Evangelical teachings (regarded as “heretics” and “Protestants” by Rome) 4) Both extirpation and extermination of Jews 5) Extermination of those Jews who had converted to Christianity (*Conversos*) but would not submit to Rome's teachings.

In *HISTORY OF THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH* Professor Philip Schaff wrote concerning the Inquisition, “The Inquisition in Spain is one of the bywords of history. The horrors it perpetrated have cast a dark shadow over the pages of Spanish annals. Organized to rid the Spanish kingdoms of the infection of heresy, it extended its methods to the Spanish dependencies in Europe, Sicily and Holland and to the Spanish colonies of the new world. After the marriage of Philip II, with Mary Tudor it secured a temporary recognition in England. In its bloody sacrifices, Jews, Moors, Protestants and the practitioners of the dark arts were included. No country in the world was more concerned to maintain the [Roman] Catholic faith pure than was Spain from the 15<sup>th</sup> to the 18<sup>th</sup> century, AND TO NO CHURCH ORGANIZATION WAS A MORE UNRESTRICTED AUTHORITY GIVEN THAN TO THE SPANISH INQUISITION. Agreeing with the the papal Inquisition established by [pope] Innocent III, in its ultimate aim, the eradication of heresy, it differed from the earlier institution by being under the direction of a tribunal appointed by the Spanish sovereign, immediately amenable to him and acting independently of the bishops. The papal Inquisition was controlled by the Apostolic see, which appointed agents to carry its rules into effect and whose agency was to a certain extent subject to the assent of the bishops...

...Engaged in the wars for the dispossession of the Pagan Moors, the Spanish kingdoms had shown little disposition to yield to the intrusion of Catharan and other heresy from the North. The (perceived) menace to its orthodox repose came from the Jews, Jews who held firmly to their ancestral faith and Jews who had of their own impulse or through compulsion adopted the Christian rites...To rid the land of the Jews who persisted in their ancestral belief was not within the jurisdiction of the Church. That belonged to the state, and, according to the canon law, the Jew was not to be molested in the practice of his religion. But the moment Jews or Moors submitted to baptism they became amenable to ECCLESIASTICAL DISCIPLINE. Converted Jews in Spain were called *conversos*, or *maranos* – the newly converted – and it was with them, in its first period, that the Spanish Inquisition had chiefly to do. After Luther's doctrines began to spread it addressed itself to the extirpation of Protestants,...

...From an early time Spanish legislation was directed to the humiliation of the Jews and their segregation from the Christian population...The sacking and wholesale massacre of their communities, which lived apart in quarters of their own called *Juderias*, were matters of frequent occurrence, and their synagogues were often destroyed or turned into churches. It is estimated in 1391, 50,000 Jews were murdered in Castile, and the mania spread to

Aragon.<sup>1</sup>...All employment in Christian households, the practice of medicine and the occupation of agriculture was denied them. Scarcely any trade was left to their hand except the loaning of money, and that by canon law was illegal for Christians...

...The joint reign of Ferdinand, 1452-1516, and Isabella, 1451-1504, marked an epoch in the history of the Jews in Spain, both those who remained true to their ancestral faith and the large class which professed conversion to the Christian Church.<sup>2</sup> In conferring the title "Catholic" upon Ferdinand and Isabella, 1495, [POPE] ALEXANDER VI, gave as one of the reasons the expulsion of the Jews from Spain, 1492. The institution of the Spanish Inquisition, which began its work twelve years before, was directed primarily against the *conversos*...

...With the council of Tortosa, 1429, complaints began to be made that the *conversos* neglected to have their children baptized, and by attending the synagogues and observing the Jewish feasts were putting contempt upon their Christian faith...In 1451 Juan II. Applied to the papal court to appoint a commission to investigate the situation. At the same time the popular feeling was intensified by the frantic appeals of clerics such as Friar Alfonso de Espina who in his *Fortalicium fidei* – the Fortification of the Faith – brought together a number of alleged cases of children murdered by Jews and argued for the Church's right to baptize Jewish children in the absence of the parents' consent.<sup>1</sup> The story ran that before Isabella's accession her confessor Torquemada, that hammer of heretics, secured from her a vow to leave no measure untried for the extirpation of heresy from her realm. Sometime later, listening to this same ecclesiastic's appeal, Ferdinand and his consort applied to the papal see for the establishment of the Inquisition in Castile...

...[Pope] Sixtus IV., who was then occupying the chair of St. Peter, did not hesitate in a matter so important, and on Nov. 1, 1478, issued the bull sanctioning the fell Spanish tribunal. It authorized the Spanish sovereigns to appoint three bishops or other ecclesiastics to proceed against heretics and at the same time empowered them to remove and replace these officials as they thought fit...

...The interest of [Pope] Sixtus IV. continued to follow the tribunal he had authorized and, in a letter addressed to Isabella, Feb. 13, 1483, HE ASSURED THE QUEEN THAT ITS WORK LAY CLOSE TO HIS HEART. The same year, to render the tribunal more efficient, it was raised by Ferdinand to the dignity of the fifth council of the state with the title, *Consejo de la Suprema y General Inquisicion* (Council of the Supreme and General Inquisition). Usually called the *suprema*, this body was to have charge of the Holy Office throughout the realm. The same end was promoted by the creation of the office of inquisitor-general, 1483, to which the power was consigned of removing and appointing inquisitorial functionaries. The first incumbent was Thomas de Torquemada, at that time prior of Santa Cruz in Segovia. This fanatical ecclesiastic, whose name is a synonym of uncompromising religious intolerance and heartless cruelty, had already been appointed, in 1482, an inquisitor by the pope. He brought to his duties a rare energy and formulated the rules characteristic of the Spanish Inquisition. WITH TORQUEMADA AT ITS HEAD, THE HOLY OFFICE BECAME, NEXT TO ROYALTY ITSELF, THE STRONGEST POWER IN SPAIN. ITS DECISIONS FELL LIKE THE BLOW OF A GREAT IRON HAMMER, AND THERE WAS NO POWER BENEATH THE SOVEREIGN THAT DARED TO OFFER THEM RESISTANCE...

...Next to the judicial murders perpetrated by the Inquisition, its chief evil was the confiscation of estates. The property of the *conversos* offered a tempting prize to the cupidity of the inquisitors and to the crown. THE TRIBUNAL WAS EXPECTED TO LIVE FROM THE SPOILS OF THE HERETICS. Torquemada's *Instructions* of 1484 contained specific rules governing the disposition of goods held by the heretics. There was no limit put upon their despoilment, except that lands transferred before 1479 were exempted from seizure, a precaution to avoid the disturbance of titles. The property of dead heretics, though they had laid in their graves fifty years, was within the power of the tribunal...The practice of confiscation extended to the bedding and wearing apparel of the victims...The institution was known as the Holy Office, the building it occupied was the holy house, *casa santa*, and the public solemnity at which the tribunal appeared officially before the public and announced its decisions was called the act of faith, *auto de fe*...

...The *suprema* acted upon the principle started by Paramo, that the inquisitor was the chief personage in his district. HE REPRESENTED BOTH THE POPE AND THE KING. ON THE ONE HAND, HE CLAIMED THE RIGHT TO ARREST AT WILL AND WITHOUT RESTRICTION FROM THE CIVIL AUTHORITY; ON THE OTHER, HE DEMANDED FREEDOM FOR HIS OFFICIALS FROM ALL ARREST AND VIOLENCE." [SOUND FAMILIAR? – I.E., THE SUPPOSED "WAR ON TERRORISM" LEGALLY EXPANDED TO TARGET ALL WHO ARE LABELED "EXTREMISTS" OR "FUNDAMENTALISTS"]...(72)

Likewise, Loraine Boettner reported, "SPAIN: "...Walter M. Montano, writing in *Christian Heritage*, says: "Spain has had a long history of intolerance. The (known) number of victims sacrificed by the Inquisition in Spain almost exceeds credulity. Yet it has been shown by Llorente, who carefully examined the records of the Tribunal, and whose statements are drawn from the most authoritative sources, that 105,285 victims fell under the inquisitor general Torquemada; 51,167 under Cisneros; and 34,952 fell under Diego Perez. It is further reckoned that 31,912 were burned alive! Half that number, 15,659 suffered the punishment of the statute, and 291,450 were sent to penitentiaries [TO BE TORTURED]. Half a million families were destroyed by the Inquisition, and it cost Spain two million children!" And concerning the present day restrictions and persecutions in Spain he says: "Let it never be forgotten that this is the heritage of the Roman Catholic Church, the end result of the dread Inquisition in a country that never knew Reformation" (September, 1959)." (73)

In his thoroughly documented history of the Spanish Inquisition, D. Juan Antonio Llorente, Secretary of the Inquisition at Madrid from 1789-1791, reported, "Never has a prisoner of the Inquisition seen either the accusation against himself, or any other. No one was ever permitted to know more of his own cause than he could learn of it by the interrogations and accusations to which he was obliged to reply, and by the extracts from the declarations of the witnesses, which were communicated to him, while not only their names were carefully concealed, and every circumstance relating to time, place, and person, by which he might obtain a clue to discover his denouncers, but even if the depositions contained any thing favourable to the defence of the prisoner...This history will make known numberless attempts perpetuated by the inquisitors against magistrates who defended the rights of sovereign authority, in opposition to the enterprises of the *holy office* and the court of Rome...These

trials will display the Counsellors of the Inquisition carrying their audacity to such a height, as to deny that their temporal jurisdiction was derived from the concession of their sovereign, and actually prosecuting all the members of the council of Castile, as rash men, **SUSPECTED OF HERESY**, for having made known to the king **THIS SYSTEM OF USURPATION**. In addition to these intolerable acts, will be found accounts of their assumption of superiority over viceroys, and other great officers of the state...

...The horrid conduct of this *holy office* weakened the power and diminished the population of Spain, by arresting the progress of arts, sciences, industry and commerce, and by compelling multitudes of families to abandon the kingdom: by instigating the expulsion of the Jews and the Moors; and by immolating on its flaming shambles more than *three hundred thousand victims!!* **SECRECY**, the foe of truth and justice, was the soul of the tribunal of the Inquisition...This *holy office*, **VEILED BY SECRECY**, unhesitatingly kept back, falsified, concealed, or forged the reports of trials, when compelled to open their archives [**SOUND FAMILIAR?**]...Facts prove beyond a doubt, that the extirpation of Judaism was not the real cause, but the mere pretext, for the establishment of the Inquisition by Ferdinand V. The true motive was **TO CARRY ON A VIGOROUS SYSTEM OF CONFISCATION AGAINST THE JEWS, AND SO BRING THEIR RICHES INTO THE HANDS OF THE GOVERNMENT**. [**SOUND FAMILIAR?**] [Pope] Sixtus IV. sanctified the measure, to gain the point dearest to the court of **ROME, AN EXTENT OF DOMINATION**. Charles V. protected it from the motives of policy...Philip II was actuated by superstition and tyranny to uphold it; and even extended its jurisdiction to the excise, and made the exporters of horses into France liable to seizure by the officers of the tribunal, **AS PERSONS SUSPECTED OF HERESY!...**Lastly, Charles IV. supported the tribunal, because the French Revolution [**OR NOW 9-11-01**] seemed to justify **A SYSTEM OF SURVEILLANCE**, and he found a firm support in the zeal of the inquisitors-general, always attentive to the preservation and extension of their power, as if the sovereign authority could find no surer means of strengthening the throne, **THAN THE TERROR INSPIRED BY THE INQUISITION...**" (74)

**FRANCE:** Even after the edict of January 1562 in which religious liberty was assured to the Huguenots, the Roman Catholic duke of Guise and others slaughtered a group of Huguenots that were assembled for worship in a barn at Vassy on 1 March, 1562. But even worse than this was ahead for Protestants in France.

Perhaps one of the most cruel and murderous crimes ever committed against people who were believers in Christ Jesus occurred in Paris, France and throughout France in 1572. It is known as the **ST. BARTHOLOMEW'S DAY MASSACRE**. For weeks before, Roman Catholic priests in Paris had already incited a spirit of hatred and murder among Roman Catholics toward the Protestant Huguenots. The priests of Rome had condemned the planned wedding of a Roman Catholic princess of France, Marguerite, the king's sister, to Henry III of Navarre who was a Protestant. Prominent Huguenot Protestants had gathered in Paris for the wedding. Just days after the wedding, on 24 August, 1572, King Charles IX of France ordered the Swiss Guard to kill a group of Huguenot leaders, including Admiral Gaspard de Coligny, in Paris. What began as a targeted group of assassinations, rapidly grew into a horrific massacre as angry, Roman Catholic mobs went hunting for Protestants to murder throughout Paris and in

surrounding communities. The Paris massacre was repeated throughout France. The massacre lasted for weeks.

It is difficult to determine how many tens of thousands of Protestants were murdered by these Roman Catholic, *Devil*-inspired mobs (John 8:43, 1 John 3:12-15). It is estimated that about 75,000 Protestants were killed. It is noted that, "The survivors resolved upon a desperate resistance. It was at this time that the Huguenots were driven to form a political party; otherwise they must, like the Protestants of Spain, have been exterminated." (75)

Fully demonstrating the depravity of the human heart, these mass murders were actually celebrated and commemorated in the Roman Catholic churches. So glad for the outcome of these massacres, POPE GREGORY VIII ORDERED *TE DEUM* TO BE SUNG IN THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCHES AS A SPECIAL THANKSGIVING FOR THIS CELEBRATED EVENT. In like manner, it was reported that on hearing of the slaughter, devout Roman Catholic King Philip II of Spain "laughed for the only time on record." (76)

In history books this period of time in France is often referred to as the "French Wars of Religion." But, a more accurate title would be "The Roman Catholic Holocaust Against Protestants in France." The Protestants fought only to protect themselves and their families from being exterminated by Roman Catholics.

Yet, these were but two of many massacres ordered against Protestants, Waldensians, Cathars, Anabaptists and others over the years by the "[un]Holy" [*Devil's*] Office" of the Inquisitions of Rome. The massacres of the Cathars during the "Albigensian Crusade" of 1209, which had been ordered by Pope Innocent III, ranks as one of the worst. "...This war pitted the nobles of the north of France against those of the south. [SOUND FAMILIAR?] The widespread northern enthusiasm for the Crusade was partially inspired by a papal decree permitting the confiscation of lands owned by Cathars and their supporters [*"THOU SHALT NOT COVET, STEAL, MURDER"?*]..." (77)

The Cathars were a God-fearing, peaceful, minority Christian sect. They had no desire to engage in a war with Rome. The nobles in their area respected their godly lives. The southern nobles knew that Rome intended a holocaust against the Cathars, and that they would be slaughtered without their protection. Facing the threat of certain extermination by the Roman pope and his forces, and the pope's decree permitting confiscation [theft] of the properties of the Cathars and the southern nobles committed to protecting them, these nobles had no choice but to fight for their lives and their properties against ROME'S AGGRESSION.

In history books in the West these events are usually referred to as the "Cathar wars" or the "Albigensian Crusade." However, a closer examination of the events requires a change of title. A more historically accurate title would be a "ROMAN CATHOLIC HOLOCAUST AGAINST THE CATHARS AND THEIR PROTECTORS."

"...The crusader army came under the command, both spiritually and militarily, of the papal legate Arnaud-Amaury, Abbot of Citeaux. In the first significant engagement of the war [i.e. holocaust], the town of Beziers was besieged on 22 July 1209. The Catholic inhabitants of the city were granted the freedom to leave unharmed, but many refused and opted to stay and fight alongside the Cathars...The Cathars spent much of 1209 fending off the crusaders. The leader of the crusaders, Simon de Montfort, resorted to primitive psychological warfare. He ordered his troops to gouge out the eyes of 100 prisoners, cut off their noses and lips, then

send them back to the towers led by a prisoner with one remaining eye. This only served to harden the resolve of the Cathars..." (78)

"...The Beziers army attempted a sortie but was quickly defeated, then pursued by the crusaders back through the gates and into the city. Arnaud, the Cistercian abbot-commander, is supposed to have been asked how to tell Cathars from Catholics. His reply, recalled by Caesar of Heisterbach, a fellow Cistercian, thirty years later was "*Caedite eos. Novit enim Dominus qui sunt eius.*" – "Kill them all, the Lord will recognize His own." The doors of the church of St. Mary Magdeline were broken down and the refugees dragged out and slaughtered. Reportedly, 7,000 people died there. Elsewhere in the (same) town many more thousands were mutilated and killed. Prisoners were blinded, dragged behind horses, and used for target practice.<sup>32</sup> What remained of the city was razed by fire. ARNAUD WROTE TO POPE INNOCENT III, "TODAY YOUR HOLINESS, TWENTY THOUSAND HERETICS WERE PUT TO THE SWORD, REGARDLESS OF RANK, AGE, OR SEX..." (79)

ITALY: The massacre of the Waldensians in April of 1655 is one of the most tragic events in church history. Roman Catholic forces led by the Duke of Savoy carried out a notorious massacre of the Christian Waldensians in the Piedmont region of Italy. "On April 17, the Marquis of Pianezza appeared WITH AN OVERWHELMING FORCE [SOUND FAMILIAR?] of mixed Piedmontese, French, and Irish troops. They conducted a few skirmishes, then made nice with the Waldensian civic leaders and induced them to quartering their troops temporarily further to some expedient pretext. Alas! alas! These poor people were undone. THEY HAD RECEIVED UNDER THEIR ROOF THE EXECUTIONERS OF THEMSELVES AND THEIR FAMILIES. [SOUND FAMILIAR?] The first two days, the 22d and 23d of April, passed in peace, the soldiers sitting at the same table, sleeping under the same roof, and conversing freely with their destined victims..."

...At last the blow fell like a thunderbolt. At four of the clock on the morning of the 24<sup>th</sup> April the signal was given from the Castle of La Torre. But who shall describe the scenes that followed? On the instant a thousand assassins began the work of death [i.e. mass murder]...Little children were torn from the arms of their mothers, and dashed against the rocks; or, more horrible still, they were held betwixt two soldiers, who, unmoved by their piteous cries and the sight of their quivering limbs, tore them up into two halves. Their bodies were then thrown on the highways and the fields. Sick persons and old people, men and women, WERE BURNED ALIVE IN THEIR OWN HOUSES [SOUND FAMILIAR?]; some were hacked in pieces; some were bound up in the form of a ball, and precipitated over the rocks or rolled down the mountains...Some were slowly dismembered, and fire applied to their wounds to staunch the bleeding and prolong their sufferings; some were flayed alive; some roasted alive; others were disemboweled, some were horribly and shamefully mutilated..." (80)

Concerning this Roman Catholic holocaust of the Waldensians, it is believed that John Milton wrote, "Avenge O Lord thy slaughter'd Saints, whose bones Lie scatter'd on the Alpine mountains cold, Even them who kept thy truth so pure of old When all our Fathers worship't Stocks and Stones, Forget not: in thy book record their groanes Who were thy Sheep and in their antient Fold Slayn by the bloody Piemontese that roll'd Mother with Infant down the Rocks. Their moans The Vales redoubl'd to the Hills, and they to Heav'n. Their martyr'd blood and ashes sow O're all th' Italian fields where still doth sway The triple Tyrant: that from these

may grow A hunder'd-fold, who having learnt thy way Early may fly [from] the Babylonian wo.” (81)

**GERMANY:** As a reassertion of New Testament Christianity, the Anabaptist movement grew rapidly in Europe. It was well received among many of the common people. In fact, in a number of provinces of Germany, Austria and Switzerland their numbers soon surpassed the Reformers. Anabaptists rejected infant baptism. Instead, they practiced the biblical model of baptism which involves baptism by immersion of those who convert to Christ Jesus. They rejected the concept of a State church and, instead, believed in the freedom to choose and practice one's faith according to the Scriptures and conscience. As a result, Anabaptists were hated, publicly vilified, tortured, drowned and murdered by the thousands.

Anabaptists were persecuted and executed by those in both Roman Catholic and Protestant state churches. One researcher found, “Anabaptism was made a capital crime. Prices were set on the heads of Anabaptists. To give them food and shelter was made a crime. In Roman Catholic states even those who recanted were often executed...The duke of Bavaria, in 1527, gave orders that the imprisoned Anabaptists should be burned at the stake, unless they recanted, in which case they should be beheaded. King Ferdinand I of Austria issued a number of severe decrees against them, the first general mandate being dated August 28, 1527. In Catholic countries the Anabaptists, as a rule, were executed by burning at the stake, in Lutheran and Zwinglian states generally by beheading or drowning...

...Emperor Charles V of Germany issued a general mandate against the Anabaptists on January 4, 1528, which was read from the pulpits of all cities, towns, and villages, decreeing that not only those who had received baptism but all parents who did not have their children baptized in good time were guilty of a criminal offense deserving death. Within a few years a number of imperial decrees followed. Not only were the Anabaptists to be executed by fire, but their dwellings also should be burned, unless they were located in towns or cities in which case they should be razed to the ground. In certain provinces their houses were not destroyed but confiscated. Speaking of northern Germany Menno Simmons relates that in 1546 a small house of four rooms was confiscated because the owner had rented it to Menno and his family. In the Tyrol even the houses in which an Anabaptist had been given temporary lodging were to be destroyed...

...Armed executioners and mounted soldiers were sent in companies through the land to hunt down the Anabaptists and kill them on the spot without trial or sentence. The old method of pronouncing sentence on each individual dissenter proved inadequate to exterminate this faith. In the first week of Lent, 1528, while Hubmaier was in prison in Kreuzenstein, King Ferdinand of Austria commissioned a company of executioners to root out the Anabaptist faith in his lands. Those who were overtaken in the highways or fields were killed with the sword, others were dragged out of their houses and hanged on the door posts. Most of them had gone into hiding in the woods and mountains. In a forest near Lengbach seventeen were put to death...

...In the province of Swabia, in South Germany, four hundred mounted soldiers were, in 1528, sent out to put to death all Anabaptists on whom they could lay hands. Somewhat later the number of soldiers so commissioned was increased to eight hundred and then to one thousand. In various provinces an imperial provost marshal by the name of Berthold Aichele,



with his assistants, put many Anabaptists to death. On Christmas day, 1531, he drove seventeen men and women into a farmhouse near Aalen in Wurttemberg and burned the building together with the inmates. Three hundred and fifty Anabaptists were executed in the Palatinate before the year 1530. The Count of Alzey, in that province, after having put many to death, was heard to exclaim: "What shall I do? The more I kill, the greater becomes their number." At Ensishem, "the slaughterhouse of Alsace," as it was called, six hundred were killed within a few years. Within six weeks thirty-seven were burned, drowned or beheaded at Linz, in Austria. In the town of Kitzbuchi in the Tyrol, sixty-eight were executed in one year. Two hundred and ten or more were burned in the valley of the Inn River. The number of Anabaptist martyrs in the Tyrol and Gorz was estimated at one thousand about the end of the year 1531..." (82)

**SWITZERLAND:** As a result of the influence of the Roman Catholic popes and laws established such as the DIET OF SPEIRS, a death sentence on all Anabaptists was declared in the area now known as Switzerland. Consequently, here also, many Anabaptist men, women and children were tortured, drowned, burned alive, and executed with the sword.

**ENGLAND:** Severe persecutions and executions of Protestant and Anabaptist Christians occurred frequently during the reign of Roman Catholic Mary I of England. As a result of anti-Protestant laws that punished anyone considered guilty of heresy against the Roman Catholic church, Protestants and Anabaptists in England and Wales were burned at the stake. During Mary's reign, approximately 300 people were martyred. Many of their stories are found in *Foxe's Book of Martyrs* by John Foxe. (83)

**IRELAND:** Since the Protestant people began settling in Ireland in the early 17<sup>th</sup> century, they have faced untold cruelty and persecution from their Roman Catholic neighbors. During the Irish Rebellion of 1641, there occurred one of the largest attempted genocides of the Protestant people in Ireland. Irish Roman Catholic priests and layman formed death squads to hunt down and kill Protestants. 12,000 Protestants were killed in these massacres. During the winter, in Portadown, Ireland, a large group of Protestant men, women and children were marched to a bridge over the Bann river by Roman Catholics where they were forced off the bridge into the icy waters of the river to drown. Some were shot to death in the water. At least 100 Protestants were killed. Years later, due to an attack by Roman Catholic forces in 1689, Protestants were forced to flee to Derry. During the Siege of Derry, 8,000 Protestants died due to starvation and illness in their weakened state. Also, in 1923 the Irish Republican Army (IRA) shot more than 70 Protestants.

Moreover, during World War II many Roman Catholic Irish Republicans sided with the German Nazis against England and Protestants. They refused to obey blackout orders at night in order to help direct German bombers toward Protestant working class areas. Subsequently, Protestant working class areas suffered a disproportionate amount of damage during the German bombings in Ireland. Approximately 1200 died in the German air raids. Also, during the 1960's and 1970's, hundreds of Protestant civilians and police were targeted and killed by Roman Catholic terrorist groups such as the IRA, PIRA and INLA. (84) Log on to <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=kLBMQId2YC> to see their story.

**BELGIUM, NETHERLANDS:** Persecutions and executions of the Anabaptists and Protestants were reported in these areas. Nevertheless, the teachings of the Protestant Reformation were

well received in these regions resulting in many people converting to Protestant beliefs. Hearing the reports of the Roman Catholic holocaust against Protestants occurring in Spain and in France no doubt was a motivating factor in the Dutch War of Independence from 1568-1648. In addition, as a result of the persecutions and Inquisition advanced by Roman Catholic king Philip II of Spain in the south regions, seventeen Protestant provinces found it necessary to fight for their Independence and survival. This was the Eighty Years War. With the LORD's help, in 1648 their efforts resulted in the establishment of The Republic of United Provinces which was officially recognized in the Peace of Westphalia.

Now, let's consider some twentieth century examples. Loraine Boettner found, "...The Vatican had supported Mussolini's Fascist and military policies, including the conquest of Ethiopia (which conquest had been condemned by the League of Nations and by practically all the civilized world), his open and extensive support of Franco in Spain with troops and arms, and his invasion of Albania and Greece. After Italy entered the war on the side of Nazi Germany the Roman church supported the Italian war effort, which meant, of course, that our work of carrying the war to a successful conclusion was made just that much harder. During the war pope Pius XII gave his blessing to large numbers of Italian and German troops who appeared before him in uniform. With the defeat of Germany and Italy those policies caused strong popular resentment..."

"...YUGOSLAVIA: In Yugoslavia there occurred during the Second World War one of the cruelest episodes in history, in the massacre of Eastern Orthodox Serbs by Roman Catholic Croats, in an effort to make the province of Croatia solidly Roman Catholic. So hideous were the massacres that they surpass even those of the Duke of Alva in the Netherlands and those of St. Bartholomew's day in France. Most astonishing was the manner in which those crimes were ignored or hushed up at the time by the news services even in the United States, although similar massacres of Jews in Germany were given the widest publicity-another demonstration of how subtly and efficiently Roman clericalism exerts its influence over the press and radio. But now a French author, M. Henri Mauriere, himself a Roman Catholic, has told the story in a well-documented book, *Assassins in the Name of God*. Miss Monica Farrell tells the same story in her book, *Ravens Wolves*. Both Mr. Mauriere and Miss Farrell put the responsibility squarely on the priests of the Church of Rome...."

"...By way of background, after the First World War the Roman Catholic states of Croatia and Slovenia were united with the Eastern Orthodox state of Serbia to form the nation of Yugoslavia. Croatia had approximately 5,000,000 Roman Catholics and 3,000,000 Eastern Orthodox. At once the Croats began to intrigue against the Serbs. Terrorist Ustashi bands were organized. They received support from Mussolini, who financed them. When king Alexander I of Yugoslavia (regarded as a "Protestant" king by Rome) visited France in 1929, he was assassinated in Marseilles. The leader of the gang was Ante Pavelic [a Roman Catholic], who escaped to Italy where Mussolini gave him protection and refused to surrender him to the Yugoslav government although he was convicted of the crime in both French and Yugoslav courts..."

"...When in 1941 the Nazis invaded Yugoslavia the [Roman Catholic] Croats, with Pavelic as their leader, joined them. As a reward Hitler made Pavelic the puppet head of the new "Independent State of Croatia." His minister of religion was Andrija Artukovic, another Roman Catholic. Then began a war of suppression or extermination of all Serbs and Jews.

Nearly 70,000 of the 80,000 Jews in the new state were killed or forced to flee, their property being confiscated. Official records and photographs show that Pavelic and [Roman Catholic] archbishop Stepinac were closely associated in governmental, social, and ecclesiastical affairs. Stepinac was appointed supreme military apostolic vicar of the Ustashi army led by Pavelic. He was, therefore, in a position to know of the atrocities which were constantly taking place...”

“... In May, 1941, after innumerable massacres had been committed, Pavelic went to Rome and was received by pope Pius XII, and on the same occasion signed a treaty with Mussolini. In June of that year more than 100,000 Orthodox Serbian men, women, and children were killed by the Ustashi. In all some 250 Orthodox churches were destroyed or turned over to Roman Catholic parishes and convents. Documents requesting and authorizing such transfers are now in the state prosecutor’s office at Zagreb and Sarajevo, bearing the signature of archbishop Stepinac. In February, 1942, a *Te Deum* was sung in Stepinac’s [Roman Catholic] church in Zagreb, the then capital of Croatia, with special honors paid to Pavelic. In a pastoral letter Stepinac declared that in spite of complexities, what they were seeing in Croatia was “the Lord’s work,” and called on his priests to support Pavelic. Stepinac twice visited pope Pius XII, in Rome, in 1942. He reported that 244,000 Serbs had accepted (forced) conversion to Roman Catholicism. SO THE POPE, TOO, WAS WELL INFORMED AS TO WHAT [THE HOLOCAUST AGAINST “PROTESTANTS,” “HERETICS” AND JEWS] WAS GOING ON IN SERBIA AND CROATIA...”

“...WHEN IT BECAME NECESSARY FOR THE NAZIS TO RETREAT FROM YUGOSLAVIA, PAVELIC, ARTUKOVIC, AND ALMOST ALL THE ROMAN PRIESTS WENT WITH THEM. After the war ended Yugoslav courts sentenced Stepinac to sixteen years imprisonment for his Nazi-Fascist collaboration. After serving five years he was released, but was kept under house arrest. THE POPE, HOWEVER, REWARDED HIS SERVICES BY NAMING HIM [STEPINAC] A CARDINAL. Until his death in 1960, he was played up in Roman Catholic circles, particularly in the United States, as a “martyr,” even to the extent that CARDINAL SPELLMAN, IN NEW YORK, NAMED A PAROCHIAL HIGH SCHOOL AFTER HIM...”

“...Pavelic again fled to Italy [WITH THE HELP OF ROME], where for some time he lived in disguise as a monk in a monastery, and later escaped to Argentina [ROMAN CATHOLIC JUSTICE]. Artukovic too avoided capture, and eventually entered the United States [WITH THE HELP OF ROMAN CATHOLICS] under a false name and with a forged certificate of identity from Southern Ireland, and settled in California. Both Pavelic and Artukovic successfully resisted all efforts of the Yugoslav government to extradite them as war criminals. Pavelic eventually returned to Spain, where he died in 1960. Los Angeles newspapers reported that through two court trials THE PRINCIPAL SUPPORT FOR ARTUKOVIC TO PREVENT HIS EXTRADITION CAME FROM THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH, OF WHICH HE HAD BEEN A LIFELONG MEMBER. So reads another chapter of church-state intrigue as dark as any played out during the Middle Ages. Let it also be noted that BOTH HITLER AND MUSSOLINI WERE ROMAN CATHOLICS, BUT THAT DESPITE THEIR CRIMES AGAINST HUMANITY NEITHER WAS EVER EXCOMMUNICATED, NOR EVEN SEVERELY CENSORED, BY THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH...” (85)

For additional data concerning the Roman Catholic holocaust against Orthodox, Evangelicals, Baptists and Jews log on to <http://www.reformation.org/holocaust.html> to see the book *The Vatican's Holocaust* by Avro Manhattan.

**“...LATIN AMERICA:** The most glaring example of persecution in our western hemisphere in recent years, and continuing to some extent to the present day, is found in the nation of Colombia. There a reactionary government with the support of the Roman Catholic Church came into power in 1948. A concordat was signed with the Vatican, under which severe restrictions were placed on Protestants. 60 percent of the country was declared “mission territory” (for Roman Catholic missionaries) and closed to Protestant work of any kind. During this period 116 Protestants have been killed, 66 Protestant churches or chapels have been burned or bombed, and over 200 Protestant schools have been closed. (Report of the Evangelical Confederation of Columbia, Bulletin No. 50; June 26, 1959). Protestants, however, have refused to acknowledge the validity of the concordat, because certain features of it are in open violation of the Colombian constitution, and it has never been submitted to the congress for ratification as is required by law for all treaties with foreign powers...” (86)

**MEXICO:** We need only read the book *HISTORIA DEL TRIBUNAL DEL SANTO OFICIO DE LA INQUISICION EN MEXICO* by Jose Toribio Medina to know of the terrible persecutions and atrocities done to those labeled “Protestants” and “heretics” by Roman Catholics in Mexico during past centuries. (87)

But it is essential to understand that persecutions against evangelical *Christians* incited by the Roman Catholic church did not cease during past centuries, they have continued into the present era. In his well-researched book *BEHIND THE PURPLE CURTAIN* the former friar of the Dominican Order and Roman Catholic priest from Bolivia Dr. Walter Montano wrote concerning a “Pastoral Letter” published by Roman Catholic Archbishop Luis Maria Martinez of Mexico in 1945 urging Mexican Roman Catholics to unite in the “sacred crusade” against Protestantism. Dr. Montano reported, “The religious persecution in Mexico and other Latin American countries is carried out by dignitaries of the Roman Church, especially against the small evangelical congregations in rural and isolated areas. Deaths, women raped, [Protestant] churches burned, private houses burned – all are a part of this comprehensive plan to regain the spiritual control of the people, in open defiance of the [Mexican] law and as a test of strength to see how far the [Roman Catholic] leaders can go with other plans they have in mind. Take for instance the much publicized celebration of the Virgin of Guadalupe. A Roman Catholic lawyer in the department of Public Education was heard to boast, “You know how many laws and regulations we violated with this celebration?...Seventeen.”

“...In an open letter, addressed to the [Roman Catholic] Archbishop of Mexico and printed as a large poster, the Protestants recounted the sad facts relating to a long line of Protestant martyrs in Mexico, beginning in 1821, when a fanatical [Roman Catholic] crowd, instigated by a [Roman Catholic] priest, brutally attacked a whole [Protestant] congregation. In 1872 John Stephens, a missionary, was assassinated by the Catholics. Others – pastors and Bible colporteurs – were martyred in 1881, 1887, and 1902. Again in 1921, 1923, 1925, 1926, and 1928 pastors and members of evangelical churches were murdered. “And now, Mr. Archbishop of

Mexico,” the letter continued, “knowing full well all this iniquitous persecution by the Roman Church, you recommended in your pastoral letter that it was necessary to carry on a crusade in defense of the faith.” This recommendation the fanatical Romanist people carried out in the following way. They set fire to the church in Gloria, together with nine evangelical homes, resulting in seven people being killed...In Jalapa de Diaz, a Protestant church was half destroyed, and the women were attacked by the crowd, led by the [Roman Catholic] priest, Jose R. Angulo...”

“...Details are also given of the attack made on the Protestants while meeting in a general convention in Toluca on July 14, 1946. IN EACH OF THESE INCIDENTS THE HAND OF A ROMAN PRIEST CAN BE DETECTED. The violent Catholic attack against Protestants which flared in the Mexican town of San Felipe de Santiago on July 9, 1946, was reported from Mexico City on August 4, in an International News Service dispatch which merely stated that: “Two government investigators were killed and another seriously injured while attempting to determine the origin of and the blame for the outbreaks between Catholics and Protestants.”...They had been sent there to investigate acts of religious intolerance that had been committed throughout that vicinity by Catholic fanaticism. They were accompanied by two evangelists, Francisco Vazquez and Césareo Antonio, who were to appear on a case dealing with the same matter.”... (88)

Regarding the public vilification and false portrayal of Protestants in Mexico by the Roman Catholic Archbishop Luis Maria Martinez, Dr. Montano continued, “According to the PRENSA GRAFICA of Saturday, August 3, Archbishop Luis Maria Martinez said (with a slight shaking of the head), “I believe that the work carried on by Protestants in Mexico favors the Communists who are trying to introduce their theories in this country.” According to close observers, there were four factors contributing to the bloody acts of San Felipe de Santiago: 1. The criminal instigation of the priests. 2. The active campaign which the Synarchists are carrying out against the Protestants. 3. The confessional attitude of some public servants [government leaders, police, etc.] who obey the orders of the Roman Catholic priests. 4. And, above all, the complete lack of punishment for such previous crimes, OVER ONE THOUSAND OF WHICH HAVE BEEN REPORTED IN THREE YEARS...” (89)

In addition, in his book Dr. Montano clearly exposed the involvement and influence of the Roman Catholic *Cristeros*, *Falangists* and *Synarchists* in helping to carry out persecutions against Protestants in Latin America. These were Roman Catholic groups [genuine terrorists engaging in murderous acts of violence] actively collaborating in the plan to establish “regimes based on the principles of Fascist Spain” [Franco’s Hispanidad movement] in Latin America after World War II. Walter Montano observed, “But while the average Catholic may not know the details of these terrible circumstances, Roman Catholic dignitaries are well informed of these things and approve these atrocities with their silence or even encourage the campaign with their Pastoral Letters, as indicated by their recent action published by OMEGA under the heading “The Danger of Protestantism.” The letter sent by a group of United States Catholic bishops to the bishops of Central and South America referred to their Latin American colleagues as “not only our neighbors, but our brothers in faith,” and expressed their SOLIDARITY with the anti-Protestant campaign...” (90)

Furthermore, after the Mexican revolution, “when Mexico was establishing beneficial reforms for the country,” the Roman Catholic church began a propaganda campaign in the United States in order to stir opposition to the new government in Mexico. Directed by agents of the Vatican, The Knights of Columbus in America aided in this campaign. Dr. Montano wrote, “There is an article by Joseph Scott dedicated to Archbishop John J. Cantwell, of Los Angeles, California, which says: “The Knights of Columbus raised three million dollars to start a campaign of education throughout the entire country to open the eyes of the American people to the disgraceful terrorist [Note that Roman Catholic leaders have redefined the term “terrorist” to label any person or group opposing their global agenda] activities of the so-called Mexican government in attempting to destroy the Catholic religion, exiling Archbishops, Bishops and priests from Mexico.”<sup>5</sup> [Joseph Scott, “Knights of Columbus,” *THE CENTENNIAL*, p. 184] The article shows clearly that The Knights of Columbus were working under direct orders from the Vatican through Edward L. Hearn, “Count of the Holy Roman Empire...”

“...That propaganda against Mexico had its most intimate relation with the assassination of President Obregon, by a fanatical [Roman Catholic] young man. Why was the Catholic Church opposing the Mexican Government? Let Secretary Barba Gonzalez answer this question in the name of the Government: “Because the [Roman Catholic] Church is losing what she had in the past when the Catholic Church owned four-fifths of the national property.” The philosophical and social revolution of Mexico has become synonymous with freedom, progress, self-government, and social justice! These words do not exist in the dictionary of the Roman Catholic Church. [the very words borrowed and used by Rome for Catholic propaganda following Vatican II] “What are the reasons for this campaign? And who is behind it?” asks Verna Carleton Millan. “It seems obvious to many observers, Catholic and Protestant, that the religious issue is merely a political tool, as it was in Spain and as it is in Argentina,” she answers her own question. “Many Catholics are backing the campaign because they are honestly concerned about the possible growth of Protestantism in the country,...But many others back it purely for political reasons, lending themselves to the Synarchist and Falangist plan to set up regimes based on the principles of Fascist Spain. The plan is for such regimes to participate in the *Hispanidad* movement (Franco-inspired movement ostensibly cultural, for paving the way for Spain’s dominion over Spanish-speaking peoples), after the war.<sup>6</sup> According to evidence gathered by the Mexican Government, this plan is directed from Spain through Argentina. For some time the Mexican Government has known that Argentine Falangist agents have been sent to Mexico to offer the Synarchists support from the Argentine branch of the Spanish *Falange*.”<sup>7</sup>...

“...The views of Falangist sympathizers were summed up by Miguel Palomar y Vizcarra at a public banquet given him recently when he was awarded a medal by Catholic groups for his outstanding work as a *Cristero*. In his acceptance speech he said, “I am Mexican, Guadalupano, Hispanic, and Catholic, and, therefore, anti-Masonic, anti-Protestant, and anti-Jewish.” He wound up with the fervent prayer that Mexico and Argentina would soon UNITE with Franco Spain to work for peace...” (91)

Now pay close attention to this additional data. Dr. Walter Montano further warned, “We are told by authoritative eyewitnesses that the groups in Mexico recognized under the banner of

the Catholic Church are training for the day when they think they will capture the presidency and administration of Mexico... They were in great need of officers for the Synarchist soldiers. There they found themselves in quite a situation, entirely different from that in Spain, where many army officers were ready to rebel against the Republic [I.E., FRANCO'S CIVIL WAR]. In Mexico it is different: the revolutionary army is an army of the people. The great difficulty there was to get the army to join this movement or at least stand aside and be neutral when the "great day" came. The Synarchists went about this by organizing what they called the "Society of Friends of the Soldiers," a secret society for some time, brought to public notice by an attempt of one of the members to assassinate the president. This society went into the military barracks and officers' clubs endeavoring quietly to win over officers to their movement. They also established what they call THE LATIN AMERICA UNIVERSITY, A MILITARY SCHOOL, UNDER JESUIT INSTRUCTION, WHERE MILITARY TRAINING IS GIVEN. They tried to get the Mexican government to incorporate their courses so that their graduates could automatically become officers in the Mexican army. They also went into the National Military Academy itself..." (92) Thus, we observe Rome's influence and infiltration of the military.

As Professor A. Victor Murray, former president of Chestnut College pointed out, "Rome nowadays is represented by a sectarian type of organization. It believes itself to be the perfect society, judge in its own cause, omniscient and self-sufficient. Anything that furthers its interests, political or social, as well as religious, is considered to be according to the will of God. Mussolini's expedition to Abyssinia furthered the interests of Romanism and was blessed by the Pope. Franco's rebellion in Spain was helped by a large donation from the [Roman Catholic] Archbishop of Seville..." [Keep in mind that many thousands of people were killed in these senseless wars for political power.] "Besides the political connotations pointed out up to now, it is known that in Mexico and in all the Latin American countries the Roman Catholic Church has been the richest of all institutions. Allied [for centuries] with the feudal systems and marching hand in hand with exploiters and landlords, the dignitaries of the church have amassed enormous fortunes. They have been the champions in defending THE CLASS SYSTEM: THE RICH, THE LABOR WORKER, AND THE POOR... The cardinal interest of Rome is to keep peoples and countries in darkness, ignorance and poverty. It is only in this way that she can exploit them..." (93)

Add to these persecutions by the Roman church the attacks against Evangelical *Christians* by Jesuit trained, leftist zapatistas and Roman Catholic mobs that have occurred in the state of Chiapas in Mexico from 1990-2012. During these years, many Bible-believing *Christians* have been assaulted or killed for their faith in our Lord Jesus Christ. In Chiapas, thousands of Evangelical *Christians* have been threatened and driven from their homes. As a result, thousands of these believers now live in ghettos. (94)

PERU: In *BEHIND THE PURPLE CURTAIN* Dr. Montano, who was a victim of Roman Catholic persecution, noted, "LIMA was the seat of the Inquisition when the Spanish conquest took place. The Congress of Peru functions today in a building located in the same square where thousands were tortured as heretics in the past generation... the Archbishop of Lima published a Pastoral Letter denouncing Protestants as criminals... [in 1942] "A Government Program of Education, prepared in the offices of the high dignitaries of the Roman Church,

under personal direction of the Nuncio was decreed for all schools, private or public, Protestant or Catholic. It was made obligatory with provision to close any school that would not follow its instructions..." (95) It required indoctrination in Roman Catholic teachings and worship as demonstrated on pages 114-116 of *BEHIND THE PURPLE CURTAIN*. (96) Roman Catholicism being taught in public schools is also common in other countries in Latin America. Thus, we observe the influence of the Roman Catholic church in public education.

Moreover, the anti-Protestant influence of the Roman Catholic church on Roman Catholic police officers is very evident in reports presented to the government of Peru by Protestant groups in the 1940's. In these reports we can see clearly how Roman Catholic leaders seek to use civil authorities to punish those who will not submit to her religious decrees. Referring to a Protestant memorandum to a former president of Peru, it is mentioned that, "The ugliest blot on Peru's sorry picture is the apparent conniving between "certain elements of the police," as the document politely describes them, and the [Roman Catholic] hierarchy. The admission of one officer that he was told to suppress Protestant meetings and favor Roman Catholic effort is only suggestive of what must be going on in Peru...the pastoral letter of the [Roman Catholic] Archbishop of Lima was, in effect, an open incitation to persecute the Protestants, sounding a call to, "the battle against Protestantism which is a dissolver of citizenship." [against Protestants] The memorial further stated that: some elements of the police...are imprisoning evangelical preachers who are carrying out their spiritual ministry, physically mistreating them in public places, forcing them to sweep out the prisons, closing buildings where they preach and, in short, threatening in a thousand ways those who dare to continue their religious gatherings. The distribution of the Bible, which is the Magna Charta of the Christian faith, has been prohibited in many parts of the country. Charging that the police lend their service in this plan of persecution, the statement sent Dr. Prado quoted a letter from a pastor in Tarma, Peru. An excerpt from that letter reports: "Unexpectedly, a police lieutenant came up and ordered him not to present the Bible, nor to speak of it. The pastor answered politely that the Constitution was very clear at this point. The police officer ordered him taken prisoner, struck him in the public street, and addressed him with vile language...He is now under the threat that if he again presents the Bible he will be beaten..."

"...It seems that the lower police authorities are determined with a complete disregard of the Constitution, TO PUT IMPEDIMENT, BY FORCE WITH SEVERE MENACES, TO THE FREE EXERCISE OF THE EVANGELICAL RELIGION IN THE WHOLE NATIONAL TERRITORY. They seem to ignore that these are criminal attempts, punishable by the Penal Code; it also seems that these unjustified attacks against public [religious] liberties are practiced with the greatest impunity. "In the weekly paper of the Roman Catholic Church, we read the following: 'The Eucharistic Crusade in Defense of Faith has already initiated (the attack) first bringing the heretics to silence in the Park, with the intervention of the police forces, and then with the resolute attitude of a group of enthusiastic young people of the Eucharistic Crusade, dedicated to this commendable task: to localize the Protestants, find them by surprise, and condemn them into silence or disperse them.' "We have been informed that in February of 1941 the Minister of Foreign Affairs prohibited a Pan American Congress of Evangelical Youth, to which forty-eight delegates were sent from various American countries. That Congress had



to function clandestinely. We have been informed also that our Consuls deny visas to evangelical pastors who want to come to Peru..." (97) These are the actions and methods of the Roman Catholic church used to suppress and punish the propagation of the biblical gospel message and biblical Christianity in every place where Rome gains dominion.

AMERICA: There were also some massacres of Protestant colonies by Roman Catholics in Colonial America. W. J. Burgess cited the book *History of Christianity* by Charles W. Rishell (from the German of Rudolph Sohm), finding, "Rishell says further, "The first successful colony was settled at Jamestown, Virginia, 1607. PRIOR TO THIS, numerous attempts at Protestant colonization had been made, but none of them had proved successful. A colony of Huguenots on the St. James River was massacred by the Roman Catholics of St. Augustine under their desperate leader, Melendez, before the close of the sixteenth century." Page 309" (98)

As I studied the many atrocities from the fourth century onward done by Roman Catholics to Protestants, Baptists and Jews, some key Scriptures from Jesus and His apostles came to mind:

1) Jesus said to the unsaved religious people of his time, "...If ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham. But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth, which I have heard of God:...Ye do the deeds of your father...Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts [evil desires] of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it...He that is of God heareth God's words [the Holy Scriptures - John. 10:35]: ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God." (John 8:39-47)

2) Referring to the sinful condition of Gentiles who do not know God the apostle Paul preached, "Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness: Their feet are swift to shed blood: Destruction and misery are in their ways: And the way of peace have they not known: There is no fear of God before their eyes..." (Romans 3:14-18)

3) Likewise, the apostle John taught, "In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother...Not as Cain, who was of that wicked one, and slew [murdered] his brother. And wherefore slew he him? Because his own works were evil, and his brother's righteous. Marvel not, my brethren, if the world hate you. We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren. He that loveth not his brother abideth in [spiritual] death. Whosoever hateth his brother is a murderer: and ye know that no murderer hath eternal life abiding in him." (1 John 3:10-15)

4) Referring to the unsaved who will not repent of their evil works and convert to Jesus Christ, John warned, "But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death." (Revelation 21:8)

Tragically, most Roman Catholics today have no realistic idea of what their popes and ancestors have done to those of other faiths. God loves Roman Catholics. Likewise, we love Roman Catholics (John 3:16-17). However, we wholeheartedly reject the false religious

belief system of Roman Catholicism. It is God's desire that Catholics should get *saved* and come to *the knowledge of the truth* from the Scriptures of truth (John 8:31-32, 1 Timothy 2:1-5). It is an action of Christian love to share the message of the biblical *gospel* with Catholics and win them to Jesus and biblical Christianity. After Catholics get saved, they must be urged to follow Jesus Christ according to the New Testament Scriptures in a New Testament church (John 17:6-18, Acts 2:40-42, Hebrews 10:25). In order to do this, they must depart from Roman Catholicism (Ephesians 5:11, 2 Corinthians 6:14-18, Revelation 18:4-5). Why? Because the Roman Catholic church is not a genuine Christian church. Rather, as evidenced by its doctrines and actions, it is a false church - an unholy synthesis.

The decision to leave Roman Catholicism in order to follow Jesus Christ in obedience to the Scriptures in a biblical *church* is a powerful testimony to family and friends. However, persecution against them after their conversion to Christ Jesus is common. As *Christians*, we should pray for and help these new believers in Christ as they take a stand for Christ Jesus and His Word – the Holy Bible (Luke 6:31, John 13:35, Galatians 6:2, Philippians 1:28-29). Let there be no doubt that this is the right decision. In his book *ROMANISM - A MENACE TO THE NATION* former Roman Catholic priest of twenty-one years Jeremiah J. Crowley declared, "I retired voluntarily, gladly, from the priesthood of Rome, after a vain attempt, in combination with other priests, to secure a reform of Romanistic abuses from within...This failing, no other course was open but to quit the accursed *System* forever." (99)

As genuine *Christians*, our supreme allegiance is not to anyone who usurps the headship of Jesus Christ in *the church* on earth. We do not believe, as the Roman Catholic religion claims, that the Roman pope is the "Father of Princes and Kings", "Ruler of the World", or the "Vicar of our Savior Jesus Christ." We do not believe, as *The New York Catechism* of the Roman Catholic faith claims regarding the Roman pope, "...By divine right the pope has supreme and full power in faith and morals over each and every pastor and his flock. He is the true Vicar of Christ, the head of the entire church, the father and teacher of all Christians. He is the infallible ruler, the founder of dogmas, the author of and judge of councils; the universal ruler of the truth, the arbiter of the world, the supreme judge of heaven and earth, the judge of all, being judged by no one, God himself on earth." (100) Thus, the Roman Catholic religion claims that the Roman pope is the "Ruler of the World" and in place of "God himself on earth."

WHEREAS, IN THE NEW TESTAMENT SCRIPTURES WE DISCOVER THAT THE ONE (SINGULAR) TRUE *HEAD OF THE CHURCH* IS OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF. In Ephesians 5:23 the apostle Paul taught that "...*Christ is the [singular] head of the church...*" and "*the [singular] saviour of the body*" Likewise, Paul proclaimed in Colossians 1:18 that Jesus Christ "...*is the [singular] head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things he [Jesus] might have the preeminence.*" NOTICE IN THIS VERSE THAT IT IS JESUS CHRIST, NOT THE ROMAN POPE, WHO IS TO HAVE PREEMINENCE IN "*ALL THINGS*" IN *THE CHURCH*. JESUS IS THE RESURRECTED, LIVING SAVIOR WHO IS FULLY CAPABLE OF MAINTAINING HIS HEADSHIP OVER *THE CHURCH*. FOR HE HAS BEEN GIVEN "*ALL POWER*" "*IN HEAVEN AND IN EARTH*" (MATTHEW 28:18). AND NOWHERE DO WE FIND IN THE NEW TESTAMENT SCRIPTURES THAT OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST HAS DELEGATED HIS HEADSHIP OVER THE CHURCH TO ANY MAN!

Moreover, Christ Jesus taught that God the Father “...hath committed *all* judgment unto the [singular] Son [Jesus Christ]”, “And hath given him [singular - Christ Jesus] authority to execute judgment...” (John 5:22, 5:27) In fact, it was on Mar’s hill in Athens that the apostle Paul boldly proclaimed that God, “...now commandeth *all men everywhere* [“all” includes popes and Roman Catholics] *to repent: because he hath appointed a day, in the which he will judge the world in righteousness by that man [Christ Jesus] whom he hath ordained; whereof he hath given assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead.*” (Acts 17:30-31) **THUS, ONLY JESUS CHRIST IS THE SUPREME JUDGE OF ALL.** Also, it is our Lord Jesus Christ, not the Roman pope, who is “*the king*” who will reign over an everlasting kingdom as set forth in Matthew 2:1-2 and Luke 1:31-32. In fact, the prophet Micah declared that this same little baby who was born in Bethlehem will be “*ruler in Israel.*”

Furthermore, it is this same resurrected Ruler, Jesus, not the Roman pope, who is “**LORD**” [Jehovah] and “*king*” in Psalm chapter two. In Isaiah 9:6 it is the only, true Messiah [Christ Jesus] of Israel, not the Roman pope, who is called, “*Wonderful, Counsellor [singular], The [singular] mighty God, The [singular] everlasting Father, The [singular] Prince of Peace.*” In addition, the apostle Paul explained that “*our Lord Jesus Christ...is the [singular] blessed and only [singular] Potentate, the [singular] King of kings, and [singular] Lord of lords;*...” in 1 Timothy 6:14-15.

It is the ultimate sinful action of sacrilege and pride for any man (or woman) to declare or exalt himself (or herself) to be “in place of Jesus Christ on earth” as “the head of the church”, “Ruler of the World” and “in place of God himself on earth.” In the Scriptures it is said that the *antichrist*, full of pride, will oppose and exalt himself, “...above *all* that is called God, or that is worshipped...” (2 Thessalonians 2:4) Thus, the *antichrist* will take this false, pagan doctrine of the deification of man to its worst level of all in the days to come.

But as for genuine *Christians*, above all else, our supreme allegiance must be *exclusively* to our Lord Jesus Christ (the only, true *head of the church*) and obeying His Word – the Holy Bible (Matthew 4:4; 10:36-38, John 8:31-32; 17:17). Notice that Jesus said to His followers that if they continued in “my word” (the teachings of Jesus recorded in the New Testament Scriptures) they were His true *disciples* (John 8:31-32).

Regarding the one world false church of the last days, God’s command is very clear. “*Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues. For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities.*” Revelation 18:4-5 In other words, God has remembered the millions of murders, assaults, tortures, thefts, lies, rapes, abuses of authority and persecutions of the Roman Catholic religion directed against His true *sheep* - Bible-believers.

**YET, ANOTHER SIGNIFICANT TRUTH ALSO EMERGES FROM THIS EVIDENCE: BY MEANS OF THE PAPAL OFFICE, THE LEADERSHIP OF ANCIENT ROME HAS CONTINUED INTO MODERN TIMES.** Thus, it can be claimed that the Roman Empire never totally ceased. Consequently, the rise of the “**HOLY ROMAN EMPIRE**,” “**NEW SPAIN**” and “**NEW WORLD ORDER**” carry a much greater historical significance. See Daniel 7:23-25 and Rev. 13:7; 17:18.

**FURTHERMORE, IN CONSIDERATION OF HER PAST ACTIONS, IS ROME CAPABLE OF INCITING OR INITIATING A HOLOCAUST AGAIN TOWARD THOSE SHE LABELS**

**“PROTESTANTS,” “HERETICS” AND/OR “FUNDAMENTALIST CHRISTIANS” IN THE TWENTY-FIRST CENTURY IN ORDER TO ADVANCE HER OWN POWER HUNGRY, GREEDY AGENDA?** During his time, former Roman Catholic priest C. Chiniquy warned, “Another fact, to which the American Protestants do not sufficiently pay attention, is that the Jesuits have been shrewd enough to have a vast majority of Roman Catholic generals and officers [such as William Tecumseh Sherman - with a son who was a catholic priest] to command the army and man the navy of the United States. Rome is in constant conspiracy against the rights and liberties of [Protestant or “Fundamentalist” *Christian*] man all over the world; but she is particularly so in the United States...” (101)

In Spring of 1852 at Buffalo, New York Mr. D’Arey McGee, a devout Roman Catholic and then editor of *The Freeman’s Journal*, official journal of the Bishop of New York, gave a speech to “a large assembly, principally composed of [Roman Catholic] priests.” Pastor Chiniquy reported, “The majority [of priests] coldly answered him [McGee]: “We are determined, like you, to take possession of the United States, and rule them; but we cannot do that without acting secretly and with the utmost wisdom. If our plans are known, they will surely be defeated...” (102) WHEN NEW SPAIN WAS DEFEATED, ROME LOST POLITICAL POWER, INFLUENCE AND ASSETS IN THE AMERICAS. ROME HOPES TO REGAIN THESE LOST ASSETS AND SPIRITUAL DOMINION BY MEANS OF THE ESTABLISHMENT OF THE NEW WORLD ORDER.

Keep in mind that a genuine Roman Catholic is required to have supreme allegiance first and foremost to the Roman pope and the Roman Catholic church above any loyalty toward his or her own nation of birth or residence. Along with seeking a dominant representation in government, military, law enforcement, higher education, media and national intelligence agencies in the United States, Rome has sent her agents to actively work in the realm of immigration policy to bring about a Roman Catholic majority in population. The Roman Catholic church has actively engaged in facilitating massive (legal and illegal) immigration of millions of Roman Catholics from Europe and Latin America to the United States during the nineteenth, twentieth and early twenty-first centuries. Why?

Fully aware of Rome’s agenda for the Americas, Chiniquy quoted the consensus of the assembled priests as, “...How sad will their awakening be, when, we [Roman Catholics], with our outnumbering votes, we will turn them, for ever, from every position of honour, power and profit! What will those hypocritical and godless sons and daughters of the fanatical Pilgrim Fathers say, when not a single judge, not a single teacher, not a single policeman will be elected if he be not a devoted Irish Roman Catholic? What will those so-called giants think of their matchless shrewdness and ability, when not a single Senator or member of Congress will be chosen, if he be not submitted to our holy father the Pope? What a sad figure those Protestant Yankees will cut when we will not only elect the President, but fill and command the armies, man the navies, and hold the keys of the public treasury?...” Chiniquy noted, “In order to more easily drill the Roman Catholics and prepare them for the irrepressible struggle the Jesuits have organized them into a great number of secret societies, the principal of which are: Ancient Order of Hibernians, Irish American Society, Knights of St. Patrick...Almost all these secret associations are military ones...” (103)

Presently, there is the “Knights of the Sovereign Military Order of Malta” [Knights of Malta] with headquarters in Rome. It is considered “a sovereign subject of international law.” In like manner, “Knights of Columbus” is a Roman Catholic organization with headquarters in New Haven, Connecticut. It has about 1.8 million members committed to “actively defending [i.e., doing whatever the pope commands - good or evil] Catholicism in various nations.” The largest alliance of these is a NGO consisting of 15 Roman Catholic fraternal societies representing more than 150 million lay people in more than 150 nations. This is known as the International Alliance of Catholic Knights. Its mission statement includes; “To give loyalty and support in every way possible to our Holy Father the Pope and all Bishops, Priests, and Religious throughout the world;...To pursue these aims by uniting all our brothers throughout the world in prayer...” (104)

Thus, we can see how the Vatican has active representation and influence throughout the nations and at the “United Nations.” Rome is identified as “...the great whore that sitteth upon many waters;...” in Revelation 17:1. In John’s interpretation of 17:1, found in 17:15 and 17:18, he proclaimed, “*And he saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues...And the woman which thou sawest is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth.*” (17:15,18) In their rough translations from the Greek text, both scholars Alfred Marshall and Jay P. Green render Revelation 17:18 as, “*...having a kingdom over the kings of the earth.*” (105, 106) The translation is from, “...ἡ ἐχουσα βασιλειαν ἐπὶ τῶν βασιλεων της γης.” There is only one city and organization in the world today that can possibly match this data - Rome.

John further explained what he saw in his vision: “*And after these things I heard a great voice of much people in heaven, saying, Alleluia; Salvation, and glory, and honour, and power, unto the Lord our God; For true and righteous are his judgments: for he hath judged the great whore, which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath avenged the blood of his servants at her hand...Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus.*” (Revelation 19:1-2; 22:20 KJV)

## CHAPTER VI: THE JESUIT CONNECTION: THE SOCIETY OF JESUS FROM A BIBLICAL CHRISTIAN PERSPECTIVE

### A

*“BELOVED, believe not every spirit, but test the spirits, whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.” (1 John 4:1)*  
*“For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.” (Ephesians 6:12 KJV)*

As I searched for research materials for this report, four interesting factors caught my attention: 1) It was my observation that most of the books and articles I found about the Jesuits, Inquisitions, holocausts, and wars initiated by the Roman Catholic church prepared by Roman Catholic authors did not present an accurate, fair and balanced view of the events from the perspectives of the Protestants, Baptists, Evangelicals and Jews who were often the victims of their past actions. 2) Catholic authors mostly portrayed the Jesuits in a favorable way. The historical involvement of the Jesuits in Inquisitions; holocausts; wars; assassinations; espionage; inciting of revolts; undermining/overthrow of Protestant governments; their expulsions from nations by governments due to their actions; and more are typically not addressed in an adequate way. When they are, the atrocities are usually sanitized, justified and/or glossed over. 3) Accurate reports of the actual numbers of victims killed, injured, and/or impacted by past atrocities in the modern era incited by Jesuit priests and popes are difficult to obtain. After the events occurred, understandably, in many cases Roman Catholic authorities did not want specific data concerning body counts and details of the massacres/atrocities preserved for posterity. 4) Many of the older writings about the Jesuits prepared by authors who were not Roman Catholics are increasingly difficult to locate. Most are no longer found in libraries.

As I searched out the origin, development, teachings, oaths and actions of the Society of Jesus over the centuries, I was astonished at what I found. This report is a synopsis of my research. It is, unashamedly, prepared from the perspective of a Bible-believing Christian who cares. What was done to the victims of the Jesuits and the Vatican of Rome will not be sanitized, rationalized and/or glossed over in this report. The incredible evil of which this organization is capable, their involvement and influence throughout the world will be revealed in clarity. May your mind and heart be enlightened by *the Spirit of truth* in the Scriptures of truth – the Holy Bible (Psalm 119:130-173).

Concerning the Society of Jesus, Friedrich Leopold Freiherr von Hardenberg, alias Novalis, (1772-1801) wrote, “Never before in the course of the world’s history had such a Society appeared. The old Roman Senate itself did not lay schemes for world dominion with greater certainty of success. Never had the carrying out of a greater idea been considered with greater understanding. For all time this Society will be an example to every society which feels an organic longing for infinite extension and eternal duration—but it will also be a witness to the fact that un-regarded Time alone brings to naught the cleverest undertakings,

and that the natural growth of the whole race inevitably suppresses the artificial growth of a part.” (107)

Officially established in 1540 (unofficially in 1534) by a Spanish soldier, Inigo (later changed to the Roman name - Ignatius) of Loyola (1491-1556), and several of his companions, with the approval of pope Paul III in the bull containing the *Formula of the Institute of the Society of Jesus*, the Society of Jesus has grown to become one of the largest religious/military orders in the Roman Catholic church. In his Bull of Authorization pope Paul III declared the Society of Jesus to be a “*Regimen Ecclesiae militantis*.” Loyola referred to his order’s efforts as “military service for God.” (108)

As of 2013, there were about 17,287 known Jesuits (not including assistants and informants) serving in 112 nations on six continents. The headquarters (General Curia) of the Society is located at the Collegio del Gesu of the Church of the Gesu in Rome. The Superior General of the order is Adolfo Nicolas (2013). (109) Jesuits are actively involved in the fields of education (universities, colleges, high schools); “renewal” ministries (including retreats, conferences, etc.); propagation of the Roman Catholic faith; “defending” the Roman Catholic faith; political influence; human rights and social[ist] justice. The society operates more than fifty schools in the United States.

In 1911 it was reported in the *Encyclopedia Britannica* that there were six grades in the Society of Jesus which were known to the public. These included: 1. Professed of the four vows (priests) 2. Professed of the three vows (priests) 3. Spiritual coadjutors (priests) 4. Temporal coadjutors (lay brothers) 5. Scholastics (students preparing to be priests) 6. Novices (110)

The late Irish Roman Catholic priest Malachi Martin (1921-1999) was a Vatican insider and expert regarding the Roman Catholic religion. Martin was a former Jesuit priest and professor at the Vatican’s Pontifical Biblical Institute. In his book entitled *THE JESUITS The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church*, which he dedicated to “Our Lady of Fatima,” Mr. Martin described what he referred to as “the pyramid of authority” within the Jesuit order. These are: The General Congregation: an international assembly of Jesuits (the supreme legislative body of the Society) > The Superior General > Professed Priests > Spiritual Coadjutors (priests) > Lay Brothers > Scholastics. (111)

Martin’s book about the Jesuits was published in 1987. It is worth noting that in this book Martin mentioned only four grades in the Society. He did not distinguish between the Professed with three vows and the Professed with four vows. This fourth vow is “a special vow of obedience to the Pope.” (112) Also, Martin did not include the Novices as a separate category.

Author Malachi Martin noted, “In spite of the legislative superiority of the General Congregation, usually the Congregations give very extensive powers to the Father [Superior] General. Nevertheless, as the Congregation goes, so goes the whole Society. In accepting candidates for a position in his Society, and in making sure that once accepted they would acquire the mind and spirit of the society, Inigo relied chiefly on the religious efficacy of his book, *Spiritual Exercises*. Candidates, once they were allowed to enter as trainees, were put through the *Exercises* for a period of time varying between eight and thirty days. It was then

that they were made to understand the specific call of a Jesuit by meditating on the foundational Ignatian ideas of the Kingdom, the divine leader, the Enemy Archangel, and the Warfare, as well as Jesuit ideas of obedience to Superiors and to the Pope. Some commentators, having examined the *Exercises* and the Novitiate process as Ignatius set it up, have been thoroughly anachronistic, describing the entire process in terms of that modern horror, brainwashing....' (113)

Moreover, Martin pointed out that, "Inigo destined his Society to reproduce in its working existence that hierarchic principle whereby "the lower submits to the higher," and where all elements were bound together in recognition of higher authority and therefore readiness to obey. He intended the members of his Order to be bound together by a mystical [occult] union of hearts and wills in voluntary subordination, subjects to Superiors, Superiors to the Father General, the Father General to the whole Society, the whole Society to the Pope..." (114)

In the beginning of the twentieth century, the Society of Jesus was regarded as a mendicant order of clerks regular. In the *Encyclopedia Britanica* (1911) we read, "They are declared to be mendicants and enjoy all the privileges of the other mendicant orders. They are governed and live by constitutions and rules, mostly drawn up by their founder, St. Ignatius of Loyola, and approved by the popes. Their proper title is "Clerks Regulars of the Society of Jesus," the word *Societas* being taken as synonymous with the original Spanish term, *Compania*; perhaps the military term *Cohorts* might more fully have expressed the original idea of a band of spiritual soldiers living under martial law and discipline..." (115) Loyola referred to his Order as "The Company of Jesus." (116) The society of Jesus is truly a highly disciplined, educated army with "unconditional loyalty" to the Superior General of the Order and the Pope.

Although Jesuits have served Rome in many notable works of education and charity through the years, there is a dark side to their endeavors which the leadership of the Roman Catholic church would prefer that we not know. The Society of Jesus was established to operate as a Counter-Reformation organization. It is a distinctly Anti-Protestant Society. Loyola's aim was to wipe out Protestantism and Protestants (including Ana-Baptists/Baptists and Evangelicals) throughout the world. Their agenda has been advanced by six methods: 1. Education 2. Dialogue/Relationship 3. Counseling 4. Infiltration 5. Surveillance/Data Collecting 6. Assassinations

After an injury in the French siege of the Citadel of Pamplona had ended his military career, Ignatius of Loyola dedicated himself to the Black Madonna in the Benedictine Monastery in Montserrat. (117) Later, he began receiving from the Devil symbolic visions which were clearly contrary to the teachings of the Holy Bible. During these visions, Loyola alleged that Mary and Jesus appeared to him. (118) It is noteworthy that the apostle Paul warned Christians that Satan often appears as an "angel of light" in order to deceive and mislead people (2 Corinthians 11:14-15). These visions had a major impact on his teachings and inspired ideas which helped Ignatius develop a system of mind control known as "The Spiritual Exercises." These occult "Exercises" condition the minds of those being trained. The aim is submission and obedience at all times to the Superior General (the Black Pope). Loyola's teachings became the basis of Jesuitism.

One of the most powerful tools used by the Jesuits to gain dominion over kings, queens, princes, princesses, judges, military officers and the common people is auricular



confession. By means of this method a strong influence, control and bondage over the soul of the penitent by the Jesuit father-confessor develops. In his book entitled *THE POWER AND SECRET of THE JESUITS* from the section "The Way to World Domination" Rene Fulop Miller explained, "In this sense Ignatius in Manresa had also attributed especial importance to confession, for, UNDER THE INFLUENCE OF ANCIENT MYSTICAL WRITINGS, he had striven to receive the communion sacrament as often as possible. Now, however, the idea of the examination of conscience, OF THE CONSTANT AND SYSTEMATIC SUPERVISION OF THE MOVEMENTS OF THE SOUL, STOOD OUT MORE AND MORE STRONGLY, FOR IN EVERY EXAMEN CONSCIANTIAE PRECEEDING ABSOLUTION, THE PENITENT WAS COMPELLED TO DISCLOSE HIS WHOLE SOUL TO THE FATHER-CONFESSOR, AND TO ENUMERATE HIS OFFENCES AGAINST THE LAWS OF THE CHURCH; IN THIS CONDITION OF MORE OR LESS COMPLETE CONTRITION, THE FATHER-CONFESSOR MUST APPEAR AS AN ALL POWERFUL JUDGE, ENDOWED WITH THE POWER TO BIND OR TO LOOSE; IF THIS JUDGE THEN ADMONISHED OR COUNSELLED THE PENITENT, HE MIGHT WELL ACQUIRE FULL ASCENDANCY OVER THE PENITENT'S SOUL...

...Ignatius himself set the example. When he preached in the church of Santa Maria de la Strada in Rome, he was able, in spite of his defective knowledge of Italian, so to move his audience that, driven by repentance, they hastened in large numbers to the confessional to obtain there forgiveness for their sins [from the Roman Catholic priests]...

...But as the number of the penitents won over by the Jesuits grew larger and larger, so too grew up in them the knowledge that, though power over the souls of the masses was important, it was still more important TO WIN THE MASTERY OF THOSE FEW MEN IN INFLUENTIAL PLACES ON WHOM THE FATE OF NATIONS DEPENDED. THE REAL POLITICAL ROLE OF THE JESUITS STARTED ONLY FROM THE MOMENT WHEN THEY BEGAN TO DOMINATE THE CONSCIENCES OF KINGS AND PRINCES. THE WAY TO WORLD DOMINATION, WHICH HAD FIRST OF ALL LED THEM FROM DIRECT CHARITY TO ORGANIZED SOCIAL-WELFARE WORK, NOW BROUGHT THEM UP AGAINST NEW AIMS, IN THAT THE ACTIVITY OF THE ORDER WAS APPLIED MORE AND MORE TO THE SPIRITUAL GUIDANCE OF PRINCES, FOR THE ORDER OF THE JESUITS FROM NOW ON RECOGNIZED IN THE RULERS THE PERSONIFICATION OF THE WHOLE NATION...

...Ignatius soon perceived with great distinctness the historical mission of the Society he had created. When it first became the task of Ignatius and his disciples to act as CONFESSORS TO PRINCES, there was in the beginning some doubt whether the acceptance of such high positions was compatible with their vow of humility. Ignatius, however, soon rid himself of this scruple, and ORDERED HIS DISCIPLES IN NO CASE TO DECLINE THE OFFICE OF COURT CONFESSOR. In the year 1553, he wrote to Miron, the provincial of the order at Lisbon: "The public interest and the service of God can only gain by this, for the members participate in the well-being of the head, subjects in the well-being of the prince; therefore spiritual help is in no case so well applied as in this..."

...In the meantime, they continued with their preaching to the people, but only in those places, as, for example, on their missions, where it served to obtain for the Jesuits entry into a foreign territory and the confidence of the masses. In other countries, where they had already

gained a footing, street and popular preaching was later practiced almost wholly for the purpose of training the young novices of the order...

...When the Jesuits of Cologne spent too much time on popular missions in the country, Ignatius censured them expressly for it, and wrote that such activity was only to be recommended as a beginning. Nothing was worse than to pursue trivial successes, and thereby to lose sight of the great tasks; the Jesuits had far higher aims to strive after than the mere conversion of peasants...

...THESE HIGHER AIMS CONSISTED FOR THE MOST PART IN THE CONQUEST AND ENDURING GUIDANCE OF SECULAR AND SPIRITUAL AUTHORITIES ON WHOM, IN A TIME OF EVER STRONGER [ROMAN] ABSOLUTISM, FINALLY DEPENDED EVERY IMPORTANT DECISION EVEN IN MATTERS OF FAITH.” (119) HAVE THEIR STRATEGIES CHANGED IN THE TWENTY-FIRST CENTURY? HOW MANY ROMAN CATHOLIC SECULAR AND SPIRITUAL AUTHORITIES DO THE JESUITS CURRENTLY INFLUENCE AND GUIDE?

Loyola was a powerful and persuasive leader. However, his source of power was *the Devil*. The mind of Ignatius was infiltrated and illuminated by *Satan*. How do we know? Because Loyola led many away from biblical salvation and obedience to the Scriptures of truth. In addition, he and his followers, working in coordination with the “Holy Office of the Inquisition” of the Vatican, engaged in and assisted with many acts of persecution; oppression; discrimination; intimidation; unjust arrests; cruelty; assaults; tortures; deceptions; thefts of properties; murders and massacres of Protestants, Baptists, Evangelicals and Jews.

But were not these deeds in service to the Roman pope in order to oppose the spread of heresy? Referring to the false religious teachers of his time, Jesus proclaimed, “*The thief [the Devil’s false teacher] cometh not, but for to steal [seize the assets of others], and to kill [murder people], and to destroy [burn their homes, clothes, destroy their businesses, crops, food supplies, etc.]: I [the true Jesus of the Bible] am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly.*” The first part of John 10:10 is exactly what the Jesuits, their helpers and the armies of the popes have done to Protestants, Baptists and Jews for centuries. Now, notice the huge contrast between the works of Rome and the works of the true Jesus of the Scriptures in the second half of John 10:10. Jesus said, “*I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly.*” See also Matthew 11:28-30; 12:14, Luke 9:54-56 and John 8:12, 8:44-47.

We see this same contrast of spirits revealed when Jesus rebuked His *disciples* in Luke 9:54-56. In this text we find James and John upset because people in a village of Samaria had not received their Lord. These *disciples* asked Jesus, “*Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come down from heaven, and consume them, even as Elias did?*” Jesus immediately rebuked them saying, “*Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of. For the Son of man [Jesus] is not come to destroy men’s lives, but to save them.*”

Tragically, not understanding or experiencing the forgiveness of sins from Jesus Himself on the basis of His one time, completed, eternal atonement for our sins (Romans 3:22-26; 5:1-11; 8:1, 2 Corinthians 5:21, Hebrews 10:10-14, 1 Peter 3:18, 1 John 1:9; 2:2), one of the practices of Ignatius de Loyola was self-flagellation (self-abuse). He would whip himself each evening as an act of penance to pay for his past sins. (120) “Penance” (in place of the biblical teaching of repentance) is one of the seven sacraments of the Roman Catholic religion.

In the light of their past actions toward Protestants, Baptists, Evangelicals and Jews, we must ask which light is it that the sons of Loyola are following? Are they following Jesus Christ – the true *“light of the world,”* (John 8:12) or is the light they follow *“an angel of light”* (a false light – *Satan* – 2 Corinthians 11:14)? Our Lord Jesus Christ taught, *“Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them* (the true *disciples* of Jesus – Matthew 7:20-27).” What does the real Jesus Christ of the Bible think of Loyola and his followers? This is made clear in John 8:44. In this Bible passage Jesus rebuked the murderous religious leaders of His time. Christ proclaimed, *“Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.”*

Likewise, the apostle John declared, *“In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother. For this is the message that ye heard from the beginning, that we should love one another. Not as Cain, who was of that wicked one [Satan], and slew his brother. And wherefore slew he him? Because his own works were evil, and his brother’s righteous. Marvel not, my brethren, if the world hate you. We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren. He that loveth not his brother abideth in death. Whosoever hateth his brother is a murderer: and ye know that no murderer hath eternal life abiding in him.”* (1 John 3:10-14)

Loyola maintained amazing self-discipline and devotion to the Roman pope. He vowed to go anywhere and do anything the pope requested (including murdering and/or helping to murder Protestants and Baptists) for “the greater glory of God.” In service to the pope, Loyola’s plan was for the Jesuits to become the confessors and counselors of those with wealth and political power and the teachers of their children. With the official approval and recognition of pope Paul III in September of 1540, the new Order of the Society of Jesus was established as an official Counter-Reformation arm of the Vatican. (121) The mission of the Jesuits was made very clear. Working in coordination with the Order of the Dominicans and the “Holy Office of the Inquisition,” they were to help search out and destroy Protestantism, Protestants, and Ana-Baptists by every means possible. Then, in areas “infested” by Protestantism and Ana-Baptist teachings, communities were to be re-indoctrinated in Roman Catholicism. Many Roman Catholics who were opposed to the Protestant Reformation and Ana-Baptist Movement were drawn to Ignatius de Loyola, and the number of his followers increased rapidly in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries. Many of the early Jesuits held an intense and fanatical allegiance to Loyola.

After the death of Loyola, the political power and influence of the Jesuits continued to grow to the point where even the popes and monarchs themselves feared the Jesuits. In *The Jesuits* author J. C. H. Aveling noted, “...the Society of Jesus was the spearhead of the aggressive Catholic Counter-Reformation of the 16<sup>th</sup> and 17<sup>th</sup> centuries. In the 18<sup>th</sup> century it had suffered a mysterious eclipse. But in the 19<sup>th</sup> and early 20<sup>th</sup> centuries it had revived to become the main dynamic force in modern Roman Catholicism.” (122)

Operating behind the scenes with the pope in the forefront, the Superior General of the Society of Jesus became the real power broker of the Vatican. By the mid-twentieth century, this Order had grown to become a powerful force in the Vatican, in the academic world

(universities, colleges, seminaries) and among the government leaders of many nations. By 1965 there were more than 36,000 Jesuits. During the Reagan Administration, due to the joint efforts of the Jesuits, former CIA director George H. W. Bush and pope John Paul II, on 10 January, 1984 full, official diplomatic relations between the United States and the Vatican were established. The consequences of this political pay-back have been far-reaching.

How did this federal government policy change impact conditions in the United States? In violation of the religious establishment clause of the U.S. Constitution, the United States government thereby officially recognized the Roman Catholic religion over and above other churches and religions in the United States who were not given this special status. This special recognition provided the agents of Rome, the Jesuit Order, with diplomatic privileges and rights not granted to Protestant and Baptist ministers in America. This special status opened the door for the agents of the Holy See to have more political influence and power in agencies of the federal government and among foreign governments as well. The result has been that the agents of Rome are now given preferential treatment as representatives of a foreign nation/state. Thus, the political and religious agenda of the Vatican for America was thereby greatly advanced. More tax money was granted to Roman Catholic projects and charities, etc. And their power and influence has continued to grow unchecked. Consequently, already a very wealthy business, the Roman Catholic church again multiplied its wealth and political power using “power politics” in the United States.

Shortly thereafter, on 6 November 1986 The Immigration and Control Act was enacted which enabled about three million illegal immigrants (most of whom were from nations dominated by Roman Catholicism) to be granted U.S. citizenship. It is no coincidence that this legislation was recommended by a “bi-partisan” commission on Immigration Reform chaired by Theodore Hesburgh who was a Roman Catholic priest of the Congregation of Holy Cross and president of the University of Notre Dame. In addition, it should not surprise us to find that the Roman Catholic, Democrat Attorney/Congressman Romano Mazzoli, a graduate of the University of Notre Dame, was a co-sponsor of the legislation (known as the Simpson-Mazzoli Act) and chaired an immigration subcommittee in Congress at the time. (123) (124)

And it is not only in the halls of the U.S. Senate, Congress or in the classrooms of American universities where the Vatican is exerting influence, but, also at the United Nations. In his book *New World Religion* author Gary Kah pointed out, “One way the Vatican is helping the U.N. is by training its future diplomats. Through Seton Hall University’s international program on diplomacy, the Vatican has an unusual arrangement with the United Nations Association (U.S.A.) to educate tomorrow’s global leaders to operate within the U.N. system. As one of the largest Catholic Universities in the U.S., Seton Hall is the only institution of its type holding this special status. (See Exhibit R.)

This close partnership further implies that the U.N. is serving as a political instrument of the Vatican. Aware of this spiritual/political alliance, former U.N. Secretary-General Dag Hammarskjöld articulated that “there were two Popes on this planet: a spiritual Pope in Rome and a civilian Pope in New York, namely, the Secretary-General of the U.N. <sup>26</sup>” (125)

In the book entitled *Final Authority* chapter VIII, *Enter, the Jesuits*, William Grady reported, “It is in the arena of world politics that the Jesuit is most adept. His reputation for subterfuge, espionage, subversion and worse is well-known to the serious student of history. Fifty-one documented expulsions from the governments of this world is a good

indication that Jesuit missionaries do more than simply pass out tracts.<sup>48...</sup>

...In fact, the sons of Loyola are so diabolical that they have even been ousted from fanatically Catholic countries. On April 6, 1762, France gave them the boot describing their doctrines as: Perverse, a destroyer of all religious and honest principles, insulting to Christian morals, pernicious to civil society, hostile to the rights of the nation, the royal power, and even the security of the sovereigns and obedience of their subjects; suitable to stir up the greatest disturbances in the States, conceive and maintain the worst kind of corruption in men's hearts.<sup>49...</sup>

...The secret to the Jesuits' longevity in the face of such wide-spread resistance has been their willingness to continually re-enter the various countries wherever and whenever possible. Lamenting such a resurgence of Jesuit activity, John Adams wrote to Thomas Jefferson in 1816: I am not happy about the rebirth of the Jesuits. Swarms of them will present themselves under more disguises ever taken by even a chief of the Bohemians, as printers, writers, publishers, school teachers, etc. If ever an association of people deserved eternal damnation, on this earth and in hell, it is this Society of Loyola.<sup>50...</sup>

...Of their numerous sinister practices, none is as shocking to civilized men and women as the official Jesuit sanction for *political assassination*. A few lines from [Jesuit] Suarez will shed light on the acrimony of Adams: It is permitted to an individual to kill a tyrant in virtue of the right of self-defense; for though the community does not command it, it is always to be understood that it wishes to be defended by every one of its citizens individually, and even by a stranger. Thus, after he has been declared to be deprived of his kingdom, it becomes legal to treat him as a real tyrant; and consequently any man has a right to kill him.<sup>51...</sup>

...It should be remembered that Suarez and his fellow Jesuits looked to the Pope and/or their General as having the right to declare any ruler deprived of his kingdom. Should a government head antagonize "His Holiness," a papal "thumbs down" would create a literal open season on the unfortunate official (referred to as "the minister of God" in Romans 13:4). This was precisely what precipitated the Jesuit attack on St. Bartholomew's Day. Admiral Coligny and Henry of Navarre did not appeal to the Pope, so he simply put out a "contract" on them... With the growth of Jesuit power, the countries of Europe became embroiled in one religious war after another." (126) **THE ROMAN MAFIA IN ACTION**

Explaining how Jesuits influence and manipulate government leaders, Roy Branson wrote, "When they had once molded a ruler to their will and made him the subservient instrument of their policy, they were ever at his side dictating to him the measures to be employed for the eradication of heresy and the complete reformation of his realm according to the Jesuit ideal, and they were ever ready, with full papal authority, to conduct inquisitorial work. <sup>53</sup>" (127)

Did the Jesuits have a part in inciting the horrific Thirty Years' War (1618-1648)? Yes! In *THE POWER AND SECRET of THE JESUITS* Rene Fulop Miller noted, "The Jesuits first attained political influence in Munich, for Duke William V of Bavaria, as early as the second half of the sixteenth century, took care always to discuss all his more important political affairs with his spiritual director, Mengin. Moreover, the duke had his son and heir, Maximilian, educated at the Jesuit college of Ingolstadt, and he always remained an obedient pupil of the Jesuits. ...Archduke Ferdinand of Styria, too, the future emperor, had been brought up at Ingolstadt under the care of the Jesuits, and, after leaving the college, he immediately went on a pilgrimage to Rome, accompanied by one of his teachers, in order to obtain the pope's blessing. On the way, he visited the famous shrine of Loretto, and made there a vow to do his

utmost to banish Protestantism from his ancestral lands of Styria, Carinthia and Carniola. Scarcely had he assumed his sovereignty in Graz when he subordinated himself entirely to the counsels of his Jesuit confessor Stephan Rimel. The rector of the college at Vienna was able to report to the general of the order: "Our Father Stephan has the full confidence of the archduke, who asks and receives his advice in the most important concerns...The prince is very well-disposed to us. Whatever Father Stephan proposes to him, he carries out with the greatest pleasure..."

...The enactments of the young archduke soon showed in what direction his confessor was influencing him. Ferdinand declared that all the rights which his father had conceded to the Protestants were abolished, and banished the evangelical preachers and teachers from the land. He actually succeeded in so cowing the Styrian Diet that it no longer offered opposition to the energetic Counter-Reformation which was beginning...

...As Rimel's successor at the archducal court of Graz, Father Heinrich Blysem was appointed, and, after his departure, the office of confessor passed to the rector of Graz, Bartholomaeus Viller. His political significance became considerable when, in 1617, the Emperor Matthias had the Archduke Ferdinand crowned King of Bohemia. On Viller's advice, Ferdinand at once proceeded vigorously to oppose Protestantism in his new dominion also...

...This enterprise led, within a short time, to the outbreak of the bloody religious war which was to convulse all Europe for the next thirty years. After the "Defenestration of Prague" in 1618 had proclaimed the outbreak of open rebellion, the old Emperor Matthias immediately wished to withdraw. However, he no longer possessed the energy to oppose his opinion to the will of King Ferdinand, whom his Jesuit confessor controlled, and the last hope of a peaceable settlement of the conflict was wrecked...

...Meanwhile, THE BOHEMIAN DIET, BY A SPECIAL DECREE, HAD SOLEMNLY BANISHED THE JESUITS, WHOM THEY REGARDED AS THE ORIGINATORS OF THE CIVIL WAR, FROM THE COUNTRY. "WE LORDS, KNIGHTS, DEPUTIES OF PRAGUE, KUTTENBERG AND OTHER ESTATES," so runs this interesting document, "TOGETHER RECOGNIZE IN WHAT GREAT DANGER THIS KINGDOM OF BOHEMIA HAS STOOD EVER SINCE THE INTRODUCTION OF THE HYPOCRITICAL SECT OF JESUITS. WE HAVE, MOREOVER, FOUND IN TRUTH THAT THE ORIGINATORS OF ALL THIS MISCHIEF ARE THE ABOVE-MENTIONED JESUITS, WHO OCCUPY THEMSELVES IN CONTRIVING HOW THEY MAY STRENGTHEN THE ROMAN SEE, AND BRING ALL KINGDOMS AND LANDS UNDER THEIR POWER AND MIGHT, WHO TO THIS END EMPLOY THE MOST ILLICIT MEANS, INFLAME RULERS AGAINST ONE ANOTHER, CAUSE REBELLION AND UNREST AMONG THE ESTATES OF COUNTRIES, ESPECIALLY SUCH AS ARE OF DIFFERENT RELIGIONS, SET SUPERIORS AGAINST SUBORDINATES, SUBORDINATES AGAINST SUPERIORS....[SOUND FAMILIAR?] NOW, THEREFORE, AS THEY ARE IN THESE WAYS THE CAUSE OF THE EVIL STATE WHICH HAS BEFALLEN THE KINGDOM, THEY HAVE JUSTLY MERITED TO BE NO LONGER TOLERATED IN THE SAID KINGDOM..."

...Silesia and Moravia soon followed the example of Bohemia, and at the same time the Hungarian Protestants, provoked by the energetic Counter-Reformation work of the Jesuit Peter Pazmany, joined the Bohemian revolt...

...Even within the house of Habsburg there were in these days many conflicts to settle... After Becan's departure, Father William Lamormaini took over the office of confessor to the

Emperor Ferdinand, and as early as 1626 the papal nuncio at Vienna was able to report to Cardinal Barberini: "It is certain that the Jesuits, through the favour of the emperor, which cannot be overestimated, have attained to overwhelming power....They have the upper hand over everything, even over the most prominent ministers of state, and domineer over them, if they do not carry out their will....Their influence has always been considerable, but it has reached its zenith since Father Lamormaini has been confessor to the emperor"...The influence of Lamormaini acquired particular importance from the period of its exercise—for he held office for almost the whole duration of the Thirty Years' War...

...Meanwhile, the campaign in Lower Saxony and Denmark, the second main division of the Thirty Years' War, had also ended with uncommon success for the Catholic cause, and the emperor, on Lamormaini's advice, decided to utilize his victory to make an energetic advance against Protestantism in the empire. In the year 1629, he issued an "Edict of Restitution," by which all institutions and ecclesiastical property that had been seized by the Protestants were taken away from them again. THE EDICT ROUSED THE PROTESTANTS TO THE UTMOST OPPOSITION, and this, together with the invasion of the Swedes under Gustavus Adolphus, gave a highly unfavourable turn to the emperor's situation..." (128)

Regarding the horrors of the Thirty Years' War Mr. Grady pointed out, "The ubiquitous "Jesuit Connection" was surmised by Newman who wrote: The house of Hapsburg, in its Austrian branch, by the close of the sixteenth century, had come strongly under the influence of the Jesuits. As Archduke of Styria [1596 onward], Ferdinand, who as emperor was to play so prominent a part throughout the Thirty Years' War, carried out remorselessly the Jesuit policy in which he had been schooled from infancy by prohibiting Protestant worship, banishing the Protestant clergy, and placing before Protestant layman the alternative of conversion [or death] or exile.<sup>62</sup> Throughout these intolerant years, Ferdinand's conscience was salved by his Jesuit confessor Viller.<sup>63</sup>...

...Although the historic *Peace of Westphalia*, concluded in 1648, was essentially a victory for Protestantism, the overall loss from war-related extractions was incalculable. Newman summarizes the Jesuit-induced holocaust: The extent of the destruction of life through the Thirty Years' War cannot be estimated. If we take into account the multitudes who died of starvation and exposure, the hundreds of thousands of women and children who were slain in the sacking and destroying of the towns and cities, the fearful waste of life that must have been involved in camp – following, the deaths caused by the war would amount to many millions. In Bohemia, at the beginning of the war, there was a population of two million, of whom about eight-tenths were Protestant; at the close of the war there were about eight hundred thousand Catholics and no Protestants. Taking Germany and Austria together, we may safely say that the population was reduced by one-half, if not by two-thirds. And the deaths were in most cases the result of untold sufferings and as horrible as we can conceive. So far as the cities and towns were not utterly destroyed, they were the mere shadows of what they had been. Their buildings were dilapidated and large numbers of them unoccupied. Business of all kinds had been almost entirely destroyed. Agriculture had equally suffered. Livestock had been almost exterminated; farming implements had become scarce and rude. Desolation was everywhere.<sup>64</sup>..."

“...However, because of the inevitable westward expansion of civilization, England’s culture loomed ever larger as the Jesuits’ primary target of conquest. In 1569 the Vatican agent, William Allen, established a college in Douai (then in the Spanish Netherlands), and a second school in Rome ten years later for the training of Jesuit missionaries to Britain. Allen set forth his goals in a passionate manner: We make it our first and foremost study...to stir up in the minds of Catholics...zeal and just indignation against the heretics. This we do by setting before the eyes of the students the exceeding majesty of the ceremonial of the Catholic Church in the place where we live...At the same time we recall the mournful contrast that obtains at home: the utter desolation of all things sacred which there exists...our friends and kinsfolk, all our dear ones, and countless souls besides, perishing in schism and godlessness; every jail and dungeon filled to overflowing, not with thieves and villains but with Christ’s priests and servants, nay, with our parents and kinsmen. There is nothing, then, that we ought not to suffer, rather than to look on at the ills that affect our nation.<sup>65</sup>” (129)

Now, fast forward to the twenty-first century. Recently, as evidenced by the “resignation” of pope Benedict XVI in February 2013, and the March 2013 election of the Jesuit pope Francis (Jorge Mario Bergoglio), “the pope of a New World,” the Jesuits control the Vatican. Remember, regardless of his gracious personality, pope Francis is a Jesuit. This means that he has sworn an oath of allegiance to the Superior General of the Jesuit Order – Adolfo Nicolas [as of 2012]. POPE FRANCIS IS COMMITTED TO FULFILLING THE AGENDA OF THE JESUITS. As we consider the writings, speeches and works of Francis, Nicolas and other Jesuits, we begin to understand the long-term strategy and direction of the Society of Jesus.

Why should the plans of the Vatican and Society of Jesus concern Protestants, Baptists and Evangelicals? Because the ultimate objective of the Jesuits is known as the grand design. The plan involves global conquest by means of global unification. It is to help prepare all people, nations, governments, economies, denominations and religions for global unification under the influence and leadership of the pope in a new world order created for humanity. In order for this to occur, two actions are necessary: 1) There must be a major paradigm shift toward global unification, global citizenship and global solidarity. 2) In the United States, Constitutional freedoms (including the first and second amendments) jeopardize the plans of the Jesuits and the Vatican. These constitutional freedoms must be diminished, changed or overthrown to facilitate dominion by Rome in America. By what means?

Heavily influenced by the “Omega Point” teaching of Roman Catholic Jesuit priest Teilhard de Chardin (1881-1955), the late Roman Catholic priest and former Jesuit professor Malachi Martin in his book entitled *The Keys of This Blood The Struggle for World Dominion Between Pope John Paul II, Mikhail Gorbachev, and the Capitalist West* wrote about Pope John Paul II’s waiting for a horrific, global “fissioning [dividing] event” that would help usher in the planned “New World Order.” (130) It must be noted that Professor Martin himself referred to the result of this global “fissioning [dividing] event” as the unification of all nations in a “New World Order.” This global unification is referred to by Professor Martin as a “New World Order” numerous times in his book. (131) It is notable that United States President George H. W. Bush, Sr. was also apparently influenced by this esoteric plan and



repeatedly used the term “New World Order” during his presidency.

Mr. Martin wrote, “John Paul now saw himself as all that, and then as something more. For that key message of Fatima [prophecies] had spoken of more. “In the end,” the text of the Fatima message stated, as it wound down, quoting Mary’s words to the children, “Russia will be consecrated to me, the chastisements will cease and the world will enjoy peace for a while.” That “more” – in John Paul’s outlook – would be another era, long or short, in mankind’s history, when a grand design of God’s would be inaugurated for the society of nations. IT WOULD BE A GEOPOLITICAL UNITY OF ALL NATIONS. It would come after all the efforts of Transnationalists and Internationalists, of all the globalists, had come to utter shipwreck because of the malignant geopolitical plans of the Party-State (Communists and Marxists), which were more efficient, more thoroughly elaborated and more zealously executed than theirs. There would be general shipwreck because on both sides, not the will of the Creator and Redeemer of mankind was the absolute rule of the contender’s efforts, but primarily greed for power and indulgence in mutual fratricide. Following the shipwreck, the Grand Design of God [via the Vatican] would be executed. He, John Paul, would be the servant of that Grand Design.” (132) Thus, a future, horrific, global crisis event will help usher in a pre-planned, Vatican-approved New World Order which includes the unification of all nations.

But is such a Vatican-approved global unification plausible? See Daniel 7:23-24 and Revelation 13:7. Let’s consider some possible scenarios of change to a Roman Catholic model of the New World Order in America:

1) Forced change by means of totalitarian government force This was the methodology of religious tyranny chosen and executed by Roman popes and her agents for centuries. They used their agents in the government, military, law enforcement and national security to carry out economic discriminations; persecutions; imprisonments; tortures; property seizures; Inquisitions and holocausts to force their agenda on the people. Their religious tyranny caused numerous wars, much bloodshed and much human misery as the Vatican’s agenda was advanced. And what will be done in the future to those who refuse to unite under the influence and religious authority of Rome? What would it be like to live in a world united under the influence and religious authority of Rome?

2) Gradual change by means of new laws, incentives, dialogue and compromise/synthesis Would this new synthesis help pave the way for the rise of the Satanically empowered global leader identified in the Scriptures as *the antichrist*? According to Bible prophecies, during the future reign of *the antichrist*, the entire world will become one, united, totalitarian State (Daniel 7:23-25, 2 Thessalonians 2:1-12, Revelation 13). This seems to fit the Roman Catholic model perfectly.

3) Voluntary change But why would we want to serve the pope or follow the Jesuit model of authority? Is the religious office of the pope a biblical office established by Jesus or is it an unbiblical office usurping authority not granted by Christ Jesus in the Scriptures of truth? Is the Jesuit model of authority a biblical model of authority or an unbiblical model of authority? See Matthew 23:9, John 10:10, 1 Timothy 6:14-15 and 1 Peter 5:1-3. Also, what would become of our God-given freedoms?

In reality, Jesuitism is a system of totalitarianism. Jesuits are trained to have absolute submission to the commands of their Superiors. This is a mafia-type mindset applied in the context of religion. At times, their own judgment, conscience, will, views, and intellect are set

aside to obey the will of their Superior. They are indoctrinated in a spirit of “blind obedience” to their authority. For example, Rule 13 of Ignatius’ *Rules for Thinking with the Church* said: “That we may be altogether of the same mind and in conformity if the [Roman] Church shall have defined anything to be black which to our eyes appears to be white, we ought in like manner to pronounce it to be black.” (133)

Subsequently, with this mindset, conformity to superiors and/or the Roman Catholic church is more important than obedience to biblical truth for the Jesuit. If the Roman church or the Society declares something to be true, though, in reality, it is false, the Jesuit accepts it as true. Likewise, if the Roman church or the Society pronounces an action to be morally right, even though the Holy Bible identifies it as sin, the Jesuit is obliged to regard the action as good and pleasing to God if it advances the objectives of the Order. For the centuries old Jesuit concept is that the end justifies the means. In fact, Jesuits are required to view the “Reverend Father General of the Society of Jesus” as “holding the place of God” in their lives. Thus, the command of the Superior General is as the command of God in their indoctrination of blind obedience.

Jesuitism has been described as ultramontaniam. Yet, this definition is inadequate to describe the horrific conditioning of the Jesuit mind. The Jesuit order is a system of religious totalitarianism and mind control in which its members are conditioned to give absolute and supreme allegiance and obedience first and foremost to the commands of the superior general and the Roman pope. Regardless of what Jesuits are commanded to do, absolute obedience to their superior is required.

In his book *THE SECRET HISTORY OF THE JESUITS* Edmond Paris observed, “The famous “perinde ac cadaver” (as a corpse in the undertaker’s hands), can be found in all “spiritual literature” according to Mr. Folliet, and even in the East, in the Haschichins’ Constitution; the Jesuits are to be in the hands of their superiors “as a staff obeying every impulse; as a ball of wax which can be shaped and stretched in any direction; as a small crucifix being lifted and moved at will”, these pleasant formulas are none the less very enlightening...

Remarks and explanations from the creator of this Order leave us without any doubt as to their true meaning. Besides, amongst the Jesuits, not only the will, but also reasoning and even moral scruple, must be sacrificed to the primordial virtue of obedience which is, according to Borgia, “the strongest rampart of Society.” “Let us be convinced that all is well and right when the superior commands it,” wrote Loyola. And again, “Even if God gave you an animal without sense for master, you will not hesitate to obey him, as master and guide, because God ordained it to be so.” And something even better: the Jesuit must see in his superior not as a fallible man, but Christ Himself. J. Huber, professor of Catholic theology in Munich and author of one of the most important works on the Jesuits, wrote: “Here is a proven fact, the ‘Constitutions’ repeat five hundred times that one must see Christ in the person of the [Superior] General.” [34]...

...The discipline of the Order, assimilated so often to that of the army, is then nothing compared to the reality. “Military obedience is not the equivalent of jesuitic obedience; the latter is more extensive as it gets hold of the whole man and is not satisfied like the other, with an exterior act, but requires the sacrifice of the will and laying aside of one’s own judgment.” [35]...Mr. Boehmer wrote, “In the additions to the “Constitutions” the superiors are advised to command the novices, as God did with Abraham, things apparently criminal, to prove them but they must proportion these temptations to each one’s strength. It is not difficult to imagine

what could be the results of such an education.” [36]”...(134)

AS A RESULT OF THIS FALSE INDOCTRINATION OF LOYOLA, JESUITS HAVE ACTIVELY PARTICIPATED IN MAFIA-TYPE ACTIONS AGAINST THOSE ROME LABELS PROTESTANTS AND HERETICS. MANY OF THEIR ACTIONS ARE WHAT THE SCRIPTURES IDENTIFY AS THE SINFUL WORKS OF SPIRITUAL DARKNESS. THE “MEN IN BLACK” (JESUITS) have actively opposed the conversion of people to our Lord Jesus Christ in *churches* that are not Roman Catholic, proclamation of the biblical *gospel*, biblical discipleship and biblical Christianity. Just as the Pharisees and scribes in the days of Jesus worked to prevent people from entering into God’s true *kingdom* by authentic spiritual birth through believing the biblical *gospel* and biblical teachings, so, likewise, do the Jesuits in our time (Matthew 23:9-15). From the start, Jesuits have actively participated in the Counter-Reformation. This includes “Inquisitions” and “infiltrations” approved by the popes, resulting in many atrocities done against those they label “Protestants,” “heretics” or “liberals.”

Over the centuries, the persecutions and oppressions of Rome toward Protestants, Baptists, Evangelicals and Jews number in the millions. And the Jesuits have often had a part in these. During past Inquisitions, wars and holocausts, exerting considerable influence over members of their flock in positions of authority, the priests of Rome have requested, ordered and, at times, even participated in: unjust arrests; unjust incarcerations; interrogations with deceptive entrapments; assaults; tortures; rapes; assassinations; mass murder/massacres; bombings; thefts of properties; lying/false accusations; deceptions; espionage; inciting of revolts; overthrow of Protestant governments; forced conversion of people to Romanism; harassment/intimidation; and numerous other crimes against humanity. In fact, throughout the history of the order, Jesuits often requested Inquisitions and persecutions against those labeled “Protestants” and “heretics” in countries in which they have operated. (135) (136) See the teachings of Jesus in the New Testament which condemn their evil works found in Mark 7:6-9 and John 8:40-47; 10:10. Read 1 John 2:3-6 and 1 John 3:10-15.

Does the Society of Jesus really operate like A ROMAN MAFIA? Please allow me to share one of many testimonies which have led us to the view that this organization should be regarded as a mafia. In the book entitled *Baptist Faith and Martyrs’ Fires* author W. J. Burgess reported, “Ameken Von de Hove was an Anabaptist and was buried alive at Brussels, in 1597. The high court, in company with some Jesuits, (members of the so-called Society of Jesus,) went with her to the hole dug outside the city. When they had covered her lower extremities with earth, the Jesuits called upon her to recant. She refused to deny her Lord, so the work went on, they still calling upon her to renounce her faith, until they threw the earth upon her face, and heaped it over her head and finally with deadly hate stamped upon it with their feet.” (137)

We are reminded of the involvement of the Jesuits of Trier in assisting Balthasar Gerard to develop a plan for assassinating the Dutch Protestant leader of Independence William I of Orange. The assassination was carried out in 1584. (138) Again, we find Jesuits Henry Garnet and Oswald Tesemond (known as Greenwall) involved in yet another plan to kill Protestant leaders and start a revolt. In the Gunpowder Plot of 1605 more than a dozen Roman Catholics led by Robert Catesby, with the Jesuits fully aware of the plan, conspired to blow up King James I and the members of the English parliament in the parliament house. Thirty-six barrels of gunpowder were discovered directly under the House of Lords hidden under coals. It was reported that Jesuit Henry Garnet asked for prayers. “for some good success for

the Catholic cause at the beginning of parliament” before the plot was to be completed at the beginning of parliament. In addition, at that time, it was known by authorities in England that the Jesuits had already been “implicated in treasonable correspondence with Spain” and “other plots” against the English government. (139)

Subsequently, author Edmond Paris pointed out the mafia-type authority structure of the Jesuit order. It enables us to understand how Jesuits justify their crimes against “Protestants” and “infidels.” Paris explained, “After 1558, Lainez, the subtle tactician of the [Anti-Protestant] Council of Trent, was made general of the Congregation with the power to organize the Order as he was inspired. The “Declarations” which he himself composed with Salmeron, were added to the “Constitutions” to form a commentary; they accentuated even more the despotism of the [superior] general elected for life. An admonitor procurator and assistants, residing in Rome too, will help him generally to administer the Order...Only the admonitor [overseer] and assistants are nominated by the Congregation. The [superior] general appoints all other officials, promulgates the ordinances which are not to modify the Constitutions, administers the wealth of the Order according to his own wishes and directs its activities for which he is responsible to the pope only.

To this militia so tightly knit in the hand of its chief and which needs the greatest autonomy to make its actions effective, the pope concedes privileges which may seem exorbitant to other religious Orders. By their Constitutions, the Jesuits were exempt from the cloistered rule which applied to the monastic life in general. In fact, they are monks living “in the world” and, outwardly, nothing distinguishes them from the secular clergy. But, contrary to this and other religious congregations, they are not subjected to the bishop’s authority. As early as 1545, a bull of Paul II enabled them to preach, hear confession, dispense the sacraments, and say mass; in short, exercise their ministry without having to refer to the bishop...They have the power to give absolution, change vows for others which are easier to fulfill, or even cancel them.

Mr. Gaston Bally writes, “The [superior] general’s power concerning absolution and dispensations is even wider. He can lift all punishment inflicted on the members of the Society before or after them entering the Order, absolve all their sins,...The [superior] general absolves, in person or through a delegate, all those who are under his obedience...He also absolves the irregularity issuing, from bigamy, injuries done to others, murder, assassination...as long as these wicked deeds were not publicly known and the cause of a scandal. [38]” (140)

Moreover, Mr. Paris added, “Finally, Gregory XIII bestowed on the Company the right to deal in commerce and banking, a right it made use of extensively later on. These dispensations and unprecedented powers were fully guaranteed to them. The popes called even upon princes and kings to defend these privileges; they threatened with the great excommunication “*latae sententiae*” all those who would try to infringe them. In 1574, a bull of Pius V gave the [superior] general the right to restore these privileges to their original scope, against all tempts to alter or curtail them, even if such curtailments were authoritatively documented by papal revocation...

...By granting the Jesuits such exorbitant privileges which run counter to the Church’s antiquated constitution, the papacy wanted, not only to supply them with powerful weapons to fight the “infidels,” but especially use them as a bodyguard to defend her own unrestricted

power in the Church and against the Church. To preserve the spiritual and temporal supremacy they usurped during the middle ages, the popes sold the Church to the Order of Jesus and, in consequence, surrendered themselves into their hands...If the papacy was supported by the Jesuits, the whole existence of the Jesuits depended on the spiritual and temporal supremacy of the papacy. In that way, the interests of both parties were intimately bound together. [39] ...

...But this select cohort needed secret auxiliaries to dominate civil society: this role fell on those affiliated to the Company called Jesuits. "Many important people were connected in that way with the Society: the emperors Ferdinand II and Ferdinand III, Sigismund III, king of Poland, who had officially belonged to the Company; Cardinal Infant, a duke of Savoy. And these were not the least useful." [40] It is the same today,...official members of the Society operate all over the world in the capacity of her personnel, OFFICERS OF A TRULY SECRET ARMY CONTAINING IN ITS RANKS HEADS OF POLITICAL PARTIES, HIGH RANKING OFFICIALS, GENERALS, MAGISTRATES, PHYSICIANS, FACULTY PROFESSORS, ETC., ALL OF THEM STRIVING TO BRING ABOUT, IN THEIR OWN SPHERE, "OPUS DEI," GOD'S WORK, IN REALITY THE PLANS OF THE PAPACY." (141)

Thus, three notable concerns emerge as we evaluate the Society of Jesus:

1) Jesuits are conditioned with a mafia-type mindset; 2) Jesuits are based in a mafia-type authority structure.; 3) Jesuits are trained to engage, if necessary, in mafia-type actions to advance the Society's agenda. Consequently, in practice, the Jesuit Order is nothing less than A ROMAN MAFIA. The Society of Jesus is a society of religious tyranny.

In the book *GOD'S SOLDIERS Adventure, Politics, Intrigue and Power A History of the Jesuits* written by Jonathan Wright, a Roman Catholic, we observe the Anti-Protestant mindset of the Jesuits. Protestants are regarded as "God's enemies" (142). Martin Luther, a leader in the Reformation, is referred to as "the Devil of Wittenberg," (143) and his teachings are called "infernal heresy." (144) In like manner, on page 27 we read about "Calvinists and their demonic allies..." (145) In addition, we find mentioned on page 34 "the rebellions of Luther and Calvin,..." (146)

Describing the history of the Jesuit priests Mr. Wright wrote, "In seminaries across Europe, the Society of Jesus would train priests (Jesuits and non-Jesuits alike) destined for careers on the front lines of counterreformation; their duty, as laid down in 1552, to "search out the hidden venom of heretical doctrine and to refute it, and then to replant the uprooted trunk of the tree of faith." <sup>35</sup> Many of the first Jesuit missionary initiatives in England, Bohemia, France, Hungary, Germany and Poland sought to take the battle directly to the Protestant enemy [WITH THE AID OF INQUISITIONS AND HOLOCAUSTS], to win back souls from Lutheranism and Calvinism and shore up the resolve of those Catholics most immediately at risk of falling into schism..." (147)

Writing about the historical Jesuit method of operation Mr. Wright observed, "Even education could, on occasion, emerge as a bona fide Reformation battleground. It was no coincidence that Jesuit schools were established in Toulhouse and Lyons during the 1560's in the immediate aftermath of violent attacks on local Protestant communities. Having massacred four thousand Protestants, the Catholic population of Toulhouse would happily turn to the Jesuits to revitalize the educational dimension [i.e. reindoctrination in Roman

Catholicism] of its social infrastructure.” (148)

Furthermore, noting the incredible historical influence on government leaders and Roman Catholic education carried out by the Jesuits, Mr. Wright reported, “But what, beyond patronage and putti, did the Jesuits do? By the mid-seventeenth century they had a virtual monopoly in the role of confessor to the likes of the kings of France and the dukes of Bavaria, and although it was not part of their original brief, they were now a dominant force in the education of the Catholic world. This development, which inevitably meant setting up permanent educational establishments,..it became the first religious order of the Catholic Church to adopt formal education as a significant ministry...” (149)

Also, in his book Edmond Paris referred to numerous documents which demonstrate the support given by Pope Pius XII, the Roman Catholic bishops and Catholic theologians Michael Schmaus and Franz Von Papen during the rise of the Nazi regime in Germany, and the impact of the 8 July 1933 Concordat between the Vatican and the Nazi Reich. Paris noted, “The bishops, made to take an oath of allegiance to Hitler by the Concordat, always tried to excel each other in their “devotion”: “Under the Nazi regime, we constantly find the fervent support of the [Roman Catholic] bishops in all the correspondence and declarations from ecclesiastical dignitaries.” [6]...This document proves the primordial part played by the Catholic Church in Hitler’s rise to power; in fact, it was a pre-established arrangement. It illustrates fully the kind of monstrous agreement between Catholicism and Nazism. The hatred of liberalism, which is the key to everything, comes out clearly. In his book *Catholiques d’Allemagne*, Mr. Robert d’Harcourt of the French Academy writes: “The most vulnerable point, in all the Episcopal declarations which followed the triumphant elections [of the Nazis] of the 5<sup>th</sup> of March 1933, is found in the first official document from the church containing the signatures of all the German [Roman Catholic] bishops. We are referring to the pastoral letter of the 3<sup>rd</sup> of June 1933, in which the whole of the German episcopate is involved...”

...Listen to what Mr. Alfred Grosser, professor at the Institute of Political Studies of Paris University, says: “The very concise book of Guenter Lewy: *The Catholic Church and Nazi Germany* (New York, McGrawhill – 1964) says that all the documents agree to show the Catholic Church cooperating with the Hitler regime...In July, 1933, when the Concordat [between the Nazi government in Germany and the Vatican] forced the [Roman Catholic] bishops to swear an oath of allegiance to the Nazi government, the concentration camps were already open...the reading of quotations compiled by Guenter Lewy proves this overwhelmingly. We find in them some crushing evidence from personalities such as Cardinal Faulhaber and the Jesuit Gustav Gundlach.” [11] Only empty words can be found to oppose this stack of evidence which proves the culpability of the Vatican and its Jesuits. Their help was the main force behind the lightning rise of Hitler who, together with Mussolini and Franco [Roman Catholic dictators], who in spite of appearances were but war pawns manipulated by the Vatican and its Jesuits...” (150)

About two decades later, at the Second Vatican Council (1962-1965) Jesuits assisted in formulating a new strategy. This new, deceptive strategy included two aspects: 1) Pursuit of “ecumenical unity” among all Christians and denominations with the Roman Catholic church 2) A “global solidarity” among the world’s religions and governments with Rome.

The new strategy was designed to lead the “enlightened” “separated brethren” among the Protestants, Orthodox, Evangelicals and Baptists (formerly labeled heretics by Rome) to a “return to Rome and the Pope” via interfaith dialogue/relationship building, interfaith ministries, common ground experiences, ecumenical prayer meetings, etc. The same pro-dialogue/relationship building approach was to be used to construct mutually helpful alliances with people of other faiths (Muslims, Jews, Hindus, Buddhists, etc.).

An excellent example of the working application of this strategy is observed in the book *The Jesuits, a history* by David Mitchell. Here we find a copy of a photo of Jesuits worshipping together with Charismatics at the CATHOLIC CHARISMATIC RENEWAL 1978 NATIONAL LEADERS’ CONFERENCE held March 29<sup>th</sup> to April 2<sup>nd</sup>. Above the picture are the words, “Many Jesuits, like these in the Philippines, now make the *Spiritual Exercises* ‘in a spirit of charismatic renewal.’ (151)

A more recent example of the Jesuit ecumenical strategy in action is seen in the 2014 televised exchange of messages between Jesuit pope Francis and Word of Faith Charismatic evangelist Kenneth Copeland at a pastor’s conference. (152) During the conference, Episcopal/Catholic bishop/priest Tony Palmer presented a message advocating Christian unity among Catholics and Protestants and declared that the “protest” of the Reformation had ended. Palmer stated that, “If you’re born again, you’re a Catholic” and that “It’s division that’s diabolic.” At the conclusion of his sermon, a special message from pope Francis was presented inviting Mr. Copeland and other Charismatic church leaders and members present to join the pope in pursuing “unity” and “renewal.” Mr. Copeland stated that he “agreed” with the pope and asked all present to join in “blessing” pope Francis. This incredible dialogue can be viewed at <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=b5TwrG8B3ME>

But there were important facts that this Episcopal/Catholic bishop/priest left out of his message to the pastors:

- 1) Believers in Christ in the earliest centuries of the church were first called “*Christians*” not “Catholics” as was asserted by Tony Palmer. See Acts 11:26-27.
- 2) The Christian unity taught by Jesus in John 17:20-23 refers to unity among those who are truly saved and “in Christ” by spiritual new birth. It is not a call to unite with unsaved Roman Catholics. This would be in clear disobedience to 2 Corinthians 6:14-18.
- 3) John 17:20-23 is not a call to unite with false teachers who teach a false message of salvation such as is taught by the priests of Rome (sacerdotal salvation). This would be in clear violation of Matthew 24:4, Romans 16:17-18, Ephesians 5:11, Colossians 2:8-10 and 2 John 9-11.
- 4) John 17:20-23 was given for those who truly receive Christ’s “*words*” and are following Jesus in obedience to His “*word*” (John 17:6-8) as taught in the New Testament Scriptures (Luke 1:1-4).
- 5) John 17:20-23 is not a call to corporate unity with the false religion known as the Roman Catholic church. For a unity with falsehood is, and will always be, A FALSE UNITY – Ephesians 4:14-15.

Subsequently, by uniting with the Charismatic Movement under the banner of “Renewal,” the Jesuit Order is seeking to use the common ground of Charismatic/Pentecostal experiences to help unify all Christian groups and denominations with Rome. Even though the term “Renewal” does not carry the same meaning to a Roman Catholic as it does to an evangelical *Christian*, it doesn’t really matter. What matters to the Vatican is that it is unifying people from a broad spectrum of

Christian groups with Rome. After all, if everybody is worshipping together and praying together why not take the next step of uniting globally in other matters as well. It is this same pursuit of global unification/solidarity that the Devil is using to prepare the path for the rise and reign of the global leader known as the Antichrist and his global false prophet of Revelation chapter thirteen. I think we get the big picture. GOT GLOBAL UNITY/SOLIDARITY?

Pay close attention to what former Vatican-insider Malachi Martin wrote in 1990. Martin observed, “Later historians with access to records unavailable today will document the successes of John Paul’s end-run policies and their basic premise. Suffice it to say now that, in spite of the official prostitution of the Russian Orthodox Church to the ideological policies of the Party-State, John Paul’s efforts nourished within that Church a genuinely Christian core of prelates and people eager once and for all to reenter the mainstream of European Christianity as vindicated by papal Rome [Roman Catholicism]; and eager as well to renounce the role, accepted once upon a time by Russian Orthodox authorities, as servants of the Soviet Party-State in the fomentation of worldwide revolution...

...By the opening of the eighties, about half of the Orthodox prelates were already secretly prepared, if the opportunity were afforded, to place themselves under the ecclesial unity of the Roman pope. A sociocultural leavening had been produced within the Russian Orthodox Church. While the Vatican’s official *Ostpolitik* remained undisturbed, a deep cultural change was being effected covertly within the body of Russian Orthodox believers that could lead in the long run – as all deep cultural changes do – to sociopolitical change” (153) But our essential question is: “secretly prepared” by whom? Jesuit infiltration of a denomination?

In the Foreword to *THE SECRET HISTORY OF THE JESUITS* by Edmond Paris, we read from an ex-Jesuit priest, “The most dangerous of men are those who appear very religious, especially when they are organized and in a position of authority. They have the deep respect of the people who are ignorant of their ungodly push for power behind the scenes. These religious men [Jesuits], who pretend to love God, will resort to murder, incite revolution and wars if necessary to help their cause. They are crafty, intelligent, smooth religious politicians who live in a shadowy world of secrets, intrigue, and phony holiness...

...This religious anti-Christ spirit working through them is seen again when Ignatius de Loyola created the Jesuits to secretly accomplish two major goals for the Roman Catholic Institution: 1) universal political power, and 2) a universal (one-world) church, in fulfillment of the prophecies of Revelation 6, 13, 17 and 18...

...By the time Ignatius de Loyola arrived on the scene, the Protestant Reformation had seriously damaged the Roman Catholic system. Ignatius de Loyola came to the conclusion that the only way his “church” could survive was by enforcing the canons and doctrines on the temporal power of the pope and the Roman Catholic institution; not just by destroying the physical life of the [Protestant] people alone as the Dominican priests were doing through the Inquisition, but by infiltration and penetration into every sector of life...

...Protestantism must be conquered and used for the benefit of the popes. That was Ignatius de Loyola’s personal proposal, among others, to Pope Paul III. Jesuits immediately went to work secretly infiltrating all the Protestant groups including their families, places of work, hospitals, schools, colleges, etc. Today, the Jesuits have almost completed that mission...The Bible puts the power of a local church into the hands of a godly pastor [or pastors – Acts 14:23; 15:1-35; 20:17-28]. But the cunning Jesuits successfully managed over



the years to remove that power into the hands of denomination headquarters, and have now pushed almost all of the Protestant denominations into the arms of the Vatican. This is exactly what Ignatius de Loyola set out to accomplish: a universal church and the end of Protestantism. As you read *The Secret History of the Jesuits*, you will see there is a parallel between the religious and political sectors. The author, Mr. Paris, reveals the penetration and infiltration of the Jesuits into the governments and nations of the world to manipulate the course of history...

...Edmond Paris never knew me, but I knew him without meeting him personally when I, with other Jesuits under the extreme oath and induction, was being briefed on the names of institutions and individuals in Europe who were dangerous to the goals of the Roman Catholic Institution. His name was given to us. Works by Edmond Paris \**Le Vatican Contre la France* (The Vatican Against France) \* *Genocide in The Satellite Croatia* \* *The Vatican Against Europe* The Edmond Paris works on Roman Catholicism brought about the pledge on the part of the Jesuits to: 1) destroy him, 2) destroy his reputation, including his family, and 3) destroy his work..." (154)

Thankfully, we have been warned. Rome has sent forth thousands of "infiltrators" to Protestant, Baptist and Evangelical churches with the ungodly mission of preparing the way for unification with Rome. Whereas, genuine, Bible-believing *Christians* do not recognize the Roman Catholic office of the pope or the Jesuit office of "superior general" as valid offices in the New Testament *church*. THESE OFFICES ARE NOT FOUND IN THE HOLY SCRIPTURES OF TRUTH.

Moreover, our Lord Jesus Christ did not establish the religious office of the pope during His ministry on earth. Likewise, the apostle Peter never identified himself as a pope in the New Testament Scriptures. On the contrary, Jesus Christ Himself commanded His *disciples* to "*call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven.*" (Matthew 23:9) Thus, as Bible-obeying *Christians*, we have no "spiritual" or "holy" Father on earth to whom we confess our sins and from whom we receive forgiveness of sins. Rather, according to the Scriptures, we have only one Holy Father in Heaven to whom we confess our sins and from whom we receive forgiveness of sins (Psalm 32:5-6; 51:1-12, 1 John 1:1-10).

Furthermore, according to the Scriptures, there is only one, genuine "*head of the church.*" Our Lord Jesus Christ is the only, true "*head of the church*" recognized in the New Testament (Ephesians 5:23, Colossians 1:18, 1 Timothy 6:14-15). Subsequently, in the New Testament Scriptures, pastors and deacons are under the authority of Christ Jesus Himself not a Roman pope (Acts 14:23; 20:27-35, 1 Timothy 3:1-15, 1 Peter 5:1-5).

When a leader claims to be the head of the church on earth in place of Jesus Christ, he or she is usurping authority over "*the church*" which has not been given by God the Father. This is illegitimate headship and illegitimate authority in *the church*. As genuine *Christians*, our supreme allegiance is not to anyone who usurps the headship of Jesus Christ in *the church* on earth. We do not believe, as the Roman Catholic religion claims, that the Roman pope is the "Father of Princes and Kings", "Ruler of the World", or the "Vicar of our Savior Jesus Christ." We do not believe, as *The New York Catechism* of the Roman Catholic faith claims regarding the Roman pope, "...By divine right the pope has supreme and full power in faith and morals over each and every pastor and his flock. He is the true Vicar of Christ,

the head of the entire church, the father and teacher of all Christians. He is the infallible ruler, the founder of dogmas, the author of and judge of councils; the universal ruler of the truth, the arbiter of the world, the supreme judge of heaven and earth, the judge of all, being judged by no one, God himself on earth.”(155) Thus, the Roman Catholic religion claims that the Roman pope is the “Ruler of the World” and in place of “God himself on earth.”

Whereas, in the New Testament Scriptures we discover that the one (singular) true “head” of “*the church*” is our Lord Jesus Christ Himself. In Ephesians 5:23 the apostle Paul taught that “...*Christ is the [singular] head of the church...*” and “*the [singular] saviour of the body*” Likewise, Paul proclaimed in Colossians 1:18 that Jesus Christ “...*is the [singular] head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things he [Jesus] might have the preeminence.*” Notice in this verse that it is Jesus Christ, not the Roman pope, who is to have preeminence in “*all things*” in *the church*. Jesus is the resurrected, living Savior who is fully capable of maintaining His headship over *the church*. For He has been given “*all power*” “*in heaven and in earth*” (Matthew 28:18). And nowhere do we find in the New Testament Scriptures that our Lord Jesus Christ has delegated His headship over *the church* to any man!

Moreover, Jesus taught that God the Father “...*hath committed all judgment unto the [singular] Son [Christ Jesus]*”, “*And hath given him [singular - Jesus] authority to execute judgment...*” (John 5:22, 5:27) In fact, it was on Mars’ hill in Athens that the apostle Paul boldly proclaimed that God, “...*now commandeth all men everywhere* [“*all*” includes popes and Roman Catholics] *to repent: because he hath appointed a day, in the which he will judge the world in righteousness by that man [Jesus Christ] whom he hath ordained; whereof he hath given assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead.*” (Acts 17:30-31) Thus, *only Christ Jesus is the Supreme Judge of all*. Also, it is our Lord Jesus Christ, not the Roman pope, who is “*the king*” who will reign over an everlasting *kingdom* as set forth in Matthew 2:1-2 and Luke 1:31-32. In fact, the prophet Micah declared that this same little baby who was born in Bethlehem will be “*ruler in Israel.*”

Furthermore, it is this same resurrected Ruler, Jesus, not the Roman pope, who is “*LORD*” [Jehovah] and “*king*” in Psalm chapter two. In Isaiah 9:6 it is the only, true Messiah (Christ Jesus) of Israel, not the Roman pope, who is called, “*Wonderful, Counsellor [singular], The [singular] mighty God, The [singular] everlasting Father, The [singular] Prince of Peace.*” In addition, the apostle Paul explained that “*our Lord Jesus Christ...is the [singular] blessed and only [singular] Potentate, the [singular] King of kings, and [singular] Lord of lords;...*” in 1 Timothy 6:14-15. In the Scriptures only the *LORD* (YHWH), the God of Israel, is declared to be “*the governor among the nations*” (Psalm 22:28).

It is the ultimate sinful action of sacrilege and pride for any man (or woman) to declare or exalt himself (or herself) to be “in place of Jesus Christ on earth” as “the head of the church”, “Ruler of the World” and “in place of God himself on earth.” In the Scriptures it is said that the *antichrist*, full of pride, will oppose and exalt himself, “...*above all that is called God, or that is worshipped...*” (2 Thessalonians 2:4) Thus, it is the *antichrist* who will take this false, pagan doctrine of the deification of man to its worst level of all in the future.

But as for genuine *Christians*, above all else, our supreme allegiance must be *exclusively* to our Lord Jesus Christ (the only true *head of the church*) and obeying His Word – the Holy Bible (Matthew 4:4; 10:36-38, John 8:31-32; 17:17). Notice that Jesus said to His followers that if they continued in “my word” (the teachings of Jesus recorded in the New Testament) they were His true *disciples* (John 8:31-32).

Regarding the one world false church of the last days, God’s command is very clear. “*Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues. For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities.*” Revelation 18:4-5 In other words, God has remembered the millions of murders, assaults, tortures, thefts, lies, rapes, abuses of authority and persecutions of the Roman Catholic religion directed against His true *sheep* - Bible-believing *Christians*. Furthermore, we are reminded that a unity with falsehood was, is, and will be a false unity. Subsequently, we have no desire to unite with Romanism or the Roman Catholic church.

**BUT WHY DO JESUITS AND THEIR HELPERS REFUSE TO RECOGNIZE THE AUTONOMY OF BIBLICAL CHURCHES WHICH ARE NOT ROMAN CATHOLIC? TRAGICALLY, BECAUSE JESUITS ARE INDOCTRINATED IN HATRED AND CONTEMPT FOR THOSE REGARDED BY ROME AS PROTESTANTS AND HERETICS. THEY ARE TAUGHT TO VIEW THEM AS GOD’S ENEMIES. THEY ARE TAUGHT THAT SUCH PEOPLE ARE DIVISIVE AND IN REBELLION TO GOD BY CHOOSING NOT TO BE A PART OF THE “HOLY” ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH. THEY CANNOT COPE WITH THE FACT THAT PEOPLE CHOOSE TO LOVE AND WORSHIP GOD APART FROM ROME.**

Jesuits have been called “God’s marines,” “God’s soldiers,” “Chameleons of God” (Mitchell) and “the Rapid Deployment Force of the Church” (Martin) by Roman Catholics. But, perhaps, descriptions more accurate would read, “the pope’s assassins,” “the CIA of the Vatican” or “the agents of global religious tyranny.” As previously mentioned, Jesuits maintain an absolute allegiance and obedience, first and foremost, to the commands of their Superior General. Thus, their actions reflect the commands of their Superior General. Also, they have an extreme allegiance to the pope, Mary, and the Roman Catholic faith. Vows of loyalty to each of these are required of Jesuits.

One such “special,” murderous Jesuit oath is recorded in the Congressional Record of the United States, House Bill 1523, Contested election case of Eugene C. Bonniwell, against Thos. S. Butler, February 15, 1913, pages 3215-3216. “Ceremony of Induction and Extreme Oath of the Jesuits” from the U.S. Library of Congress. Gary Kah noted, “The following excerpts from this oath reveal the unquestionable loyalty of the Jesuits to the Pope and their commitment to eradicate Protestantism.

“I,...Now, in the presence of Almighty God, the Blessed Virgin Mary, the blessed Michael the Archangel, the blessed St. John the Baptist, the holy Apostles St. Peter and St. Paul and all the saints and sacred hosts of heaven, and to you, my ghostly father, the Superior General of the Society of Jesus...declare and swear, that his holiness the Pope is Christ’s Vicegerent and is the true and only Head of the Catholic or Universal Church throughout the earth; and that by virtue of the keys of binding and loosing, given to his Holiness by my Saviour, Jesus Christ, he hath power to depose heretical kings, princes, states, commonwealths and governments, all being illegal without his sacred confirmation and that they may safely be destroyed. Therefore, to the utmost of my power, I shall and will defend this doctrine and His

Holiness' right and custom against all usurpers of the heretical or Protestant authority...and all adherents in regard that they be usurped and heretical, opposing the sacred Mother Church at Rome...

...I do further promise and declare, that I will have no opinion or will of my own, or any mental reservation whatsoever, even as a corpse or cadaver, (*perinde ac cadaver*), but will unhesitatingly obey each and every command that I may receive from my superiors in the Militia of the Pope and of Jesus Christ...

...I furthermore promise and declare that I will, when opportunity presents, make and wage relentless war, secretly or openly, against all heretics, Protestants and Liberals, as I am directed to do, to extirpate and exterminate them from the face of the whole earth...I will secretly use the poisoned cup, the strangulating cord, the steel of the poniard [sic] or the leaden bullet, regardless of the honor, rank, dignity, or authority of the person or persons, whatever may be their condition in life, either public or private, as I at any time may be directed so to do by any agent of the Pope or Superior of the Brotherhood of the Holy Faith, of the Society of Jesus...

...In confirmation of which, I hereby dedicate my life, my soul and all my corporeal [sic] powers, and with this dagger which I now receive, I will subscribe my name written in my own blood, in testimony thereof; and should I prove false or weaken in my determination, may my brethren and fellow soldiers of the Militia of the Pope cut off my hands and my feet, and my throat from ear to ear, my belly opened and sulphur burned therein, with all the punishment that can be inflicted upon me on earth and my soul be tortured by demons in an eternal hell forever!...

...All of which I...do swear by the blessed Trinity and blessed Sacrament, which I am now to receive, to perform and on my part to keep inviolably; and do call all the heavenly and glorious host of heaven to witness these my real intentions to keep this my oath..." (156) This is only a portion of this documented Jesuit oath. In light of this data, the central question becomes: ARE JESUITS WILLING TO KILL OR HELP KILL PROTESTANTS, BAPTISTS OR EVANGELICALS IN THE TWENTY-FIRST CENTURY IF SO ORDERED BY A JESUIT SUPERIOR, THE SUPERIOR GENERAL OR THE POPE?

In the English translation of *Obras Completas de San Ignacio de Loyola* we read, "...Ignatius Loyola, founder of the Jesuit order and held in high honor by the Jesuits who today are the real masters in the Roman Church. Said he: "It would be greatly advantageous, too, not to permit anyone infected with heresy to continue in the government, particularly the supreme government, of any province or town, or in any judicial or honorary position. Finally, if it could be set forth and made manifest to all, that the moment a man is convicted or held in grave suspicion of heresy he may not be favored with honors of wealth but put down from these benefits. And if a few examples could be made, punishing a few with the penalty of their lives, or with the loss of property and exile, so there could be no mistake about the seriousness of the business of religion, this remedy would be so much more effective.... "It would be advisable that whatever heretical books might be found, on diligent search, in the possession of dealers or individuals, should be burned or removed from all the provinces of the kingdom. The same may be said of books written by heretics, even when not heretical themselves, such as those which treat of grammar or rhetoric or dialectic, which it seems, ought to be cast aside utterly out of hatred toward the heresy of their authors..." Of all rectors and public professors in universities and academies, and likewise rectors of private schools

and school teachers as well, and even tutors, it should be required that long before being accepted in their posts they should be found true Catholics, through examination or secret information, and should be recommended by the testimony of Catholics; and they should swear that they are and will always remain Catholics; and if any such men should be convicted of heresy, they should be severely punished if only on the grounds of perjury” (157)

Former Roman Catholic priest C. Chiniquy in his book *FIFTY YEARS IN THE CHURCH OF ROME* quoted General Montholon who pointed out, “The Jesuits are a *military organization*, not a religious order. Their chief is a general of an army, not a mere abbot of a monastery. And the aim of this organization is - POWER. Power in its most despotic exercise. Absolute power, universal power, power to control the world by the volition of a single man. Jesuitism is the most absolute of despotisms; and at the same time the greatest and the most enormous of abuses.” (158) (159)

Former Roman Catholic priest Jeremiah J. Crowley explained how incredibly lethal this Order is: “Here it may not be out of place to give a brief description of the Jesuits, commonly called “The Society of Jesus.” This Order is under the absolute control of its General, the “Black Pope.” They have been expelled by many European governments, and Pope Clement XIII, was even compelled by public opinion to promise their suppression, but was murdered before the fulfillment of this promise. His successor, Pope Clement XIV., was compelled by like opinion to suppress them, but was poisoned soon thereafter. Pope Pius VII., for political reasons, restored them to power, and ever since the Jesuits are the power behind the papal throne. To-day they are stronger in the United States than they ever were in any of the countries of Europe which expelled them as a menace to the government...

...*Harper's Weekly* of May 21, 1870, says of the Jesuits:

“The operations of this powerful Society embrace every part of the world, and are carried on by means of the most intricate machinery ever contrived by man...” From his residence in Rome the General directs the movements of the Society in every part of the world by means of a system in which the art of ‘*espionage*’ is brought to perfection [i.e., continual, mass surveillance – sound familiar?]. Every month or every quarter he receives reports from the heads of all the subordinate departments; and every third year the catalogues of every province, with the detailed reports on the capacity and conduct of every member, are laid before him. Besides this, the most active correspondence is maintained with all parts of the world, in order to supply the offices of the Society with the information they require. In the central house of Rome are kept voluminous registers, in which are inscribed the names of all Jesuits, of their adherents, and of all the considerable persons, whether friends or enemies, with whom they have any connection [i.e., social networking]. In these registers, we are told, ‘are reported without alteration, without\* hatred, without passion, the facts relating to the life of each individual. It is the most gigantic biographical collection that has ever been formed. The frailties of a woman, the secret errors of a statesman, are chronicled in these books [now by computer] with the same cold impartiality. Drawn up for the purpose of being useful, these biographies are necessarily exact. When the Jesuits wish to influence an individual, they have but to turn to these volumes to know immediately his life, his character, his faults, his family, his friends, his most secret ties.’ By the use of such machinery the Order has attained its high position and widespread influence...”

...The General is at the head of this black and mute militia, which thinks, wills, acts, obeys-the passive instrument of his designs. Their whole life must have but one aim-the advancement of the Order to which they are attached. From the preceding paragraphs, we can understand how Jesuitism or Romanism gets control of and “converts” women of rank, wealth and fashion; and also how politicians who are not saints, fearing exposure, are compelled to do Rome’s bidding, no matter how unpatriotic. The private lives of politicians are closely watched and recorded. Sometimes they are entrapped in order to get them in the power of Rome.” (160)

From the beginning, the Jesuits have operated under a system of “obligatory espionage.” One need only go to the “History” section of the article entitled *Jesuits* based on the 11<sup>th</sup> Edition of the Encyclopedia Britannica from 1911 at <http://www.1911encyclopedia.org/Jesuits> to read about the horrible actions of the Jesuits and their expulsions from nations in Europe and in other countries. Jesuits have been expelled more than 100 times from over 60 nations.

The Jesuits have been involved (including planning, training, surveillance) in the assassinations or attempted assassinations of: 1) Henry III in France; 2) Henry IV in France; 3) Elizabeth I in England; 4) James I in England; 5) Protestant Dutch Ruler William of Orange in 1584; 6) Protestant parliament leaders in the Gunpowder Plot in England in 1605; 7) Joseph I of Portugal; 8) Carvalho, marquis of Pombal in 1758; 9) Protestant President Abraham Lincoln in the United States in 1865; 10) Protestant King Alexander I of Yugoslavia in 1934; 11) French Foreign Minister Louis Barthou in 1934; 12) Austrian Chancellor Dollfuss in 1934; And many others (161) (162) (163)

In addition, as we study the rise and development of the Liberation Theology Movement and subsequent revolts and civil wars in Latin America during the twentieth century, we find direct involvement by the Jesuits. Already having embraced the false philosophies of Jesuit priest Pierre Teilhard de Chardin, S. J. (1881-1955) and Jesuit priest George Tyrrell, S. J. (1861-1909), many Jesuits enthusiastically embraced and advanced the new teachings of liberation theology throughout Latin America.

In 1973 Peruvian Jesuit priest Gustavo Gutierrez published his book entitled *A Theology of Liberation* in which he advocated liberation theology as an answer for the social, economic and political injustices of Latin America. Prominent proponents of liberation theology in Latin America include Jesuits Juan Luis Segundo and Jon Sobrino. In Nicaragua, inspired by the new theology of liberation, Jesuit Fernando Cardenal served as a member of the Marxist Junta. (164) Gutierrez wrote of the “preferential option for the poor” observed in the ministry of Christ Jesus. We recognize that our Savior demonstrated a special love for people in need and offered salvation and hope to them (Luke 6). But liberation theology does not truly help the poor in the long-term. Whereas, God’s solutions are tangible solutions found in the Scriptures of truth which will help those in the despair of poverty in the long-term.

Concerning helping those in poverty: We need not rob the rich in order to feed the poor. President Abraham Lincoln taught, “We do not enrich the poor by impoverishing the rich.” Yet, this is precisely what Global Socialism would do. Thankfully, we find in the Holy Bible that our God loves the poor and is fully aware of their needs, sorrows and oppressions. Our Lord Jesus gave a promise to all who will seek and follow Him. This promise is just as relevant in the twenty-first century as it was when spoken by our Savior in the first century. Regarding our basic needs of food and clothing, Jesus taught, “*But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you.*” (Matthew 6:33 KJV) The question is: Do we have faith to believe that our *LORD* is still able to keep His promise to us in

the twenty-first century?

Moreover, it must be clearly understood that liberation theology is not a true, biblical Christian teaching. It is a false, leftist political theology created by men deceived by *Satan*. Liberation theology originated in the 1960's. It is based on the teachings of several Roman Catholic teachers including Cardinal Alfonso Lopez Trujillo; Brazilian theologian from Princeton, Ruben Alves; and Peruvian Jesuit priest Gustavo Gutierrez. It is a blend of Marxism and European Masonic Religious and Political Universalism with Roman Catholic social teachings. It includes a Marxist model "*class struggle, class warfare*" approach. It proclaims a different Jesus and a different message of salvation. In place of a spiritual Redeemer (Matthew 1:21), Jesus is viewed as both a spiritual Redeemer and a social liberator. Salvation is regarded as freedom from sin and capitalist political and social oppression. This is a social[ist] gospel rather than the true *gospel* that the apostle Paul defined in 1 Corinthians 15:1-4. It is a serious issue when biblical terms such as Christ, salvation and sin are redefined in order to create a new, false, leftist political theology. Rather than being Christ-centered and Bible-based (Ephesians 1:11-12, Colossians 1:13-18; 3:1-3, 23-24), liberation theology is humanity-centered and Marxism-based (i.e., Humanism).

Liberation theology became one of the primary causes for the various guerrilla movements and civil wars that tore countries apart in Latin America during the 1960's, 1970's and 1980's. Liberation theology has resulted in violent attacks, riots, assassinations, massacres, civil wars, property theft, redistribution of land, and untold human suffering. This theology promotes hatred among social classes. It is the opposite of the teachings of Christian love and Christ's commands found in the New Testament (John 13:35; 14:15-23; 15:12). The fruit of this false theology reveals its spiritual source (John 8:44). Make no mistake, it is a "*doctrine of devils*" (1 Timothy 4:1).

Author Malachi Martin wrote about the "new Jesuit mission" set forth in the Working Paper of the "Jesuit national leadership project" of the 1960's. It includes "their intention to change the fundamental structure of America from that of a capitalist democracy" to a "new kind of society that cannot be "democratic capitalism as we know it." This movement for "transformation of the sociopolitical face of the West" was the outcome of "the strange alliance between Jesuits and Marxists" [i.e., liberation theology] birthed in Latin America. (165)

Liberation theology has not only had a far reaching impact in Latin America, many in the United States have embraced it or been influenced by it as well. Just how dangerous and evil are the teachings of liberation theology and the Jesuit propagation of it to government leaders, religious leaders, teachers, students and those with wealth? Martin observed, "...Arthur F. McGovern, S. J., is an outstanding and convinced apologist for the new Jesuit anti-capitalism. In 1980, he published a book on the subject – *Marxism: an American Christian Perspective*...Quickly, scores of Jesuits began to work with the passion and zeal that has always been so typical of them, for the success of the Sandino-communists in Nicaragua; and, when the Sandinistas took power, those same Jesuits entered crucial posts in the central government, and attracted others to join at various regional levels. In other Central American countries, meanwhile, Jesuits not only participated in guerrilla training of Marxist cadres, but some became guerrilla fighters themselves..." (166)

Furthermore, an even more chilling fact emerges as we gather data about the Jesuits. Martin noted, "Teilhard's thinking [i.e. Omega Point] had become part of the thinking of the intellectual leadership of the Society of Jesus...As Teilhard had filled the gap of scientific

underpinnings for the new theology of George Tyrrell, S. J., so Liberation Theology – championed largely by Latin American Jesuits – provided a tangible objective for the new theories of Teilhard de Chardin, S. J.: the liquidation of capitalist and transnational (which is to say, American) economic imperialism. And those same Jesuits provided as well a real space in which to experiment with the installation and nourishment of the “new Humanity”: every country in Latin America and the Third World.” (167)

In his book *MORNINGS AMONG THE JESUITS AT ROME* Pastor M. Hobart Seymour wrote about his theological conversations with Jesuits in the city of Rome. After reading of his encounters with the Jesuits, one cannot help but remember two of the words that best describe them – EQUIVOCATION, DECEPTIVE. Regarding one of these conversations Seymour wrote, “I therefore said, that I was acquainted with some of the works of the St. Alphonso de Liguori whom he mentioned; that among other things in his “Glories of Mary” is the vision of the two ladders extending from earth to heaven; that at the top of one is the Virgin Mary, and at the top of the other is Jesus Christ; that all who attempted to enter heaven by the ladder of Jesus Christ fell back and failed, while all who tried the ladder of the Virgin Mary succeeded by her assistance. I mentioned this as I had already done in conversation with another priest, and I asked whether such language did not exalt the Virgin Mary, not only as equal but as superior to Jesus Christ – superior in love, and compassion, and mercy of a Saviour, as if she was a safer Saviour than Jesus Christ?...

...He seemed thoroughly vexed and ashamed at this quotation from an author and saint whom he had so highly praised. He hesitated and seemed perplexed for a satisfactory answer; but at length said that such language was intended by Liguori merely to express the love of Mary, and to show how willingly and how effectually she uses her influence as a mother in behalf of those devoted to her. He then added, that it was the opinion of many of the fathers and saints that God hears more quickly the prayers that are offered through the blessed Virgin; that so greatly is she in the love of God, and so great in her influence with God, that the prayers offered through her ascend to heaven more quickly, and are heard and answered more speedily and effectually than otherwise, and this was probably the meaning of Liguori in the details of the two ladders from St. Bernard; that many sinners are troubled with fears on account of their sins; that surely we all must at times be in fear on account of our many sins; that many such fearful or timid sinners come to Mary instead of Jesus. They feel that she is so merciful, so loving, so willing to save them, that they come to her instead of coming to him – that when they think of Jesus Christ they are afraid...

...“Afraid of Jesus!” I exclaimed, involuntarily, startled at the idea of Jesus being less attractive, less loving, less merciful than Mary. – “Afraid of Jesus, who died for them – who showed his love in dying for them, and yet not afraid of Mary, who never professed or showed any love for them!” He immediately checked himself, and looked suspiciously and inquiringly at me.” (168) Another religious conversation Seymour had was with a Jesuit professor of theology. Seymour remarked about “the ignorance of the Holy Scriptures so prevalent among the people of Italy.” Seymour asked about why, during that time, Bibles were not made accessible to the Italians. He even offered to have Bibles sent from England to the Italian people for free distribution. The Jesuit professor changed his answer three times. Finally, the Jesuit priest stated that, “the Church held the infallibility of the pope, to whom it therefore belonged to give the only infallible interpretation of the Scriptures.” (169)

Thankfully, God’s power and protection are greater than the evil plans and works of the



Jesuits. God loves Jesuits (John 3:16-17). Likewise, we are instructed by Jesus to love all people, including Jesuits (Luke 6:27-36). Regardless of their intentions toward us, we are to pray for and do good to them. Why? Because that is what our Lord Jesus instructs us to do. As Bible-believing, Bible-practicing *Christians*, we are not to be overcome by the evil plans or works of deceived Jesuits. Rather, we are to overcome their evil by continuing to do good for our Savior (Romans 12:21). Nevertheless, in obedience to the Jesus of the Bible, we wholeheartedly reject the false religious belief systems of Roman Catholicism, Jesuitism and liberation theology (2 Corinthians 6:14-18, Ephesians 5:11).

It is God's desire that Roman Catholics, including Jesuits, should get *saved* and come to the knowledge of the truth from the Scriptures of truth (John 8:31-32, 1 Timothy 2:1-5). It is an action of Christian love to share the message of the biblical *gospel* with Catholics and win them from Roman Catholicism to Jesus and Biblical Christianity. After Catholics get saved, they must be urged to follow Jesus Christ according to the New Testament Scriptures in a New Testament *church* (John 17:6-18, Acts 2:40-42, Hebrews 10:25). In order to do this, they must depart from Roman Catholicism (Ephesians 5:11, 2 Corinthians 6:14-18, Revelation 18:4-5). Why? Because the Roman Catholic church is not a genuine Christian church. ROMAN CATHOLICISM IS MOST ACCURATELY DEFINED AS A SYNTHESIS OF THE PAGAN ROMAN RELIGIOUS PRIESTHOOD, RITES, CEREMONIES, TEACHINGS, SYMBOLS AND CUSTOMS WITH CHRISTIANITY. Moreover, as evidenced by her doctrines and actions, she is a false church, counterfeit Christianity and an unholy synthesis.

THE ROMAN "MOTHER" CHURCH IS A RELIGION OF ASSIMILATION AND SYNTHESIS (Revelation 17:1-6). Wherever it has spread, the Roman Catholic church assimilates the pagan and worldly rites, ceremonies, teachings, symbols and customs of the nations with Christian teachings and practices. The result is a blend of Christianity with paganism which is known as Christo-Paganism. It is very different than first century, New Testament Christianity.

Christ Jesus established the New Testament *church* (Matthew 16:18). However, He did not found the "Society of Jesus." The "Society" created by Loyola and the Jesuits does not reflect the character, purity, love, works or teachings of the Jesus of the Holy Bible. It is a dangerous, murderous counterfeit. The "Society of Jesus" was founded to be a Counter-Reformation, Anti-Protestant organization. Loyola's aim was to wipe out Protestantism and Protestants (including Protestants, Ana-Baptists and Baptists) throughout the world. The "Society of Jesus" has participated in actions of hatred, cruelty and murder toward Protestants, Baptists and Evangelicals for centuries in clear disobedience and opposition to the commands of Jesus Christ to love *Christians*, your neighbors and even your enemies found in Matthew 5:43-48; 7:12; 22:39, Luke 6:31-36, John 15:12-13:35. Thus, the "Society of Jesus" of the Jesuits is more accurately entitled the "Society of disobedience to Jesus."

According to the Holy Scriptures, only *Jehovah God* Himself can forgive your sins (Psalm 32:5-6; 51:1-4, Mark 2:5-11, Acts 8:22, 1 John 1:5-10, 2:1-2). The pope, Jesuit superior general, and Roman Catholic priests are not God. Rather than continuing in deception, blind obedience and spiritual slavery to Roman Catholicism and the "Society of disobedience to Jesus", Jesuits need to seek grace, forgiveness and mercy directly from our Lord Jesus Himself. Jesuits need to repent of their sins, get saved, and learn to follow Christ Jesus according to the New Testament Scriptures (John 8:31-38; 8:47; 10:27-35; 2 Timothy 3:16-17, 1 Thessalonians 2:13). There is hope for Roman Catholic Jesuit priests and their helpers. They can get *saved* and delivered from the false doctrines, false spirituality/mysticism and evil, murderous works of

the “Society of disobedience to Jesus.” See the book *Far From Rome Near to God* compiled by Richard Bennett and Martin Buckingham. (170) It presents the testimonies of fifty Catholic priests, including Jesuit priests, who had the faith and courage to leave Rome. After discovering the truth in the Scriptures of truth – the Holy Bible, they chose Christ Jesus and Biblical Christianity (John 8:31-32; 16:13; 17:6-8; 17:17). King David wrote, “*For thou, Lord, art good, and ready to forgive; and plenteous in mercy unto all them that call upon thee.*” (Psalm 86:5 KJV) “*For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord [Jesus - 10:9] shall be saved.*” (Romans 10:13 KJV)

Ω

## CHAPTER VII: LIBERATION THEOLOGY: ROME'S NEW THEOLOGY OF DEATH

*“And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you: whose judgment now of a long time lingereth not, and their damnation slumbereth not... While they promise them liberty, they themselves are the servants of corruption:...”*

- The apostle Peter (2 Peter 2:3, 19 KJV)

Years ago, a missionary friend who served in El Salvador during the 1970's and 1980's shared with us about his experiences. A civil war broke out in El Salvador in 1979. During this time, he was living and serving in a small rural village in El Salvador helping to start a new, Bible-believing church. He reported that in his village he had observed poor Roman Catholics from the village being taught how to use firearms and encouraged to join the Marxist guerilla effort to help overthrow the government of El Salvador. This occurred in the evenings at the Roman Catholic church under the direction of a Catholic priest. I remember how astonished we were at hearing his report.

Later, his village was attacked and briefly overrun by these rebel forces one evening. The Marxist guerilla forces shot out the windows and damaged their church building while they were inside. They fell to the floor in the dark, having been injured by shattered pieces of broken glass. They laid there on the church floor most of the night, in the midst of broken glass, praying for the people and themselves, until the Marxist guerilla soldiers departed. Thankfully, they survived the attack. Others were not so fortunate. I wondered how and why these things happened in El Salvador. As I studied about the Liberation Theology Movement that was occurring in Latin America in the 1970's and 1980's, I found answers.

In his book entitled *The Broken Cross The Hidden Hand in the Vatican* Roman Catholic author Piers Compton presents compelling evidence demonstrating the infiltration and influence of Illuminated Freemasonry in the Vatican in the twentieth century. (171) Compton explains this influence of masonic secret societies, and at times a lethal influence,, during the papacies of at least four popes (John XXIII, Paul VI, John Paul I and John Paul II) along with a long list of Cardinals (including Casaroli, Villot, Suenens, Lienart and Poletti), Archbishops (Bugnini, Benelli, Brini), Monsignori, bishops and priests who were members of masonic secret societies (including P2) as revealed in the Italian Register of Secret Societies. As a result of the active influence of Illuminated Freemasons and Socialists,, some of the new “revolutionary teachings” being introduced in the Roman Catholic church before, during and after Vatican II were the leftist teachings of “liberation” from capitalism (anti-capitalism) and “universal brotherhood” of all humanity (Freemason Religious and Political Universalism). (172) See Appendix A: A Biblical Evaluation of LAUDATO SI' of Pope Francis, Appendix B: A Synopsis of Pope Paul VI's *POPULORUM PROGRESSIO* and Appendix C: A Synopsis of Pope John XXIII's *PACEM IN TERRIS*. Read <http://www.freemasonrywatch.org/communism/>.

Subsequently, during the early years of the Cold War, leftists in the Roman Catholic church anticipated a global takeover of the Marxist ideology of Progressivism / Socialism / Communism which was being helped by masonic secret societies. Moreover, we find that during the twentieth century revolutionary socialists were given considerable financial help by some prominent, wealthy Freemasons. One of these sources of financial aid for world revolution was the Rockefellers. They sent large amounts of money to Leon Trotsky and

Vladimir Lennin. See <http://www.freemasonryrywatch.org/communism>. In fact, David Rockefeller affirmed his support of the leftist plan to create an integrated global utopia in his book *Memoirs* (2003), p. 405.

Consequently, with the help of the Jesuit Order (Society of Jesus), the Vatican began “formulating a long term strategy” involving a new synthesis for global integration. The new synthesis included Roman Catholic social teachings with elements of Marxist Socialism and European Freemason Universalism. This new synthesis became known as liberation theology. Liberation theology is referred to as Catholic Socialism or Catholic Marxism. Global Socialism is this same ideology applied on a global scale.

As liberation theology (i.e., Catholic Socialism) was propagated in Catholic schools, universities and seminaries during the last half of the twentieth century, the result was civil unrest, violence and civil wars in Latin America. The spread of Catholic Socialism helped overthrow Capitalist governments and establish Marxist / Socialist / Communist regimes in several Latin American countries (Cuba, El Salvador, Nicaragua, Bolivia, Venezuela, Chile, etc.) Many other countries have also been impacted by this new ideology. In fact, it may be accurately stated that liberation theology has influenced the views of at least two generations of Catholics since its conception.

In his book entitled *THE VATICAN MOSCOW WASHINGTON ALLIANCE* author Avro Manhattan explained, “The obvious ambiguity of the Vatican-Moscow-Washington Alliance, therefore, although a political contradiction, nevertheless was a political reality, with the capacity to further the interests of the Catholic Church, within and outside of the two superpowers. When seen in this light, consequently, the Vatican-Moscow alliance of yesterday, no less the Vatican-Washington alliance of today, can be assessed for what they really are: partnerships meant to benefit not Moscow or Washington, but the Catholic Church. Nowdays the latter [the Catholic Church] is manipulating left-wing ideologies as skillfully as she did right-wing movements prior to and during World War II...

...To meet the challenge of the forthcoming communist take-over of pre- and post- World War III, she [the Catholic Church] has already formulated a long term strategy of her own: the creation of a peculiar new brand of Catholicised Communism. Its launching was done under the protective wings of the Vatican-Washington alliance itself. It has since been mainly identified with the grand scale implantation of Catholic Marxism in the very backyard of the U. S., namely in Latin America. Liberation theology is not an abstraction. It is a most devastating novel doctrine. Currently, [as of 1982] it is subverting most of the South American Continent with the most successful experiment ever undertaken by the new Catholic Marxian Revolution. Its potential for total socio-economic disintegration [in America] is comparable with the Bolshevik cataclysm of 1917 in Russia...” (173)

As we study the rise and development of the Liberation Theology Movement and subsequent revolts in Latin America during the twentieth century, we find direct involvement by the leftist Jesuits. Already having embraced the false philosophies of Jesuit priest Pierre Teilhard de Chardin, S. J. (1881-1955) and Jesuit priest George Tyrrell, S. J. (1861-1909), many Jesuits enthusiastically embraced and propagated the new teachings of liberation theology throughout Latin America. It is important that we clarify the fact that not all Jesuits embrace liberation theology. None the less, many Jesuits have welcomed liberation theology and others have been greatly influenced by it.

In 1973 Peruvian Jesuit priest Gustavo Gutierrez, S. J. published his book entitled *A*

**THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION History, Politics and Salvation** in which he advocated liberation theology as an answer for the social, economic and political injustices of Latin America. His book published in 1973 was originally published as *Teología de la liberación, Perspectivas* by CEP in Lima, Peru in 1971. (174) It should also be noted that his 1973 book "...is based on a paper presented at the *Encuentro Nacional del Movimiento Sacerdotal ONIS*, July 1968, in Chimbote, Peru, published by the MIEC Documentation Service in Montevideo (1969) with the title *Hacia una teología de la liberación*. The original lecture was updated for a presentation at the Consultation on Theology and Development organized by SODEPAX, November 1969, in Cartigny, Switzerland, and published as "Notes on a Theology of Liberation," in *In Search of a Theology of Development: A Sodepax Report* (Lausanne, 1970)." (175)

Proponents of liberation theology in Latin America include Jesuits Juan Luis Segundo and Jon Sobrino. In Nicaragua, inspired by the new theology of liberation, Jesuit Fernando Cardenal served as a member of the Marxist Junta. (176)

Moreover, it must be clearly understood that liberation theology is not a true, biblical Christian teaching. It is a false theology created by men deceived by *Satan*. Liberation theology became a new synthesis of leftist political beliefs with Catholic teachings. Jesuit priests began formulating a theology of liberation during the 1950's and 1960's. Liberation theology was introduced by Roman Catholic Jesuit priests in Latin America during the 1960's and 1970's. Liberation theology is based on the teachings of several Roman Catholic teachers including Cardinal Alfonso Lopez Trujillo; Brazilian theologian from Princeton, Ruben Alves; and Peruvian Jesuit priest Gustavo Gutierrez, S. J.

In 1 John 4:1 we are instructed to "*try (or test) the spirits*" to determine if someone or something is of God. We test the spirits by comparing them to biblical truth to determine if they are according to "*the Spirit of truth*" or "*the spirit of error*" (John. 16:13, 1 John. 4:1-6). When we test the spirit of liberation theology, we find that it has at least twelve distinguishing characteristics. They are:

- 1) Liberation theology is a synthesis of Marxism and Masonic Religious / Political Universalism with Roman Catholic social teachings.
- 2) Liberation theology attempts to "Christianize" Marxism and Masonic Universalism.
- 3) Liberation theology includes a Marxist model "*class struggle, class warfare*" approach to social and economic issues. It advocates the "permanent revolution" theory of Marxist Leon Trotsky.
- 4) Liberation theology distorts the doctrine of Christ. In place of a spiritual Redeemer of souls (Mt. 1:21), Jesus is presented as both a revolutionary, social liberator and a Redeemer. Thus, it presents a different Jesus than the true Jesus of the Holy Bible.
- 5) Liberation theology introduces a different message of salvation from that which is found in the Holy Scriptures. Salvation is regarded as liberation from sin and liberation from capitalist political and social oppression. It expands the biblical doctrine of salvation in order to include a Marxist view of political liberation. This is a social[ist] gospel rather than the true, biblical *gospel*/ defined by the apostle Paul in 1 Cor. 15:1-4.
- 6) It re-defines "sin" with an emphasis on "institutional," "collective" and "social" sin.
- 7) Rather than having a Christ-centered and Bible-based approach to issues, liberation theology is a humanity-centered (i.e., Humanism), Marxism-based approach to solving the social, economic and political injustices of mankind.
- 8) Liberation theology seeks to unite people of all faiths with the Roman Catholic church

and regards allies of all faiths as “the people of God.” (i.e., Religious Universalism)

- 9) Liberation theology seeks to unite all humanity in a “new society” “liberated from capitalism. (i.e., Political Universalism, anti-capitalism)
- 10) Liberation theology is set forth as the “New Political Theology.”
- 11) Liberation theology advocates a Marxist-model “transformation” of all of society supposedly resulting in a new global “utopia” or “world civilization” for humanity.
- 12) Liberation theology calls Catholic lay people, priests and bishops to global political action against poverty and to support a “preferential option for the poor.”

But, it is a serious issue when biblical terms such as Christ, salvation and sin are redefined in order to create a new, false, leftist, political theology. Rather than being Christ-centered and Bible-based (Ephesians 1:11-12, Colossians 1:13-18; 3:1-3, 23-24), Liberation theology is humanity-centered and Marxism-based. Subsequently, we find that liberation theology and New Testament Christianity are very different. They are both incompatible and un-reconcilable.

Liberation theology is a synthesis of Marxist Socialism and Masonic Universalism with Roman Catholic social teachings. How do we know this for certain? There are at least seven reasons:

- 1) Roman Catholic Jesuit priest Gustavo Gutierrez, S. J. reveals his strategy for introducing Marxism within the framework of Christian teachings on page 35 of his book. Mr. Gutierrez explained, “The product of a profound historical movement, this aspiration to liberation is beginning to be accepted by the Christian community as a sign of the times, as a call to commitment and interpretation. The Biblical message, which presents the work of Christ as a liberation, PROVIDES THE FRAMEWORK FOR THIS INTERPRETATION. Theology seems to have avoided for a long time reflecting on the conflictual character of human history, the confrontations among men, social classes, and countries [i.e., the dialectic of Marxism].” (177)
- 2) Liberation theology includes the language (words and concepts) of Marxism and Religious / Political Universalism.
- 3) Liberation theology presents a view of history consistent with Marxism.
- 4) As found in the teachings of Marxism, liberation theology calls for “a cultural revolution.”
- 5) Similar to Marxism, liberation theology includes a Marxist model “*class struggle, class warfare*” approach to addressing social and economic issues.
- 6) Like Marxism, liberation theology calls for a “new society” “liberated” from Capitalism (i.e., anti-Capitalism).
- 7) As alleged in Marxism and Political Universalism, liberation theology claims that a man-made “utopia” or new “world civilization” will be the result of the application of its teachings.

Let us carefully consider one of the essential components included in the synthesis of liberation theology. It is known as Marxism. Marxism is “the system of thought developed by Karl Marx, his co-worker Friedrich Engels and their followers:...” (178) Socialism is one step in the “development” of the Marxist State. I describe this ideology as Socialism / Communism because both German “Socialists” Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels used the terms “Communist” and “Socialist” interchangeably in their writings. The Marxist / Socialist / Communist view is that the State is the primary authority, provider, and nurturer of children. Whereas, the Christian worldview affirms the biblical family unit, established by, and under the authority of, our Creator, as consisting of a father, mother, and child/children.

In his book *Understanding the Times* author David Noebel explained, “The family is the glue that holds society together. As the family goes, so goes society...Remarkably, however, Marxists and Humanists, blind to the folly of their ways, press fervently on toward utopia. In

their quest for the ultimate society, Marxists believe that economics and the forces of production play the primary role, while Humanists [i.e., Political Universalists] trust world government to lead us to the promised land. Both worldviews believe that civilization is evolving from imperfection to perfection, from disorder to order (in direct contradiction to the principle of the Second Law of Thermodynamics). Both want a [new] world order based on atheism, evolution, and socialism...

“...The Marxist believes that the dialectic has worked throughout history to lead society through a series of syntheses, from primitive communism to slavery to feudalism to capitalism and, recently, to socialism. Socialism itself is a transition between capitalism and communism. Marxist theory trusts that the worker [the antithesis] will clash with the capitalist [the thesis], creating a revolution leading to world socialism and, eventually, communism. A dictatorship of the proletariat (under the guidance of the Marxist/Leninist party) will be necessary initially to enforce such a world order, but it will wither away with the advent of communism. Likewise, law is now necessary to move men toward communism, but eventually the need for law will disappear.” (179) Such is the ideology of Marxism / Socialism / Communism in China and elsewhere. Marxist ideology nurtures nothing except hopelessness, death and destruction with endless, murderous, bloody “revolutions.” It is a death trap.

Embrace no false understanding about Marxism / Socialism / Communism. It is truly a murderous “*doctrines of devils*.” (1 Timothy 4:1) We highly recommend obtaining a copy of the book *Marx and Satan* by Richard Wurmbrand (180). In this book Mr. Wurmbrand presents credible evidence from the early writings of the founders of Marxism (Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels) that both were introduced as young men into a satanic sect of Luciferians by Cabalist Moses Hess (1812-1875). Author Richard Wurmbrand concluded that Hess, Marx and Engels were involved in “consciously exploiting Satanic powers.”

Pastor Wurmbrand was imprisoned and tortured by Marxists / Socialists / Communists. He would not renounce his faith. Over the years, the Christian ministry *Voice of the Martyrs* in Bartlesville, Oklahoma has reported eyewitness accounts of the atrocities done against Christians by Marxists / Socialists / Communists. We may be assured from “*the Scriptures of truth*” that our living *LORD* and His angels will fully avenge what has been done to His people at the hands of the Communist / Socialist mass-murderers over the years (Romans 12:19).

Now, let’s consider one of many examples of the synthesis with Marxism found in *A THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION*. On page 32 of his book Roman Catholic Jesuit priest Gustavo Gutierrez proclaimed, “To conceive of history as a process of the liberation of man is to consider freedom as a historical conquest; it is to understand that the step from an abstract to a real freedom is not taken without a struggle against all the forces that oppress man, a struggle full of pitfalls, detours, and temptations to run away. The goal is not only better living conditions, a radical change of structures; a social revolution; it is much more:

the continuous creation, never ending, of a new way to be a man,  
a permanent cultural revolution.” (181)

Notice the language used by Mr. Gutierrez in this paragraph. “A struggle” is used twice. Likewise, the author spoke of “a radical change of structures;” “a social revolution;” and “a *permanent cultural revolution*.” It was Marxist Leon Trotsky who formulated the theory of “permanent revolution.” These are the same words and concepts used by Marxists, Socialists and Communists. In this text the author blends the words and concepts of Marxism with Roman Catholic social teachings.

But nowhere in the Scriptures do we find God calling *Christians* to start a “social revolution” or a “cultural revolution.” Rather, as *Christians* we are called to: 1) Proclaim the gospel 2) Be *disciples* of Jesus Christ 3) Make *disciples* of Christ who are learning to follow Jesus according to the New Testament Scriptures (Matthew 4:19; 28:19-20, Mark 16:15, John 10:27). We are called to honor, serve and glorify our *LORD* by living in obedience to His commands revealed in the New Testament (John 8:31-32; 14:15-23; 17:6-8). In fact, obedience to Christ Jesus and His Word is the exact opposite of Marxism / Socialism which denies God, His authority and the Holy Bible.

Liberation theology attempts to “Christianize” Marxist ideologies. For instance, on page 237 Jesuit priest Gustavo Gutierrez used Christian terminology to set forth “the utopia of liberation.” He explained, “The historical plan, the utopia of liberation as the creation of a new social consciousness and as a social appropriation not only of the means of production, but also of the political process, and, definitively, of freedom, is the proper arena for the cultural revolution. That is to say, it is the arena of the permanent creation of a new man in a different society characterized by solidarity. Therefore, that creation is the place of encounter between liberation and the communion of all men with God.” (182)

Likewise, on pages 112-113 Mr. Gutierrez reported, “A group of priests attached to the university parish in Santiago writes, “The capitalist system exhibits a number of elements which are against man....Socialism, although it does not deliver man from injustices caused by personal attitudes nor from the ambiguity inherent in all systems, does offer a fundamental equality of opportunity. Through a change in the relationships of production, it dignifies labor so that the worker, while humanizing nature, becomes more of a person. It offers a possibility for the even development of the country for the benefit of all, especially the most neglected. It asserts that the motivation of morality and social solidarity is of higher value than that of individual interest, etc.” the transformation of man emerges as a simultaneous task:

“All this can be implemented if together with the transformation of the economic structure, the transformation of man is undertaken with equal enthusiasm. We do not believe man will automatically become less selfish, but we do maintain that where a socio-economic foundation for equality has been established, it is more possible to work realistically toward human solidarity than it is in a society torn asunder by inequity.” The attitude of Christians is based on the understanding that the coming of the Kingdom implies the building of a just society. “If our country engages in an all-out struggle against misery, the Christian, who should participate fully in it, will interpret whatever progress is achieved as a first implementation of the Kingdom proclaimed by Jesus. In other words, today the Gospel of Christ implies (and is incarnated in) man’s multiple efforts to obtain justice.”<sup>60</sup> The MOAC (Worker’s Catholic Action Movement) has this to say regarding the victory of the new Chilean regime: “This fact embodies a great hope and a great responsibility for *all workers and their organizations*: active and watchful collaboration to bring about a more just society which will permit the integral liberation of those oppressed by an inhuman and anti-Christian system such as capitalism.”<sup>61</sup>...”

“...More recently, a large group of priests has taken a clear stand in favor of the socialist process occurring in Chile: “Socialism, characterized by the social appropriation of the means of production, opens the path to a new economy. This economy makes possible an autonomous and more rapid development as well as an overcoming of the division of a society into antagonistic classes. Nevertheless socialism is not only a new economy. It should



also generate new values which make possible the emergence of a society of greater solidarity and brotherhood in which the worker assumes with dignity the role which is his. We feel committed to this process already underway and wish to contribute to its success.” Further they state, “The profound reason for this commitment is our faith in Jesus Christ, which is deepened, renewed, and takes on flesh according to historical circumstances. To be a Christian is to be in solidarity.” (183) These priest were supporting a Marxist Revolution.

Liberation theology includes a Marxist model “*class struggle, class warfare*” approach to social and economic issues. On page 87 Mr. Gutierrez spoke of “the worldwide class struggle.” (184) Using the framework of the Marxist “*class struggle, class warfare*” approach to addressing social and economic issues on page 36, Gustavo Gutierrez proclaimed, “In the first place, *liberation* expresses the aspirations of oppressed peoples and social classes, emphasizing the conflictual aspect of the economic, social and political process which puts them at odds with wealthy nations and oppressive classes. In contrast, the word *development*, and above all the policies characterized as developmentalist [*desarrollista*], appear somewhat aseptic, giving a false picture of a tragic and conflictual reality. The issue of development does in fact find its true place in the more universal, profound, and radical perspective of liberation.” (185)

Similarly, on page 301 Mr. Gutierrez wrote, “The poor person today is the oppressed one, the one margined from society, the member of the proletariat struggling for his most basic rights; he is the exploited and plundered social class, the country struggling for its liberation. To be with the oppressed is to be against the oppressor. In our times and on our continent to be in solidarity with the “poor,” understood in this way, means to run personal risks – even to put one’s life in danger. Many Christians – and non-Christians – who are committed to the Latin American revolutionary process are running these risks. And so there are emerging new ways of living poverty which are different from the classic “renunciation of the goods of this world.” (186)

Again, in this paragraph of Mr. Gutierrez we observe the words and concepts of Marxism mixed with Christian teachings . “The proletariat” is struggling “against the oppressor” for “its liberation.” The sentence “To be with the oppressed is to be against the oppressor.” is a typical Marxist “*class struggle, class warfare*” approach to social and economic issues. It is a call to cultural revolution.

Moreover, liberation theology distorts the doctrine of Christ. In place of a spiritual Redeemer of souls (Matthew 1:21), Jesus is presented as a revolutionary, social and political liberator. Thus, it presents a different Jesus than the Jesus of the Holy Bible. For instance, we find on pages 175-176 the section about “*Christ the Liberator.*” Here Mr. Gutierrez attempts to impose his concept of “political liberation” on the Bible text of Galatians 4:4-5. The reader is misled by the author’s reference to the text which has words added which are not found in this Scripture text. In this process, not only is the biblical text misrepresented, but the doctrine of Christ and the doctrine of redemption are presented in a gross distortion. His misrepresentation of this text leads “the people” to a false understanding of the Scripture.

In Galatians 4:4-5 the apostle Paul declared, “*But when the fullness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law, To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.*” Now observe how this Bible text was distorted in *A THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION*. I’ve capitalized the words which were added at the end of the Scripture cited. Mr. Gutierrez wrote, “Sin demands a radical liberation, which

in turn necessarily implies a political liberation.<sup>98</sup> Only by participating in the historical process of liberation will it be possible to show the fundamental alienation present in every partial alienation. This radical liberation is the gift which Christ offers us. By his death and resurrection he redeems man from sin and all its consequences, as has been well said in a text we quote again: “It is the same God who, in the fullness of time, sends his Son in the flesh, so that He might come to liberate ALL MEN FROM ALL SLAVERY TO WHICH SIN HAS SUBJECTED THEM: HUNGER, MISERY, OPPRESSION, AND IGNORANCE, IN A WORD, THAT INJUSTICE AND HATRED WHICH HAVE THEIR ORIGIN IN HUMAN SELFISHNESS.”<sup>99</sup> (187) Again, notice how much was added to the Scripture cited that has nothing to do with what Paul was teaching. Gutierrez twisted the verses out of their biblical context and added his own words expressing this new political theology.

In addition, liberation theology introduces a different message of salvation from that which is found in the Holy Scriptures. Salvation is regarded as liberation from sin and liberation from Capitalist political and social oppression. It expands the biblical doctrine of salvation to include political liberation. This is a social[ist] gospel rather than the true *gospel* that the apostle Paul defined in 1 Corinthians 15:1-4. Examples are numerous. On pages 177-178 Mr. Gutierrez taught, “The very radicalness and totality of the salvific process require this relationship. Nothing escapes this process, nothing is outside the pale of the action of Christ and the gift of the Spirit. This gives human history its profound unity. Those who reduce the work of salvation are indeed those who limit it to the strictly “religious sphere” and are not aware of THE UNIVERSALITY OF THE PROCESS. It is those who think that the work of Christ touches the social order in which we live only indirectly or tangentially, and not in its roots and basic structure. It is those who in order to protect salvation [Jude 3?] (or to protect their interests) lift salvation from the midst of history, WHERE MEN AND SOCIAL CLASSES STRUGGLE TO LIBERATE THEMSELVES FROM THE SLAVERY AND OPPRESSION TO WHICH OTHER MEN AND SOCIAL CLASSES HAVE SUBJECTED THEM. IT IS THOSE WHO REFUSE TO SEE THAT THE SALVATION OF CHRIST IS A RADICAL LIBERATION FROM ALL MISERY, ALL DESPOLIATION, ALL ALIENATION.” (188)

In his book on page 158 Mr. Gutierrez explained his belief of liberation theology in these words: “The work of Christ is a new creation. In this sense, Paul speaks of a “new creation” in Christ (Gal. 6:15; 2 Cor. 5:17). Moreover, it is through this “new creation,” that is to say, through the salvation which Christ affords, that creation acquires its full meaning (cf. Rom. 8). BUT THE WORK OF CHRIST IS PRESENTED SIMULTANEOUSLY AS A LIBERATION FROM SIN AND FROM ALL ITS CONSEQUENCES; DESPOLIATION, INJUSTICE, HATRED. THIS LIBERATION FULFILLS IN AN UNEXPECTED WAY THE PROMISES OF THE PROPHETS AND CREATES A NEW CHOSEN PEOPLE, WHICH THIS TIME INCLUDES ALL HUMANITY [I.E. UNIVERSALISM]. Creation and salvation therefore have, in the first place, a Christological sense: all things have been created in Christ, all things have been saved in him (cf. Col. 1:15-20).<sup>32</sup>” (189)

Also, liberation theology re-defines “sin” with an emphasis on “institutional,” “collective” and “social” sin. Found on page 35 is the “collective sin” concept of liberation theology advocated by Jesuit priest Gustavo Gutierrez. He declared, “But in the liberation approach sin is not considered as an individual, private, or merely interior reality – asserted just enough to necessitate a “spiritual” redemption which does not challenge the order in which we live. Sin is regarded as a social, historical fact, the absence of brotherhood and love in relationships

among men, the breath of friendship with God and with other men, and, therefore, an interior, personal fracture, When it is considered in this way, the collective dimensions of sin are rediscovered...” (190)

Whereas, sin is defined in the Scriptures of truth as “...*the transgression of the law*” of God (1 John 3:4). The apostle John taught in 1 John 3:4, “*Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law.*” This text refers to the eternal, moral law of God. God’s laws are His commands recorded in the Holy Bible (Matthew 22:36-40, John 14:15-24; 17:6-8; 17:17, Romans 13:8-10, 1 John 2:3-5; 5:1-5). As *Christians*, our *LORD* commands us to obey His eternal laws as presented in the New Testament Scriptures (the *new covenant* – Hebrews chapters 8-10, John 14:15-23).

Rather than being a Christ-centered and Bible-based approach to issues, liberation theology is a humanity-centered, Marxism-based approach to solving the social, economic and political injustices of mankind. On pages 237-238 Mr. Gutierrez wrote, “Faith reveals to us the deep meaning of the history which we fashion with our own hands: It teaches us that every human act which is oriented towards the construction of a more just society has value in terms of communion with God—in terms of salvation; inversely it teaches that all injustice is a breach with him...The Gospel does not provide a Utopia for us; this is a human work...” (191)

Liberation theology seeks to unite people of all faiths and regards allies of all faiths as “the people of God.” (i.e., Religious Universalism) On page 278 Jesuit priest Gustavo Gutierrez, S. J. stated, “The unity of the Church is not truly achieved without the unity of the world. [i.e., Political Universalism] In a radically divided world, the function of the ecclesial community is to struggle against the profound causes of the division among men. It is only this commitment that can make of it an authentic sign of unity...” (192) We observe the “collectivist” vision on page 50 – “The people of God march on “accounting for their hope” toward “a new heaven and a new earth.” (193)

Liberation theology seeks to unite all humanity in a “New Society” “liberated” from Capitalism. Once more, notice how Gustavo Gutierrez explained this call to “cultural revolution.” Remarkably, this sounds similar to what might have been recommended by the murderous, Marxist / Socialist / Communist leaders of the twentieth-century such as Josef Stalin, Mao-Tse-tung or Pol Pot. Gutierrez wrote, “They believe that there can be authentic development for Latin America only if there is liberation from the domination exercised by the great capitalist countries, and especially by the most powerful, the United States of America. This liberation also implies a confrontation with these groups’ natural allies, their compatriots who control the national power structure. It is becoming more evident that the Latin American peoples will not emerge from their present status except by means of a profound transformation, *a social revolution*, which will radically and qualitatively change the conditions in which they now live. The oppressed sectors within each country are becoming aware—slowly, it is true—of their class interests and of the painful road which must be followed to accomplish the breaking up of the status quo. Even more slowly are they becoming aware of all that the building of the new society implies...In Latin America we are in the midst of a full-blown process of revolutionary ferment...” (194)

But keep in mind that the propagation of these Marxist-based “cultural revolution” (page 237) and “*permanent cultural revolution*” (page 32) teachings to the people in Peru during the 1960’s, 1970’s and 1980’s helped fuel the rise of the notorious Shining Path

(Sendero Luminoso) Communist Party of Peru along with other Socialist and Communist groups there. Shining Path members also believe in Marxist “cultural revolution” and “world revolution.”

Is it just a coincidence that many Jesuits, Roman Catholic priests and bishops were preaching the liberation theology “cultural revolution” in Latin America during the same time? Many people have been killed as a result of these “*doctrines of devils*” being propagated and practiced in Peru and in other nations of Latin America. Many of those who were murdered by these Marxist proponents of “cultural revolution” were very poor Bible-believing *Christians* living in rural villages who refused to renounce their faith in Jesus Christ. Known for their mock trials, brutal assassinations and horrific massacres, the Shining Path was founded in the late 1960’s by a former university professor of philosophy named Abimael Guzman. This Party continues to operate in Peru. (195) This is Satan’s philosophy in action.

Liberation theology is set forth as the “New Political Theology” in the section entitled The “New Political Theology” found on pages 220-224. (196) There is no doubt that liberation theology is a political theology rather than a biblical theology. Liberation theology, which was originally birthed among the Jesuits, appears to be a synthesis of the teachings of Jesuit priest Pierre Teilhard de Chardin, S.J. (Occult Universalism) and Karl Marx (Marxism). The teachings of both men are easily identified in *A THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION History, Politics and Salvation*.

Liberation theology advocates a Marxist-model “transformation” of all of society supposedly resulting in a new “utopia” for mankind. Seeing the need to support and participate in a “world-wide class struggle” Jesuit priest Gustavo Gutierrez, S. J. proclaimed, “Moreover, it is becoming more obvious that the revolutionary process ought to embrace the whole continent. There is little chance of success for attempts limited to a national scope...” (197)

Referring to the plan to build “a new society,” Jesuit priest Gutierrez pointed out, “But things are moving in this direction. A profound aspiration for the creation of a new man underlies the process of liberation which the continent is undergoing.<sup>3</sup> This is a difficult creation which will have to overcome conflicts and antagonisms. Rightly does Medellin comment that “we are on the threshold of a new epoch in the history of our continent. It appears to be a time full of zeal for full emancipation, of liberation from every form of servitude, of personal maturity and of COLLECTIVE INTEGRATION. IN THESE SIGNS WE PERCEIVE THE FIRST INDICATIONS OF THE PAINFUL BIRTH OF A NEW [GLOBAL] CIVILIZATION.” (198)

Gustavo Gutierrez noted, “If we believe that the Kingdom of God is a gift which is received in history, and if we believe, as the eschatological promises—so charged with human and historical content—indicate to us, that the Kingdom of God necessarily implies the reestablishment of justice in the world,<sup>43</sup> then we must believe that Christ says that the poor are blessed *because* the Kingdom of God has begun: “The time has come; the Kingdom of God is upon you” (Mark 1:15). In other words, the elimination of the exploitation and poverty that prevent the poor from being fully human has begun; a Kingdom of justice which goes even beyond what they could have hoped for has begun. They are blessed because the coming of the Kingdom will put an end to their poverty BY CREATING A WORLD OF BROTHERHOOD. THEY ARE BLESSED BECAUSE THE MESSIAH [WHICH MESSIAH? JESUS

OR THE ANTICHRIST?] WILL OPEN THE EYES OF THE BLIND AND WILL GIVE BREAD TO THE HUNGRY.” [capitalization added] (199) This refers to the establishment of a man-made, global “Kingdom.” This is precisely what the future *antichrist* has in mind (Daniel 7:23-24, Revelation 13-18). For further study regarding Religious Universalism and Political Universalism see the article entitled “A Biblical Evaluation of Universalism” posted at [instituteofbiblicaldiscipleship.com](http://instituteofbiblicaldiscipleship.com) in Christian articles section.

Liberation theology calls Catholic lay people, priests and bishops to political action against poverty and to support a “preferential option for the poor.” Mr. Gutierrez called poverty “a scandalous condition inimical to human dignity and therefore contrary to the will of God.” (200) On pages 101-106 we observe the call of lay people, priests, religious and bishops to participate in the process of liberation via political action in behalf of the poor. On page 56 Mr. Gutierrez urges, “Therefore, the special task of the layman will be to create this New Christendom in the temporal sphere. To this end he will find it useful to join organizations inspired by Christian principles—and carrying a Christian name.<sup>11</sup>” (201)

Gustavo Gutierrez also wrote about the “preferential option for the poor” observed in the ministry of Christ Jesus. See Pope Francis’s similar teachings concerning “the preferential option of the poor” and the DOCUMENTO DE APARECIDA of the V General Episcopal Conference of Latin America and the Caribbean held in Aparecida, Brazil 13-31 May, 2007. (202). But, liberation theology does not truly help the poor in the long-term. Whereas, God’s solutions are tangible solutions found in the Scriptures of truth which will help those in the despair of poverty in the long-term.

Concerning helping those in poverty: We need not rob the rich in order to feed the poor. President Abraham Lincoln taught, “We do not enrich the poor by impoverishing the rich.” Yet, this is precisely what Global Socialism would do. We recognize that our Savior demonstrated a special love for people in poverty and offered salvation and hope to them (Luke 6). Thankfully, we find in the Holy Bible that our God loves the poor and is fully aware of their needs, sorrows and oppressions. Our Lord Jesus gave a promise to all who will seek and follow Him. This promise is just as relevant in the twenty-first century as it was when spoken by our Savior in the first century. Regarding our basic needs of food and clothing, Jesus taught, “*But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you.*” (Matthew 6:33) The question is: Do we have faith to believe that our *LORD* is still able to keep His promise to us in the twenty-first century?

In addition, we are following our *LORD*’s example when we minister to those in poverty (Luke 6). The Scriptures have much to say about the poor and reveal our *LORD*’s compassion toward them. In Psalm 9:18 King David proclaimed, “*For the needy shall not always be forgotten: the expectation of the poor shall not perish forever.*” Likewise, David declared, “*Blessed is he that considereth the poor: the LORD will deliver him in time of trouble.*” (Psalm 41:1) In Proverbs 19:17 we read, “*He that hath pity [compassion] upon the poor lendeth unto the LORD; and that which he hath given will he pay him again.*” Thus, we find that it is pleasing to our God to help the poor. We will be blessed of the *LORD* if we minister to those in poverty. We recognize the importance of serving the poor in Christ’s name (Matthew 25:40).

THE CENTRAL QUESTION IS: HOW DO WE BEST HELP THE POOR? 1) IT IS NOT A SIN TO BE POOR. 2) WE NEED NOT SELL OUR SOULS TO GLOBAL SOCIALISM IN ORDER TO FIND HELP FOR THE POOR. 3) GLOBAL SOCIALISM WILL CAUSE MORE PROBLEMS AND WORSE CONDITIONS IN THE LONG-TERM. 4) THERE IS A BETTER WAY. FOLLOWING OUR SAVIOR’S

EXAMPLE IS BETTER. JESUS DID NOT SEEK SOLUTIONS TO THE PROBLEMS OF THE PEOPLE BY FOLLOWING THE CONCEPTS OF GLOBAL SOCIALISM. JESUS DID NOT SEEK THE COUNSEL OF SOCIALIST LEADERS BECAUSE HE ALREADY KNEW WHAT WAS IN THEIR HEARTS (JEREMIAH 17:9-11, JOHN 2:23-25; 8:43-44; 10:10, 2 TIMOTHY 3:13).

WE CAN FIND NO BETTER EXAMPLE TO FOLLOW THAN THAT OF OUR LORD AND SAVIOR JESUS CHRIST. HOW DID JESUS MINISTER TO THE POOR IN THE FIRST CENTURY? During His ministry on earth, our Lord Jesus ministered to the poor in five primary ways. They are: 1) Christ provided salvation to their souls [i.e., *gospel* proclamation]. 2) Jesus prayed for them [i.e., prayer support]. 3) Our *LORD* taught them [i.e., education]. 4) Christ Jesus counseled them [i.e., Biblical Christian counseling]. 5) Our Savior shared food with them [voluntary generosity to the poor]. This is how we should minister to those in poverty.

Tragically, liberation theology became a murderous and destructive synthesis with Marxism and Masonic Universalism that spread throughout Latin America (John 8:43-44; 10:10). Liberation theology became one of the primary causes for the various violent guerrilla movements and civil wars that tore countries apart in Latin America during the 1960's, 1970's and 1980's. The results of the spread of liberation theology and the actions of its proponents were apparent in nations such as: Cuba, Peru, El Salvador, Nicaragua, Chile, Bolivia, Venezuela and in Mexico (in the state of Chiapas). Liberation theology incited violent attacks, riots, assassinations, massacres, civil wars, property theft, forced redistribution of land, and untold human suffering.

Liberation theology inspires hatred, distrust and conflict among social classes. It is the opposite of the teachings of Christian love and Christ's commands found in the New Testament (John 13:35; 14:15-23; 15:12). How many people have died in the senseless violence as a result of the propagation and "revolutions" of liberation theology? The fruit of this false theology reveals its spiritual source – the fallen angel known as "*Lucifer*" (Isaiah 14:12-22, John 8:43-44, 1 John 3:10-15). Make no mistake, it is one of the "*doctrines of devils*" (1 Timothy 4:1-3, 2 Timothy 3:13).

Moreover, it is notable that author Malachi Martin wrote about the "new Jesuit mission" set forth in the Working Paper of the "Jesuit national leadership project" of the 1960's. It includes "their intention to change the fundamental structure of America from that of a capitalist democracy" to a "new kind of society that cannot be "democratic capitalism as we know it." This movement for "transformation of the sociopolitical face of the West" was the outcome of "the strange alliance between Jesuits and Marxists" [i.e., liberation theology] birthed in Latin America. (203)

Liberation Theology has not only had a far reaching impact in Latin America, many in the United States have embraced it or been greatly influenced by it as well. Just how dangerous and evil are the teachings of Liberation Theology and the Jesuit propagation of it to government leaders, religious leaders, students and those with wealth? Martin observed, "...Arthur F. McGovern, S. J., is an outstanding and convinced apologist for the new Jesuit anticapitalism. In 1980, he published a book on the subject – *Marxism: an American Christian Perspective*...Quickly, scores of Jesuits began to work with the passion and zeal that has always been so typical of them, for the success of the Sandinocommunists in Nicaragua; and, when the Sandinistas took power, those same Jesuits entered crucial posts in the central government, and attracted others to join at various regional levels. In other Central American countries, meanwhile, Jesuits not only participated in guerrilla training of Marxist cadres, but

some became guerrilla fighters themselves...” (204)

Furthermore, an even more chilling fact emerges as we gather data about the Jesuits. Martin noted, “Teilhard’s thinking [i.e. Omega Point] had become part of the thinking of the intellectual leadership of the Society of Jesus...As Teilhard had filled the gap of scientific underpinnings for the new theology of George Tyrrell, S. J., so liberation theology – championed largely by Latin American Jesuits – provided a tangible objective for the new theories of Teilhard de Chardin, S. J.: the liquidation of capitalist and transnational (which is to say, American) economic imperialism. And those same Jesuits provided as well a real space in which to experiment with the installation and nourishment of the “new Humanity”: every country in Latin America and the Third World.” (205)

In addition, the liberation theology birthed among the Roman Catholic Jesuits of Latin America has spread to other faith communities resulting in the same false doctrines being applied in the contexts of other cultures. It has influenced the hearts and minds of many people. For example, consider the origin, rise and impact of the black liberation theology of professor and author James Hal Cone. With the publishing of the book entitled *Black* began spreading to the seminaries, schools of theology, denominations and churches among many African-American groups in the United States and elsewhere. In essence, black liberation theology is a blend of Marxism, ethnocentrism and black racism with the teachings of Christianity. It is far from being a Christ-centered, Bible-based Christianity. It is Christianity politicized to leftist ideology. It is a poisonous, gross distortion of the true Christian *“faith which was once delivered unto the saints”* in the first century as revealed in the New Testament (Jude 3). It is the exact opposite of Christian love for all people (Luke 6, John 13:35, Romans 13:9-10). It is a theology of spiritual death.

Moreover, militant statements fueling black racism and violence in the book entitled *BLACK THEOLOGY AND BLACK POWER* by James Hal Cone reveal just how potentially destructive this false theology of man can be. On page 143 we read, “Whether the American system is beyond redemption we will have to wait and see. But we can be certain that black patience has run out, and unless white America responds positively to the theory and activity of Black Power, then a bloody, protracted civil war is inevitable.” [i.e., similar to a Marxist revolution?] (206)

Whereas, in Luke 9:53-56 we read about an incident one day when two of Christ’s *disciples* became upset because their Lord was not received in *“a village of the Samaritans.”* They asked our Lord Jesus if they should *“command fire to come down from heaven, and consume them, even as Elias did?”* Jesus immediately rebuked them and said, *“Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of. For the Son of man is not come to destroy men’s lives, but to save them.”* **THUS, THE TRUE CHRIST, MESSIAH AND SAVIOR OF THE WORLD – JESUS DID NOT COME WITH A MALICIOUS DESIRE TO DESTROY OR KILL PEOPLE OF OTHER CLASSES OR RACES. THE TRUE CHRIST CAME TO SAVE PEOPLE FROM THEIR SINS (MATTHEW 1:21).** As true *Christians* from the same human race (singular) – Genesis 1:26-27), Jesus is our example to follow (John 13:15-35).

Likewise, in Hebrews 10:25 God’s Word instructs believers to, *“Follow [Pursue] peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord: Looking diligently lest any man fail of the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby many be defiled; Lest there be any fornicator, or profane person, as Esau, who for one morsel of meat sold his birthright.* Similarly, Jesus proclaimed, *“The thief [false teacher]*

*cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly.” (John 10:10)*

In contrast, what has been the outcome of black liberation theology? Did it promote racial peace and Christian love among blacks and whites? Not! It did the opposite. Black liberation theology has resulted in an increase in racially-motivated violence, hostility, malice and hatred among blacks directed against whites for decades. And the impact of this false theology has carried into the twenty-first century.

During the 2008 presidential election it was revealed that Senator Barack Obama’s pastor, Jeremiah Wright, regarded James Hal Cone as his mentor. In addition, the Trinity United Church of Christ in Chicago, “...is the church most frequently cited by press accounts, and by Cone as the best example of a church formally founded on the vision of Black liberation theology.<sup>9</sup> The 2008 Jeremiah Wright controversy, over racism and anti-Americanism in sermons and statements, caused then Senator Barack Obama to distance himself from his former pastor.<sup>9,17</sup>” (207) Up to the beginning of 2008, the web-site of Trinity United Church of Christ presented teachings consistent with black liberation theology. These teachings, however, were conveniently removed from the church web-site in early 2008.

Also, it should be noted that ex-President Barack Hussein Obama was mentored in social[ist] justice and community organizing by Gregory Gelluzzo, a “former” Jesuit priest. Gelluzzo directed the Gamaliel Foundation in Chicago founded by Socialist Saul Alinsky.

The Christ-honoring solution to all of this is clear. It is past time for obedient *Christians* of all cultures to discard the false theologies of liberation theology, black liberation theology and social[ist] justice (John 13:35). Rather than following the false theologies of deceived men, let us return to following and serving our Lord Jesus Christ according to the faithful and true teachings of the New Testament (Matthew 28:18-20, John 8:31-32; 13:15; 13:35; 17:6-8, Acts 2:40-42; 17:10-11, 2 Timothy 3:14-17; 4:1-7). Let us not despise those who are deceived by these false, man-made doctrines. Instead, let us pray for their salvation and seek to witness to them from the Scriptures of truth. It is our hope that they may be won to biblical Christianity, “*sound doctrine*” and “*the love of the truth.*” (2 Timothy 4:1-4)

The apostle Peter proclaimed to the lame man, “*...Silver and gold have I none; but such as I have give I thee: In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth rise up and walk...And he leaping up stood, and walked, and entered with them into the temple, walking, and leaping, and praising God.*” (Acts 3:6) SUCH ARE THE WORKS OF OUR LORD, SAVIOR AND KING JESUS CHRIST! GOD CAN AND WILL SUPPLY OUR NEEDS. WITH GOD ALL THINGS ARE POSSIBLE.



## CHAPTER VIII: THE FIFTH COLUMN – ROME’S INFLUENCE ON CATHOLICS IN THE NEWS MEDIA, GOVERNMENT, MILITARY, NATIONAL SECURITY AND HEALTH CARE

*“And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you...”*  
– Jesus (Matthew 24:4 KJV)

*“But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse,  
deceiving, and being deceived.”* – the apostle Paul (2 Timothy 3:13 KJV)

Please allow me to preface this chapter with these thoughts. We must be careful not to stereotype all Roman Catholics on the basis of the prejudice and actions of many Roman Catholics. There are many Roman Catholic church members who are unaware of the poisonous doctrines and murderous persecutions of the Roman Catholic church cited in previous chapters. We also recognize that there are many Catholics who have excellent moral character and would be opposed to persecution against Protestants, Evangelicals or Baptists. Many of these are sincere, conscientious lay people. Nevertheless, at the same time, there continues to be many Catholics who would be willing to engage in persecution against Protestants, Evangelicals or Baptists if so directed by their Catholic leaders.

Let us recognize the continuing existence of a very real anti-Protestant/Evangelical/Baptist bias within contemporary Roman Catholicism which is clearly rooted in Roman Catholic teachings against “Protestants” and “Fundamentalist Christians.” This bias has resulted in centuries of acts of violence and murder against millions of Biblical *Christians* and Jews throughout the Catholic world. It is time for genuine repentance among Catholics for these persecutions and crimes against non-Catholic *Christians* and Jews. When will the Roman Catholic church officially recognize that she is not the legitimate judge or religious authority of non-Catholic *Christians*? We appeal to all truth-seeking Catholics to return to “*the faith which was once delivered unto the saints*” as discovered in the New Testament teachings of Jesus and His First century apostles (Jude 3).

In addition, there are centuries of unresolved moral wrongs and cover-ups that have been committed by members of the Vatican, the priests of Rome and by means of Vatican influence. Many of these evil deeds involve abuse of authority resulting in the deaths of millions of non-Catholic people, lies, sexual exploitation, corruption [i.e., Banco Ambrosiano] and bribe-taking. Many of these sinful actions are exposed in the book entitled *BIOGRAFÍA NO AUTORIZADA DEL VATICANO NAZISMO, FINANZAS SECRETAS, MAFIA, DIPLOMACIA OCULTA Y CRÍMENES EN LA SANTA SEDE* by Santiago Camacho (Martinez Roca SA Ediciones; 1ra. Edición, 2005). When will there be genuine recognition, repentance, public apologies and restitution from the priests of Rome for these moral wrongs (Acts 17:30-31; 26:20, 2 Timothy 2:19)?

Moreover, much of the wrongdoing has been rationalized for centuries by means of the teachings, false documents, canons and councils of the Roman Catholic church. For example, consider the Roman Catholic doctrine of “venial sin.” Sins such as lying, deception, stealing and cheating are regarded as “venial sins” and are easily forgiven through the

Catholic priest. What's the result? It has produced a Roman Catholic culture of the common practice of venial sins. Whereas, the Scriptures make no distinction between venial sins and mortal sins concerning salvation (Romans 1:28-32; 2:1-10, James 2:8-11, Revelation 21:8; 22:15).

Also, let us beware of the strong influence of the priests and teachers of Rome who teach anti-Protestant/Evangelical/Baptist bias to the Roman Catholic community. In this chapter we will discuss Rome's very real INFLUENCE on Roman Catholics. We will consider both Catholic influence and Catholic bias. Every person has an influence on others by means of attitudes, communications and deeds. Our influence can be used for either good or for evil depending on what we believe and practice. If what one believes and practices is not based on obedience to Christ's New Testament commands, his or her influence will often be used to direct others on a path of evil attitudes, evil communications and evil deeds.

What we believe does help determine how we live. If a person does not fear sinning against God, love God and seek to live in obedience to His commands recorded in the Holy Bible (such as the ten commandments), his or her influence will soon be used to influence others toward evil and sin. An example of evil influence is observed in acts of prejudice and in acts of persecution / violence against Protestants, Evangelicals and Baptists. These actions are often based on hatred and contempt in the hearts of the Catholic persecutors. Such actions are morally wrong and regarded as sin in the Scriptures (2 Timothy 4:14-15, 2 Thes. 1:4-9).

How real is Vatican influence? When we consider an organization capable of unleashing the influence of many millions of people in many nations at the same time, we begin to understand just how much influence the Vatican has in local, national and international matters. Keep in mind, Vatican influence can be used for good or for evil. Unfortunately, it has very frequently been used for evil works throughout church history. In *VATICAN IMPERIALISM IN THE TWENTIETH CENTURY* Avro Manhattan pointed out how Vatican influence operates on a national level and on an international level. He wrote, "The vast ecclesiastical machinery of the Catholic Church, and her political lay battalions, would alone be sufficient to put Vatican diplomats in a unique position *vis-à-vis* the representatives of any other political Power, insofar as their use of the Church's religious and lay organizations enables them to exert a disproportionate influence upon, not only the government to which they are accredited, but also a large section of its population. Indeed there are times when such influence can be exerted upon a whole nation by the simultaneous use of the diplomatic, political, and religious machinery which their ambiguous status puts entirely at their disposal...This the Vatican can do by using, in addition to the vast religious machinery of the Church and countless religious, semi-religious, and lay international organizations with world-wide activities, inspired and promoted by Catholic principles and practice. Thanks to this, the field of Catholic activities is of a truly universal character, and thus, being wholly independent of geographical, racial and political confines, Catholic intervention is felt in the most diverse spheres and in the most distant regions..."

"...The Vatican, consequently, must be reckoned as a great European political power. As such, it should never be underestimated, lest its undetected influence undermine, with undue slyness, the exertions of the European family of nations, striving to reach a working formula for long-sought European unity. But the Vatican, besides being a great European power, is something more. For, in addition to influencing councils dealing with the fate of a continent, it can sway assemblies responsible for shaping the destiny of the entire world – e.g. the League

of Nations after the First World War, when the Secretary-General of the League was a devout Catholic;<sup>5</sup> and the United Nations Organization after the Second [and the U.N. today]. As with the Council of Europe, so also with these, the Vatican “officially” was represented neither diplomatically nor politically. Yet, rare indeed were the occasions when its influence was not powerfully felt, or when it could not command the votes of whole groups of nations,...” (208)

Using what Avro Manhattan referred to as the “Catholic *bloc*,” Vatican influence has been used to change U.S. foreign policy. Mr. Manhattan explained, “We have already seen how the Catholic pressure groups in the U.S.A. forced the American government radically to alter its attitude toward Franco. Catholic pressure, while at work in the U.S.A., had been mobilized also within U.N.O. Perhaps it will help if we recapitulate the case. Immediately after the Second World War, Spain was practically the only fortress of fascism to remain intact. As the chief Nazis were hanged [those not protected by the Vatican], so Catholic Spain was branded a fascist nation. After this the General Assembly of U.N.O., in their decision of 1946, urged all the member-nations to withdraw their ambassadors and ministers from Madrid, to bar technical activities from Spain, to forbid financial aid, and similar sanctions, as a concrete proof of the world’s abhorrence of a regime patterned on those of Hitler and Mussolini...”

“...the Vatican changed tactics. Instead of putting direct pressure upon U.N.O., it switched this against the power dominating U.N.O., i.e. the U.S.A., which, it should be noted, was in 1946 one of the prime movers against Franco’s regime. The American hierarchy, the Catholic Press, and the whole Catholic-American machinery were duly mobilized. In no time, as we have already seen, the State Department had to change its mind...The result was soon evident. The proposal gained a conclusive majority, thirty-seven votes to ten, with twelve abstentions. The special committee of U.N.O. revoked the ban on diplomatic relations with Spain and the prohibition against her membership. Financial loans from the U.S.A. preceded and followed this move. The Vatican, which had worked by words and deeds for [the mass murderer] Franco’s cause, had won another victory...” (209)

Mr. Manhattan reported another example of “Vatican influence” mentioning, “The Vatican can use national and international organizations in order to mobilize world public opinion against its enemies: e.g. during the trials of [mass murderer] Archbishop Stepinac in Yugoslavia and Cardinal Mindszenty in Hungary, when both prelates were found guilty of conspiring to overthrow their respective governments. The Vatican organized a world campaign, picturing them as innocent victims of Red terror, via the pulpit, the Press, radio, films, with the result that in no time individuals and governments alike became genuinely convinced that the Catholic Church was being persecuted, simply as a religion. This went so far that the Vatican used U.N.O. as a world platform, charging Hungary with having violated human rights by imprisoning one of its cardinals. This while simultaneously Franco was executing communists in Spain for having taken part in the Civil War a whole decade earlier.<sup>11</sup>” (210) The results of the Vatican’s efforts were to be expected.

Furthermore, how real is Roman Catholic bias against Protestants, Evangelicals and Baptists? Two personal experiences come to mind. Before I came to know Jesus Christ as my Lord and Savior, as a teenager, I dated a Roman Catholic young lady named Tammy. Tammy was an attractive young lady and a great student. On one occasion she invited me to her home to meet and have dinner with her family. I really liked Tammy, and Tammy had made it clear that she really liked me. I thought we were developing a great relationship, until one day she invited me to attend mass with her at her Catholic church. At the time, I was a member

of a Methodist church but rarely attended. I explained that my family and I were Methodists. While discussing this, I noticed that Tammy's countenance changed and she became very angry. She had assumed that I was a Roman Catholic because of my last name. She then stated in no uncertain terms that we were "Protestants" and her "enemy," and that she didn't want to see me anymore. I was shocked. One minute before discovering that I was a "Protestant" Tammy liked me and I liked her. I didn't regard Tammy as my "enemy."

She was my girlfriend until she found out that I was affiliated with a Methodist church. To this day I remember Tammy's reaction. After thoroughly studying Roman Catholicism, I came to understand WHY she reacted that way. Tammy's response was a result of her Catholic religious education. Apparently, her Catholic priest or a Catholic teacher had taught her that Protestants were to be regarded as "enemies of God" and "enemies" of Roman Catholics. Thus, her response and rejection of me were the direct result of her Roman Catholic beliefs which included a very real anti-Protestant/Evangelical bias.

Another experience I had a few years ago helped confirm to me the reality of the continuing existence of this Anti-Protestant, Anti-Evangelical and Anti-Baptist bias held by many Roman Catholics today. Two young Catholic men had run out of gasoline nearby, and came to the house requesting help. I told them that I'd be glad to help them. I drove my vehicle to a gas station and purchased gas for them. I brought them the container of gas and they were able to get their car started. As is my custom, I politely handed them two gospel tracts and invited them to church. One of the young men asked to which church I was inviting them. After answering him, he responded, "Oh no, we couldn't do that. We've heard about you guys. You're our "enemy." Then, they left. As I reflected on this experience, I found it odd that they still considered me their "enemy" after I had helped them and purchased gas for their car. I didn't want to be their "enemy." I don't regard them as my "enemy." I was trying to practice the command of Christ Jesus that day of loving my neighbor as myself (Matthew 22:39). I wanted to show Christian love toward them and be a good neighbor. Yet, they left my home still regarding me as their "enemy." WHY? → THE TEACHINGS OF ROME

Moreover, I have personally witnessed acts of bias, discrimination and persecution carried out by Roman Catholics against Biblical *Christians* in the United States and in Mexico. At times, I have been the target of acts of bias, discrimination and persecution carried out by Roman Catholics during my ministry outreaches. In addition to being an eyewitness to these acts of religious persecution, bias and discrimination, I've heard of numerous other reports of persecution and even martyrdom of Baptist *Christians* in Mexico.

Likewise, in the city of Toluca, Mexico there stands a monument to the first Presbyterian missionaries in that area. They were a family that came from Scotland in the nineteenth century. They came to proclaim the biblical gospel to the people of the Estado de Mexico. The entire family, including children, were stoned to death by an angry mob of Roman Catholics who had been incited to do so by their local Roman Catholic priest. So much for "loving your neighbor as yourself" (Matthew 22:39). But, perhaps this Roman Catholic priest was unfamiliar with Matthew 22:39 and many other New Testament teachings of Jesus Christ. or, Did he just choose to ignore them? WHY? → THE DOCTRINES OF ROMAN CATHOLICISM

I began wondering if this same Anti-Protestant/Evangelical/Baptist bias is dwelling in the hearts and minds of many Roman Catholics who work in the media (internet, television, cable news stations, radio, newspapers and magazines), government, military, national security and health care as well. Likewise, I began asking just how much influence do the teachings

of Rome concerning the “separated brethren” (formerly labeled for centuries as “heretics” and “schismatics” by the church of Rome) have on the attitudes and opinions of Roman Catholics? In addition, we are compelled to ask, Are there Roman Catholics who are willing to use their authority in the government or places of employment to persecute non-Catholic Christians who actively propagate the biblical *gospel*?

Concerning the influence of the Roman Catholic church on the primary newspapers in the United States in the nineteenth century, former Roman Catholic priest C. Chiniquy noted in his book *FIFTY YEARS IN THE CHURCH OF ROME* that, “The Democratic press, which was then, as it is still now, almost entirely under the control of the Roman Catholics, and the devoted tool of the Jesuits,...” (211) Rome’s influence on the media in the twentieth and twenty-first centuries has been similar. It is clearly observed in: 1) The amount of coverage devoted to news from the Vatican and Catholic issues 2) Attention given to papal speeches and writings 3) Television interviews with priests, bishops and cardinals 4) The usually very favorable way the popes are portrayed to the public.

Media attention given to Pope John Paul II in the past and Pope Francis currently demonstrates this same strong Roman Catholic and Jesuit influence in our time as well. For instance, in December 2013 *Time* magazine named Roman Catholic Pope Francis “person of the year.” (212) During this same time, Pope Francis made the front covers of *Time*, *Newsmax*, *The New Yorker* and *The Advocate*. (213) The front cover of the January 2014 issue of *Newsmax* read, “the People’s Pope Francis’ popularity soars with a message of reform – but traditionalists are worried.” The article in *Newsmax* included twelve pages of promotional pictures. The pope is positively portrayed as “a messenger of mercy,” “the Pope of the poor” and the “Third World Pope.” We read, “Pope Francis is indeed an icon.” (214) Additional media recognition for the pope included being named ‘Best Dressed Man of 2013’ by *Esquire* magazine (215). With media coverage such as this, there’s no need to pay for church advertising.

It is also worth noting that in the January 2014 *Newsmax* article about Pope Francis we read, “Bergoglio (pope Francis) also played a leadership role among the bishops of Latin America, helping to author a 2007 document that called for a “continental mission” to help Catholicism recover from its losses to Pentecostals and Evangelicals [i.e. Jesuit counter-Reformation strategy] and also loosely backing a movement toward continental integration known as Patria Grande [i.e. implying support for the concept of a South American Community (and/or Union) similar to the North American Community (and/or Union) as established in 2005].” (216)

In recent years, there is probably no greater example in the United States of Rome’s influence having an impact on the nation through an American Roman Catholic than through Roman Catholic political commentator, author and television host Bill O’Reilly of *The O’Reilly Factor*. There are others, but they have less viewers and less influence. His program has been viewed for years on Fox News Channel. Saturated in Roman Catholic education from the days of his childhood, O’Reilly has for years had a significant influence in shaping the thinking and attitudes of millions of Americans. In his writings and television commentaries Mr. O’Reilly readily acknowledges that his Roman Catholic faith and Roman Catholic education have been significant influences in shaping the thoughts, views and attitudes that he has today.

In his book entitled *A Bold Fresh Piece of Humanity* Bill O’Reilly wrote, “But there is no doubt that the way I think today has its roots in my traditional [Catholic] childhood home and in the strict Catholic schools I attended. Therefore, we’ll take an incisive look at those

influences as well as other significant events in the life of O'Reilly, all with an eye toward convincing you that the point of view I bring to the world is worthy, and might even help you in your life.” (217) Likewise, in his book that he co-authored with Martin Dugard entitled *Killing Jesus A History* Mr. O'Reilly noted, “Martin Dugard and I are both Roman Catholics who were educated in religious [Catholic] schools.” (218)

Although we certainly appreciate Bill O'Reilly's defense of the rights of the unborn and his pro-life position, we cannot help but notice his angry, careless name-calling and labeling of those who disagree with his views as “extremists,” “pin heads,” on “the far left” or on “the far right.” (219) Why is this kind of commentary dangerous? It is a form of destructive and dangerous propaganda that may incite horrific consequences in the future.

Thankfully, I'm not the only observer who has become concerned about this. “In early 2007, researchers from the Indiana University School of Journalism published a report that analyzed O'Reilly's “Talking Points Memo” segment. Using analysis techniques developed in the 1930's by the Institute for Propaganda Analysis, the study concluded that O'Reilly used propaganda, frequently engaged in name-calling, and consistently cast non-Americans as threats and never “in the role of victim or hero.” [54][55] O'Reilly responded, asserting that “the terms ‘conservative,’ ‘liberal,’ ‘left,’ ‘right,’ ‘progressive,’ ‘traditional’ and ‘centrist’ were considered name-calling if they were associated with a problem or social ill.” The study's authors claimed that those terms were only considered name-calling when linked to derogatory qualifiers. [56]” (220)

This continual labeling of those who disagree with O'Reilly's opinions or criticize his positions as “extremists,” “far right” and “far left” serves to MARGINALIZE AND VILIFY INDIVIDUALS AND ENTIRE COMMUNITIES OF PEOPLE. WHY IS THIS DANGEROUS? THIS IS PRECISELY WHAT THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH DID TO PROTESTANTS, EVANGELICALS, (ANA)-BAPTISTS AND JEWS FOR CENTURIES. FIRST THEY WERE MARGINALIZED. THEN THEY WERE VILIFIED TO THE PUBLIC. SOON THEREAFTER, THEY WERE CRIMINALIZED. FINALLY, THEY WERE TRACKED DOWN AND EXTERMINATED LIKE ANIMALS. THE RESULTS WERE BEYOND HORRIFIC! TENS OF MILLIONS OF PEOPLE DIED IN ROMAN CATHOLIC INCITED ASSASSINATIONS, MASSACRES, INQUISITIONS, WARS AND HOLOCAUSTS. THE POOR, DECEIVED, BRAIN-WASHED ROMAN CATHOLICS WERE TAUGHT THAT PROTESTANTS, EVANGELICALS, (ANA)-BAPTISTS AND JEWS WERE “DISLOYAL” TO THE POPE, “HERETICS,” “EXTREMISTS,” OR “INFIDELS” WHO WERE WORTHY OF THE SENTENCE OF DEATH. THE MAJORITY OF ROMAN CATHOLICS WHO CARRIED OUT THESE HORRIBLE, EVIL DEEDS SINCERELY THOUGHT THAT THEY WERE DOING SERVICE TO GOD, THE POPES AND THE “HOLY” ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH. HOW? THE HEARTS AND THE MINDS OF THE PEOPLE WERE FIRST CONDITIONED BY MEANS OF ANTI-PROTESTANT, ANTI-(ANA)-BAPTIST AND ANTI-SEMITIC ROMAN CATHOLIC PROPAGANDA.

Fast forward to the present. How many Roman Catholic employers, teachers, professors, journalists, judges, lawyers, bankers, police officers, doctors, surgeons, health care providers, politicians, military officers, national security leaders and public officials harbor this Anti-Protestant/Evangelical, Anti-Baptist bias in their hearts and minds today. Could the influence of their priests/confessors and the teachings of Roman Catholicism have an impact on how they regard and treat Protestants, Evangelicals, Baptists and others even in the present? Also, as it was in the past, the Roman Catholic church has a vast army of lawyers and judges ready and willing to carry out her legal agenda in the courts when requested. IN

**ADDITION, THROUGHOUT CHURCH HISTORY, UNDER THE GUISE OF “THE LAW” [i.e., unjust laws established by Roman Catholic leaders], ROME HAS FREQUENTLY USED HER AGENTS IN THE COURTS OF LAW TO CARRY OUT HER THEFTS, PERSECUTIONS AND OPPRESSIONS AGAINST PROTESTANTS, EVANGELICALS AND BAPTISTS.**

Moreover, what occurs in a nation when the Roman Catholic church gains great influence and political power? In the book entitled *THE OTHER SIDE OF ROME* author John Wilder found, “Not only has Rome not hesitated in using the firebrand and blade against any human being who resists its will, but it has dealt heavily with THE RIGHTS OF CITIZENS by other effective means. In most Catholic lands such lofty ideals as freedom of worship, freedom of the press and freedom of public expression are largely but wishful dreams on the part of non-Catholic peoples. And Rome has rigidly controlled public education wherever it has had the power to do so. There are nations in the world today where all the schools, both public and private, are required by law to teach Catholic doctrines, history and rituals as compulsory curricula. To control the schools is to control the minds of children. From this point on it is a

---

simple step to the control of governments by the Catholic clergy...”

“...BUT DOES ROME HAVE SUCH DESIGNS ON AMERICA? DR. MONTANO SOUNDS A SOMBER WARNING TO THE UNITED STATES THAT ROME HAS SET ITSELF TO THE GOAL OF RULING THIS NATION. This control would be exercised by the priesthood, as it has been in every other land touched by the powers of the pope. This learned writer predicts fearful consequences for the nation if the Roman clergy is eventually allowed to dominate the country. Such a domination, says Dr. Montano, would close Protestant churches and seal the doom of their missionaries to other countries. It would introduce the inquisitorial system that would lead to bloodshed and murder. IT WOULD INITIATE A REVOLUTION WITH ALL THE SANGUINARY CONFLICTS THAT HAVE CHARACTERIZED ROMAN RULE ALL OVER THE WORLD. SUCH A DOMINATION WOULD DESTROY THE ECONOMIC SYSTEM AND THE NATIONAL WEALTH, AND WOULD MEAN THE ABOLITION OF FREEDOM OF WORSHIP, FREEDOM OF THE PRESS AND FREEDOM OF PUBLIC EXPRESSION. THE ONLY VOICE PERMITTED [IN MEDIA, GOVERNMENT, MILITARY, NATIONAL SECURITY, HEALTH CARE] WOULD BE THE VOICE OF ROME...”

“...Lest one think that Dr. Montano is a renegade priest who could not meet the stern demands of the Catholic clergy, let it be known that he is at this writing the Consul of the Bolivian government to Los Angeles, California, and until recently he was Secretary of State of Bolivia. Paul Blanshard, lawyer, writer and defender of the American way of life, echoes the alarming views of other American scholars when he writes of THE SPREADING INFLUENCE OF ROME IN THE UNITED STATES. CALLING ATTENTION TO THE CATHOLIC PLAN FOR AMERICA, THIS AUTHOR STATES THAT THE GOAL OF ROME IS A TOTALLY CATHOLIC [GLOBAL] CIVILIZATION – RELIGIOUS, MEDICAL, ECONOMIC AND POLITICAL – A [GLOBAL] CIVILIZATION IN WHICH THE CHURCH OF ROME WILL BE THE SOLE MISTRESS AND LEADER OF ALL OTHER SOCIETIES...” (221)

Mr. Wilder observed, “...In its most simple terms this would mean in this country the support of all Catholic institutions with public money, the subjugation of, if not the forced abandonment of, all other forms of worship, and the iron control of society that has marked the history of every other nation that has come under the shadow of papal authority. THIS

PLAN FOR AMERICA WOULD BE EFFECTED BY SIMPLE MEANS. THE CATHOLIC CHURCH WILL MAINTAIN AND INCREASE THE NUMBER OF CATHOLICS IN THE UNITED STATES (THIS EXPLAINS THE RIGID CATHOLIC ATTITUDE TOWARD BIRTH CONTROL), IT WILL EXPAND ITS SCHOOLS WITH PUBLIC MONEY, AND IT WILL INFILTRATE AND PENETRATE NON-CATHOLIC ORGANIZATIONS WITH ITS LAYMEN WHO WILL ACT AS SOLDIERS AND MISSIONARIES OF ROME. TO THESE METHODS LISTED BY THIS EMINENT AUTHOR SHOULD BE ADDED ONE MORE DEVICE BY WHICH ROME IS EVEN AT THIS TIME CAPTURING THE MINDS OF THE AMERICAN PEOPLE. THAT DEVICE IS PROPAGANDA...[I.E., INTERNET, TELEVISION, RADIO, MAGAZINES, NEWSPAPERS, MOVIES, ETC.]”

“...In speaking of Catholic schools, just how effective is this instrument in promoting the power of Catholicism in this country? Emmett McLoughlin, the well-known and popular ex-priest of Arizona, gives a doleful view of Catholic education in the United States. He says that millions of children are enrolled in Catholic schools. But the object of education in Catholic schools is not to help the child as an individual. THE OBJECT IS TO MAKE HIM A MORE LOYAL SUBJECT OF THE [CATHOLIC] CHURCH. THIS SOCIOLOGIST SAYS THAT IN A CATHOLIC SCHOOL THE CHILD ENCOUNTERS NOT MENTAL DEVELOPMENT BUT THOUGHT CONTROL. HE IS NOT TAUGHT LEARNING; HE IS TAUGHT LOYALTY TO ROME. HE IS NOT EDUCATED. HE IS TRAINED...”

“...It is nothing short of insanity not to give attention to the words of these scholarly writers. THE CATHOLIC CHURCH IS GAINING IN AMERICA. IT AFFIRMS AT THIS TIME [1959] THAT SIXTY PERCENT OF THE HIGHER EMPLOYEES IN FEDERAL GOVERNMENT OFFICES ARE CATHOLICS, AND SPECIAL DEPARTMENTS IN ITS UNIVERSITIES ARE TURNING OUT HUNDREDS OF YOUNG MEN AND WOMEN ESPECIALLY TRAINED FOR GOVERNMENT SERVICE. THE [ROMAN CATHOLIC] CHURCH WON AN EPOCHAL SUCCESS IN 1939 WHEN THE UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT APPOINTED ITS FIRST ENVOY TO THE VATICAN. ON EVERY HAND, THE INCREASING POWER AND INFLUENCE OF ROME ARE BEING FELT IN THIS COUNTRY. IN A FEW GENERATIONS THE CHURCH OF ROME HAS GROWN FROM THE SMALLEST TO THE LARGEST IN MEMBERSHIP. IT HAS GROWN FAT ON THE VERY LIBERTIES IT HAS BEEN SO CAREFUL TO SUBDUE IN EVERY NATION THAT HAS FELT THE FULL WEIGHT OF ITS HEEL. AMERICA, WITH ITS BROAD MIND TOWARD RELIGION, ITS ATTITUDE OF FRIENDLY TOLERANCE TOWARD THE PHILOSOPHIES OF OTHERS, ITS GUARANTEED FREEDOM OF WORSHIP BUTTRESSED BY A GREAT CONSTITUTION, AND ITS LONGSUFFERING PATIENCE EVEN WITH ITS ENEMIES, HAS FURNISHED A VERITABLE GREENHOUSE ENVIRONMENT FOR THE GROWTH OF CATHOLIC POWER...” (222)

Another question arises as we consider the Vatican’s influence over her agents in the various professions. Do many Roman Catholics harboring Anti-Protestant/Evangelical/Baptist bias in positions of leadership help shape the thinking, views and attitudes of other employees and the general public in a negative, biased way toward Bible-believing *Christians*? Is there a Jesuit/Vatican strategy being carried out to falsely categorize “Fundamentalist” *Christians* (I.E., ALL THOSE WHO REMAIN SEPARATE FROM ROME) with “Fundamentalist” Muslims, jihadists, extremists, etc. thereby seeking to vilify these believers to the public?

As Bible-believing *Christians*, we believe that we should respect authority. In the Scriptures of truth we find that human government is an institution created by God for the purpose of maintaining order in our society, rewarding good, and punishing evil as set forth in the



teachings of the apostle Paul in Romans 13:1-10 and of the apostle Peter in 1 Peter 2:13-17. These Scriptures teach us to honor and respect authority and pay taxes. In fact, biblical Christianity teaches good citizenship. Thus, as Bible-believing *Christians*, we are not anti-government or anarchists.

As *Christians*, the Holy Bible teaches us to obey the laws of the land. The only exception is when a law is passed that requires us to do that which is against God's Word – the Holy Bible. Such laws would include bad, unjust laws that are clearly in violation of the *LORD's* higher laws revealed in the Scriptures of truth. As Biblical *Christians*, we recognize, as did the founders of our nation, that there is a higher authority than the State. That higher authority is the *LORD (JHVH)* and His eternal laws found in the Holy Bible. Our supreme allegiance is first and foremost to our *God* and obedience of His Word – the Holy Bible. We will not disobey our *LORD* in order to obey the unjust laws of men (or women). We are under no obligation to obey laws that are clearly contrary to our Christian faith. Moreover, our obedience to the laws of the land must not be used to grant government authorities a free pass to abuse their authority to commit acts of oppression, despotism or tyranny.

One of my concerns is the extent of influence Rome currently has over her agents serving in leadership positions within government agencies (including military and national security). For example, consider the Department of Homeland Security of the United States. Founded in November of 2002 after the 9/11/2001 terrorist attacks, the Department of Homeland Security is a cabinet department of the United States federal government. It is responsible for "...protecting the United States of America and U.S. Territories (including Protectorates) from and responding to terrorist attacks, man-made accidents, and natural disasters. In January 2009, Janet Napolitano became the Secretary of Homeland Security. "In fiscal year 2011 it was allocated a budget of \$98.8 billion and spent, net, \$66.4 billion. Whereas the Department of Defense is charged with military actions abroad, the Department of Homeland Security works in the civilian sphere to protect the United States within, at, and outside its borders. Its stated goal is to prepare for, prevent, and respond to domestic emergencies, particularly terrorism." (223) The policies and practices of the DHS are coordinated at the White House by a Homeland Security Council. Following its creation, 22 more federal agencies were incorporated into the DHS. During the past decade, the DHS has grown to become the third largest cabinet department of the federal government. With approximately 216,000 employees, only the Departments of Defense and Veterans Affairs are larger.

We are truly thankful for the quality work of the many thousands of dedicated, fair, un-biased against Protestants/Baptists/Evangelicals professional DHS employees who are serving all Americans in the vital mission of national security. To prevent the valid threat of terrorist attacks, a reasonable amount of surveillance and investigation is necessary. For example, the surveillance of Muslim jihadists who would plan and carry out terrorist actions against U.S. civilians and government employees as has occurred many times, is valid and necessary. However, many people now targeted by the DHS, NSA, and other agencies for surveillance and investigation are not valid terrorist threats. My valid concern is how will the decision to create "a mass surveillance society" impact the political, religious, and personal freedoms that our forefathers fought and died to preserve? Moreover, since when did it become necessary for "national security" to put all U.S. citizens under continual surveillance? Why is it now necessary to monitor the movements, communications, and actions of all ordinary citizens throughout the nation?

Proponents of the new mass surveillance society will argue: “If you aren’t doing something wrong, then you have nothing to fear from our actions.” Well this same mindset can be restated as, “As long as you do what we tell you, you have nothing to fear from us.” Thus, the public is conditioned to accept a totalitarian, mass surveillance police state under the guise of “national security.” This was the “national security” model used in the nations of Europe dominated by Roman Catholicism in past centuries. Just a coincidence? We need only read the April 2009 Department of Homeland Security report and the new January 31, 2012 DHS report to see the anti-biblical *Christian* bias and attempted vilification of people who do not believe in abortion, Universalism, Socialism / Marxism / Communism, Romanism, and/or New Age Globalism. We respectfully disagree with the erroneous presuppositions and conclusions of the leftist authors of these reports.

Was there A HIDDEN AGENDA involved in the forming of the Department of Homeland Security and the establishment of many new federal laws and executive orders after 9-11-01 which clearly diminished key constitutional protections of the American people? Keep in mind that the DHS is the result of a consolidation of 22 federal agencies in 2002. In his 1953 book *Science and Human Behavior* B. F. Skinner observed, “In a totalitarian state all agencies are brought together under a single super-agency.” (224)

In the February 04, 2008 article “Rule by fear or rule by law? by Lewis Seller and Dan Hamburg at [http://articles.sfgate.com/2008-02-04/opinions/17140386\\_1\\_martial-law-kbr-national-defense-authorizatio...](http://articles.sfgate.com/2008-02-04/opinions/17140386_1_martial-law-kbr-national-defense-authorizatio...) revealed much. It reads, “The power of the Executive to cast a man into prison without formulating any charge known to the law, and particularly to deny him the judgment of his peers, is in the highest degree odious and is the foundation of all totalitarian government whether Nazi or Communist.” – Winston Churchill, Nov. 21, 1943

Since 9/11, and seemingly without the notice of most Americans, the federal government has assumed the authority to institute martial law, arrest a wide swath of dissidents (citizen and noncitizen alike), and detain people without legal or constitutional recourse in the event of “an emergency influx of immigrants in the U.S., or to support the rapid development of new programs.” Beginning in 1999, the government has entered into a series of single-bid contracts with Halliburton subsidiary Kellogg, Brown and Root (KBR) to build detention camps in undisclosed locations within the United States. The government has also contracted with several companies to build thousands of railcars, some reportedly equipped with shackles, ostensibly to transport detainees. According to diplomat and author Peter Dale Scott, the KBR contract is part of a Homeland Security plan titled *ENDGAME*, which sets as its goal the removal of “all removable aliens” and “potential terrorists”... Sect. 1042 of the 2007 National Defense Authorization Act (NDAA), “Use of the Armed Forces in Major Public Emergencies,” gives the executive the power to invoke martial law. For the first time in more than a century, the president is now authorized to use the military in response to “a natural disaster, a disease outbreak, a terrorist attack or any other condition in which the President determines that domestic violence has occurred to the extent that state officials cannot maintain public order....”

“...The Military Commissions Act of 2006, rammed through Congress just before the 2006 midterm elections, allows for the indefinite imprisonment of anyone who donates money to a charity that turns up on a list of “terrorist” organizations, or who speaks out against the government’s policies. The law calls for secret trials for citizens and noncitizens alike. Also, in 2007, the White House quietly issued National Security Presidential Directive 51 (NSPD-51), to

ensure “continuity of government” in the event of what the document vaguely calls a “catastrophic emergency.” Should the president determine that such an emergency has occurred, he and he alone is empowered to do whatever he deems necessary to ensure “continuity of government.” This could include everything from canceling elections to suspending the Constitution to launching a nuclear attack...”

“...According to author Naomi Wolf, the National Counterterrorism Center holds the names of roughly 775,000 “terror suspects” with the number increasing by 20,000 per month. What could the government be contemplating that leads it to make contingency plans to detain without recourse millions of its own citizens? The constitution does not allow the executive to have unchecked power under any circumstances. The people must not allow the president to use the war on terrorism to rule by fear instead of by law.” (225) Also, see the Main Core government database listing millions of Americans labeled as “threats” to national security.

With no intention of causing unfair suspicion or misrepresentation of our Catholic neighbors, may we be allowed to ask some valid questions? Since Roman Catholics now hold key leadership positions within the Department of Homeland Security and exert considerable influence within this government agency, what safeguards have been established to prevent anti-Protestant or anti-Biblical *Christian* bias or targeting being carried out by Catholics against Protestants and/or Biblical *Christians* in their work? Moreover, what safeguards are in place within the CIA (formerly directed by Roman Catholic John Brennan) and NSA to prevent anti-Protestant or anti-Biblical *Christian* bias or targeting being carried out by Catholics against Protestants and/or Biblical *Christians* in their work?

Many will answer that people from other faiths also work for the DHS, NSA and CIA and have influence. True. However, there are two significant differences. 1) Roman Catholic priests have a far greater influence on them. People of other faiths do not believe that their salvation is dependent on the favor, grace, prayers and forgiveness of sins granted through the priests and/or bishops of the Roman Catholic church. 2) People of other faiths are not part of the truly world-wide government system known as the Roman Catholic church which claims significant authority over the rulers of nations.

As Bible-believing *Christians*, we tend to think of the relationship between a Roman Catholic priest and Roman Catholic church member as similar to the relationship between a biblical pastor and a biblical church member. But they are, in fact, far from the same. The Roman Catholic is taught that his or her priest or bishop has power to forgive his or her sins, grant absolution, grant indulgences, etc. (226), Thus, the Catholic is led to believe that his or her salvation and status after death (and the liberation of the souls of his deceased loved ones in purgatory) is dependent on his or her favor and standing with the priest and the Roman Catholic church. To the Catholic, salvation is obtained (by means of the sacraments) or lost (via excommunication) through the Roman Catholic church. Thus, in his or her mind, the Catholic’s relationship to the priest and Roman Catholic church is very important.

WHEREAS, FOR THE BIBLICAL CHRISTIAN, OUR ETERNAL SALVATION IS BASED TOTALLY ON PERSONAL FAITH IN THE COMPLETED, ONCE FOR ALL SACRIFICE (SINGULAR) OF JESUS CHRIST ON CALVARY FOR OUR SINS (HEBREWS 10:1-19, 1 PETER 3:18, 1 JOHN 1:7-10; 2:1-2). OUR ETERNAL SALVATION AND FORGIVENESS OF SINS IS MEDIATED DIRECTLY FROM JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF AND IS NOT DEPENDENT ON OUR FAVOR OR STATUS WITH A PASTOR, PRIEST, BISHOP OR CHURCH (ACTS 4:12, 1 TIMOTHY 2:5, HEBREWS 7:25). THE DIFFERENCE IS HUGE!

Consequently, the INFLUENCE of the Roman Catholic priest or bishop on the Catholic church member is far greater than that of the biblical pastor with a member of a biblical church. Subsequently, we are compelled to ask, How much sensitive information is passed on to the priests of Rome, whether purposely or inadvertently, during auricular confession? We must remember that, throughout church history, one of the most powerful tools used by the priests of Rome to gain information, influence and dominion over kings, queens, princes, princesses, governors, judges, military officers, national security agents, police officers and the common people is auricular confession. By means of this method a strong influence, control and bondage over the soul of the penitent by the father-confessor develops. Again, with no intention of causing unfair suspicion or misrepresentation of our Catholic neighbors, may we ask another question? To what extent do the priests of Rome influence Roman Catholics who are in positions of government leadership or are working for government agencies? REMEMBER THAT THE VATICAN IS CARRYING OUT A GLOBAL AGENDA. Likewise, may we be permitted to ask one more valid question? To what extent do these Roman Catholic teachings influence Catholics working at the DHS, NSA, CIA and other government agencies?

Historically, as reported in the book *The Jesuits Their Moral Maxims and Plots against Kings, Nations and Churches* by author and historian James Aitken Wylie (227), Jesuit strategy has been to form a council of the agents of Rome within the larger council of the leaders of an agency or organization (“a council within the council”). The group of Roman Catholics within this smaller council are given the task of influencing other members of the larger council to approve actions which will help advance the Vatican’s agenda.

Over the years, the Jesuit order has successfully used the practice of infiltration to advance the leftist-controlled Vatican agenda. They have found that by working from within an agency or organization, far more is accomplished. Using the techniques of suggestion and guided influence, the appearance of consensus of decision-making within the larger group is maintained. People in the larger, general group are unaware of the fact that they are being carefully steered in a specific direction to carry out the Vatican’s agenda in the process of reaching consensus. I believe that this is likely what occurred during the time of the Bush Administration after 9-11- 01 concerning the centralization of law enforcement and national security. The result was the establishment of the Department of Homeland Security and many new laws which diminished key constitutional protections of the American people such as the [un]Patriot Act, etc.

Furthermore, it is no accident that the first Secretary appointed to lead the newly formed Department of Homeland Security was a Roman Catholic politician and attorney named Tom Ridge. Previously, Mr. Ridge had served as Assistant to the President for Homeland Security from 2001-2003. This placed him in a prime position to influence national and international security strategy and plans. Just imagine how much influence and authority one can exercise in the direction of a nation when he or she has been put in charge of an agency that is the consolidation/unification of 22 federal agencies. By the way, Mr. Ridge was called the “executioner” in Pennsylvania while he was governor. After leaving the DHS post in 2005, Ridge formed “Ridge Global, LLC.” The specific purpose of this company is “Advancing the security and economic interests of businesses and governments worldwide.” (228)

“In 2006 Ridge signed a one year contract with the Albanian government to help Albania [a former Nazi protectorate] “develop an overall homeland defense strategy based on land, air and sea security.” The contract identified Ridge as the “lead on strategic advice for the

Albanian government...According to a September 2006 Associated Press article, Ridge's "main priority" was "to help Albania meet its goal of joining NATO in 2008...Appointed to National Red Cross Governance Board by President George W. Bush on 17 April, 2003." (229)

Now, let us consider a hypothetical scenario. Keep in mind that this is only a hypothetical scenario. Let us suppose that Mr. Ridge decided to direct DHS policy and practice to be in accord with Rome's agenda. Hypothetically speaking, who, outside of the Roman Catholic church, would know for certain that this was occurring or be able to prevent him from doing this? The same question could be asked concerning a military chief of staff, general, cabinet member or advisor.

Consequently, we are compelled to ask, since the Vatican has for decades been considered an ally of the United States government, has important security data or personal data concerning *Christians* who choose to separate from the Roman Catholic church been passed on to the Vatican via agents of the United States government? Since Mr. Ridge now works for "businesses and governments worldwide," to what extent has he or his associates been involved in aiding Vatican interests in these nation-states?

**MOREOVER, SINCE ROME HAS OFTEN INFLUENCED AND DIRECTED ITS AGENTS IN FEDERAL GOVERNMENTS "WORLD-WIDE" TO HELP SET UP AND CARRY OUT THE PERSECUTIONS, HOLOCAUSTS, MASSACRES AND INQUISITIONS AGAINST GROUPS SUCH AS: 1) THE CATHARS 2) THE WALDENSES 3) THE ALBIGENSES 4) THE HUGUENOTS 5) THE ANA-BAPTISTS 6) THE ORTHODOX SERBS 6) THE JEWS 7) THE CALVANISTS, ETC., COULD ROME DO LIKEWISE TO THOSE "FUNDAMENTALIST" GROUPS OF *CHRISTIANS* IN THE TWENTY-FIRST CENTURY WHO INSIST ON STAYING SEPARATE FROM ROME? IS IT POSSIBLE THAT THE DEPARTMENT OF HOMELAND SECURITY COULD BE USED, ALONG WITH MERCENARIES, AS ROME'S TOOL TO AID IN SETTING UP AND CARRYING OUT A FUTURE NEW INQUISITION IN NORTH AMERICA AGAINST THOSE LABELED "FUNDAMENTALIST" *CHRISTIANS* WHO REJECT THE NEW WORLD ORDER? IMPOSSIBLE OR PLAUSIBLE?**

How? First, by means of anti-Fundamentalist *Christian* propaganda. Let's begin by examining three reports demonstrating a distinct kind of leftist bias and hatred from those working with the DHS directed toward Bible-believing *Christians* and freedom-loving people. The end result of these DHS reports is the vilification of targeted groups.

1) The "Assessment" report issued 7 April 2009 by the Department of Homeland Security (DHS) 2) The January 31, 2012 DHS report entitled "Hot Spots of Terrorism and Other Crimes in the United States, 1970-2008," Final Report to Human Factors/Behavioral Sciences Division, Science and Technology Directorate, U.S. Department of Homeland Security 3) The 20 February 2009 Missouri State Highway Patrol document – MIAC Strategic Report – "The Modern Militia Movement"

In these documents there is obvious bias, religious profiling and political profiling found. (230) We need only obtain answers to three questions to discover what occurred at these agencies: 1) From whom did the apparent anti-Protestant/Evangelical/Baptist bias observed in these reports come? 2) What is the religious and political background of these authors? 3) Who was the target of their bias?

Do you remember the "Assessment" issued 7 April 2009 by the Department of Homeland Security which served to politicize national security and law-enforcement? Do you recall how those who believe in "end times prophecies" and a coming "one world government" were falsely portrayed in this report? They were lumped together with and falsely portrayed as

“rightwing extremists,” “white supremacists,” “antigovernment,” part of “the militia movement,” or part of “rightwing terrorist groups.” In fact, according to this “Assessment,” those who are against any of the following: gun control efforts; free trade agreements; abortion; inter-racial crimes; same-sex marriage; or illegal immigration were lumped together with and falsely portrayed with the previously mentioned five titles/labels. It is interesting to note that in Revelation 12:9-10 *“the Devil” (Satan)* is called *“the accuser of our brethren.”* It would make sense that his anti-Bible, anti-*Christian* spiritual children would do likewise.

Well, you’ll be glad to know that this author is, in fact, not a rightwing extremist (or a leftwing extremist), a white supremacist, anti-government, a member of a “rightwing militia,” or a member of a “rightwing terrorist group.” I do, however, believe that end time Bible prophecies are 100% true and accurate. I do believe in a literal 2<sup>nd</sup> coming of Jesus, and the truths set forth in this book. I am against Anarchism, Marxism/Socialism/Communism, Fascism, totalitarianism, despotism, tyranny, unrighteous laws, and government abuse of authority (Isaiah 10:1). Furthermore, I have no intentions, whatsoever, of ceasing to believe these biblical truths by means of anti-Christian, anti-Bible, left-wing (or any other wing) government intimidation, “reeducation” camps or false propaganda.

Keep in mind that this false report was only “one of a series of intelligence assessments” sent out to “...federal, state, local, and tribal counterterrorism and law enforcement officials...” This demonically inspired “Assessment,” loaded with false stereotypes, created such a public outcry that DHS found it necessary to apologize to veterans who were offended. But, to date, a public apology has not been given by DHS to Bible-believing *Christians*. Why? Could there come a time in our nation when Bible-believing *Christians* will be portrayed as “dissidents,” “extremists,” a “threat” to national security, or “enemies of the state?” It has already gotten to the point in the U.S.A. that if you believe strongly about anything, except Progressivism / Socialism, you are now regarded as a possible threat to the government.

Moreover, these same religious profiling prejudices propagated via a leftist-controlled DHS are infecting others in their sphere of influence as well. Just how many international, federal, state, and local leaders, law enforcement officials, and citizens now harbor similar anti-*Christian* prejudices and false conclusions expressed in these assessments? Do you remember the 20 February 2009 Missouri State Highway Patrol document – MIAC Strategic Report – “The Modern Militia Movement”? With features remarkably similar to the 7 April, 2009 DHS report which politicized national security and law-enforcement, this Missouri state report likewise attempted to lump together and portray citizens who are anti-abortion (including pro-life *Christians*) or believe in a coming world government under the Antichrist (the teaching held by Bible-believers) as being potentially dangerous people, members of right-wing militias, or possible domestic terrorists. The report targets the beliefs of many Bible-believing *Christians* and conservatives. It appears that the authors of the 20 February, 2009 MIAC Strategic Report prepared it with the deliberate purpose of vilifying Bible-believing *Christians* and conservatives, their beliefs and associating them with militias and violent criminals (231). This current trend is beyond disturbing.

Couple this with the militarization of law enforcement being carried out by the DHS and other groups. This aids in preparing our nation for totalitarian rule in the future. For example, consider the order by the Department of Homeland Security (DHS) and its Immigration and Customs Enforcement (ICE) office of an “indefinite delivery” of an “indefinite quantity” of up to 450 million hollow point .40 caliber bullets from defense contractor ATK

(232). These HST bullets are deadly. They are designed to tear through flesh and kill people. But since the work of the DHS and ICE is primarily in the United States, we are compelled to ask who would be their potential future targets? U.S. citizens and poor immigrants? Or are they planning to use their bullets in Mexico?;

Also, do you remember the “fast and furious” gun smuggling scandal of the ATF under the direction of U.S. Department of Justice (DOJ) whereby agents put at least 2,000 deadly weapons (only the tip of the ice-burg) into the hands of drug cartel thugs in Mexico? These same weapons were then used to kill a U.S. Border Patrol agent and hundreds of Mexicans. (233) Why? What was the real purpose? Was it to supply another rationale for new firearms legislation in the U.S.A.? These actions in no way facilitate an atmosphere of peace, order, and trust of the government in the public. On the contrary, they only serve to fuel a growing distrust and anger toward federal law-enforcement agencies and help create a hostile atmosphere in the United States. But, perhaps, that is their diabolical intent.

It is also important to note that profiles based on the beliefs of Bible-believing *Christians* are presented as categories of “ideological motivation” for terrorism in the January 31, 2012 DHS report entitled “Hot Spots of Terrorism and Other Crimes in the United States, 1970-2008,” Final Report to Human Factors/Behavioral Sciences Division, Science and Technology Directorate, U.S. Department of Homeland Security (234). A very real and dangerous leftist bias against Bible-believing *Christians* is clearly demonstrated on pages nine and ten of the report which includes quotes from “Profiles of Perpetrators of Terrorism-United States report compiled by the National Consortium for the Study of Terrorism and Responses to Terrorism (Miller, Smarick, and Simone, 2011).” This report looks like a study that would be created in Communist China or the former USSR.

In this report, the following beliefs are portrayed as the “ideological motivation” for terrorism in United States: “believe that one’s personal and/or national “way of life” is under attack...”; “believe in the need to be prepared for an attack either by participating in paramilitary preparations and training or survivalism...”; “be fiercely nationalistic [as opposed to universal and globalist in orientation]” [i.e., anti-Universalism]; “anti-global” [i.e., anti-global government]; “suspicious of centralized federal authority” [i.e., opposed to Marxism and Fascism] ; “reverent of individual liberty” [i.e., loyal to the first and second amendments of the U. S. Constitution]; “believe in conspiracy theories...”; “impose strict religious tenets or laws on society (fundamentalists) [i.e., such as the ten commandments which were the original basis of civil and criminal laws in Western Civilization],”; “forcibly insert religion into the political sphere (e.g., those who seek to politicize religion)...”; “supported political movements for autonomy...” [i.e., pro-liberty]; “anti-abortion” [i.e., pro-life]; “anti-Catholic”; anti-nuclear”; “anti-Castro [i.e., anti-Communism / Marxism / Socialism.”

This report serves to vilify millions of people and cause them to be regarded as suspects in the New (totalitarian) America. A convenient, superficial disclaimer is found at the beginning of this report. However, statements in the report clearly contradict the disclaimer and indicate intent to influence DHS decisions and policymaking. Their aim is to “support policymakers in developing prevention efforts” and “provide timely guidance on how to disrupt terrorist networks,...” Also, note that the authors use the term “anti-Catholic” in place of “anti-Christian” or “anti-Protestant.” This reveals the anti-Protestant / Evangelical / Baptist bias of the authors. No mention is made of the many acts of terrorism of Muslims, Marxists / Socialists or advocates of liberation theology. Why? Is this report influenced by a leftist Catholic bias?

Of special note is how the label “fundamentalists” is used in the report. This helps to reveal the anti-Protestant/Baptist/Evangelical presuppositions and beliefs of the authors. It is implied that the beliefs of all categories of fundamentalists (including Christian, Jewish, and Muslim) have “ideological motivation” for terrorism. But, in fact, 1) The beliefs of fundamentalist *Christians* do not provide an “ideological motivation” for terrorism. 2) The beliefs of fundamentalist *Christians* are not the same as those of fundamentalist Muslims or fundamentalist Jews. The authors demonstrate a very real bias and lack of understanding of these differences and appear to lump Christian fundamentalists together with the other religious groups. Why was this done? It doesn’t take long to find the answers.

Whereas, there is absolutely no teaching found in New Testament Christianity that provides an “ideological motivation” for acts of terrorism to be carried out by authentic *Christians* against others. Moreover, “Fundamentalist”; “Biblical” or “Evangelical” *Christians* seek to live by the New Testament teachings of Jesus Christ and His apostles. Muslim fundamentalism is not the same as Christian fundamentalism. Genuine, biblical *Christians* are not terrorists and/or jihadists. And terrorists and/or jihadists are not genuine, biblical *Christians*. There is a huge difference between genuine, biblical *Christians* and terrorists and/or jihadists as revealed by Jesus in John 8:43-44; 10:10. Those who attempt to falsely portray these two distinct groups as similar are grossly misrepresenting millions of Bible-believing *Christians* and are helping to propagate a lie from *the Devil* himself.

FACT #1: Unlike Muslim jihadists and the assassins of Rome, biblical *Christians* are not seeking to murder others who don’t convert or submit to their faith through acts of jihad, assassination and/or terrorism. Authentic, biblical *Christians* believe that each person has the God-given right to choose which faith he or she so desires. And we don’t believe in killing someone just because they won’t convert to our faith.

FACT #2: A “Christian Fundamentalist” is a born-again follower of Jesus Christ who believes in the historical, biblical, basic doctrinal *fundamentals of the Christian faith*. A Christian fundamentalist believes that “*sound doctrine*” must be preserved in *the church*. The Christian fundamentalist movement began in the early twentieth century as a response to the theological liberalism and modernism that had spread to many *churches* and schools. In essence, it was a re-assertion of the first century, apostolic, New Testament, doctrinal “fundamentals” of the Christian faith. The beliefs of this movement were most clearly set forth in *The Fundamentals: A Testimony To The Truth*. This is a set of 90 essays in twelve volumes prepared between 1910-1915 by many of the most prominent, conservative, Bible-believing scholars and theologians of the time (235). They were originally published by the Bible Institute of Los Angeles. Read at [http://www.eaec.org/bookstore/the\\_fundamentals.htm](http://www.eaec.org/bookstore/the_fundamentals.htm)

In these writings the following fundamental beliefs are defended: The inerrancy of the Holy Bible; The deity of Jesus; The incarnation of Christ; The virgin birth of Jesus; Justification by grace through faith in Jesus alone; Belief in the blood atonement and death of Jesus for forgiveness of sin; Heaven as a literal place of eternal reward for believers following death; Eternal punishment after death in the literal lake of fire for those who choose to reject salvation through faith in Christ; The bodily resurrection of Jesus; A literal, bodily, visible second *coming* of Jesus Christ. Also, addressed are the following: naturalistic evolution; atheism; Fabian socialism; liberal theology; higher criticism; modern philosophies; Romanism; Christian Science; Mormonism; doctrines of Jehovah’s Witnesses; spiritualism.

FACT #3: Jesus taught His followers (*Christians*) to, “...Love your enemies, do good to them



*which hate you,...*” (Luke 6:27) and *“Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves.”* (Matthew 10:16) Biblical *Christians* interpret these Scriptures “literally.”

FACT #4: Christ Jesus taught, *“Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God.”* (Matthew 5:9) “Fundamentalist” *Christians* seek to follow Christ’s counsel in this verse.

FACT #5: the apostle Paul taught believers to, *“...avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written, Vengeance is mine; I will repay, saith the Lord...Be not overcome of evil [the evil that others have done to us or intend to do to us], but overcome evil with good.”* (Romans 12:19, 21). Bible-believing *Christians* seek to obey this text “literally.”

FACT #6: the author of Hebrews instructs us to, *“Follow [pursue] peace with all men,...”* (Hebrews 12:14) Genuine *Christians* receive these verses as God’s instructions to be obeyed.

FACT #7: Biblical *Christians* believe that literal obedience to Jesus Christ’s commands found in the New Testament Scriptures is an evidence of our love for Him (John 14:15, 21-23). Unfortunately, many of our enemies already know that “fundamentalists” *Christians* interpret these Scriptures “literally” and seek to live by them daily. Are these false portrayals of biblical Christians part of an agenda that is aimed at setting us up for public vilification, mass arrests, and extermination (Matthew 24:9, Revelation 6:9-11)? Just as the Jews were hated and vilified by the Nazi National Socialist German government during the 1930’s, so now are Biblical *Christians* despised by many of the ungodly of our generation. And this hatred toward us (inspired by *the Devil* himself) will only intensify as we draw closer to the return of our Lord Jesus.

Is it plausible that laws passed after 9-11-01 which many thought were created to protect Americans from terrorist attacks, could be turned against us for the purpose of public vilification, mass arrests, and executions by the *Devil’s* spiritual children in the future? (John 8:43-44; 10:10)

In like manner, a definition of terrorism, which, of course, excludes state terrorism, is set forth in the report. Consequently, based on this new report, anyone embracing one or more of these selected beliefs may now be regarded as a “suspect” and/or “potential terrorist” by the Department of Homeland Security. This means that Bible-believing *Christians* can now to be falsely labeled and targeted as “suspects” and/or “potential terrorists” by federal agencies. But the same false portrayal and false classification of biblical *Christians* do not stop there. The same “big lie” is passed on to state and local agencies which they likewise influence. JESUIT INFLUENCE INVOLVED? THE VIEWS OF DECEIVED PROGRESSIVES? OR, IS THE PRIMARY SOURCE OF THIS *ANTICHRIST* INFLUENCE FOUND IN THE (FALLEN ANGEL) LUCIFER-ILLUMINATED LEADERSHIP OF FREEMASONRY? OR, IS THIS INFLUENCE COMING FROM THE LUCIFER-ILLUMINATED LEADERS AMONG EACH OF THESE GROUPS?

In accord with the 7 April 2009 and 31 January 2012 DHS reports, a June 16, 2011 article entitled “Rep. Sheila Jackson Lee Likens Islamic Radicals to ‘Christian Militants’ in U.S.” at CNSNews.com by Penny Starr demonstrates these same false comparisons. She wrote, “Rep. Sheila Jackson Lee (D – Texas) likened “Christian militants” to Islamic radicals in a hearing of the House Homeland Security Committee on Wednesday, suggesting they posed a comparable threat to the rule of law in the United States. At the same hearing, a witness told the committee that the conversion of U.S. prison inmates to radical Islam is an “evolving

threat” to national security. Michael Downing the head of counter-terrorism and special operations at the Los Angeles Police Department, was one of three witnesses who testified at the hearing on Muslim radicalization called by Rep. Peter King, a New York Republican...In his prepared testimony, the LAPD’s Downing said nearly 300 people are spending time in federal prisons on terrorism related charges, including nearly two dozen al-Qaeda-linked terrorists who were involved in the 1993 bombing of the World Trade Center, the 1998 East African embassy bombings, the 1999 millennial plot to bomb the Los Angeles International Airport and the 2000 bombing of the USS Cole. Another witness testified that many prison inmates who are jailed for lower-level crimes emerge from prison “committed to Jihad” because of their contact with Muslim inmates...Rep. Sheila Jackson Lee expressed “angst” about the hearing and compared radicalized Muslims to what she called “radical Christian militants...” (236)

- Likewise, former PBS anchor Robert MacNeil compared Christian fundamentalists and Jewish fundamentalists to Islamic fundamentalists at an annual lecture sponsored by the federal-arts-subsidy lobby. In the article “Former PBS Anchor Attacks Christian ‘Fundamentalists’ As Resembling Islamic Radicals” Tim Graham reported, “...He even went so far as to compare Islamic fundamentalism with Jewish and Christian fundamentalism.” (237)

- During the 1993 Branch Davidian standoff with federal law enforcement agents in Waco, Texas, I recall hearing one of our misinformed and biased Roman Catholic local newscasters refer to David Koresh and the Branch Davidian cult as a “fundamentalist *Christian*” group.

- Also, on the 15 September, 2012 Justice with Judge Jeanine Pirro program on FOX television, two American leaders who were guests both equated “fundamentalist *Christians*” with Militant (jihadist) Muslims as potential threats to national security. No opportunity was given to correct or refute their views. I listened with astonishment as I realized how ignorant and Satanically-deceived people can be in our time.

Let’s consider at least seven amazing “similarities” between the policies and practices of the “war on terrorism” advocated during recent years and the policies and practices of the “war on heretics” carried out by the Roman Catholic church. Are these “similarities” merely coincidental or are both “wars” based on a Roman Catholic Jesuit model of national security, military strategy and law enforcement?

- 1) “Suspects” were vilified and marginalized from the society as a whole.
- 2) “Suspects” were declared guilty by association.
- 3) “Suspects” were declared guilty of a crime without being given the identity of their accusers.
- 4) The mere accusation of a crime was deemed sufficient evidence to arrest and execute the suspect.
- 5) “Suspects” were given a death sentence without a fair trial by jury of their peers.
- 6) “Suspects” targeted were singled out and profiled on the basis of their religious beliefs.
- 7) “Suspects” targeted were deemed guilty until proven innocent (Roman law).

It is noteworthy that we find the term “propaganda” originated in the Roman Catholic church. At the beginning of the Thirty Years’ War, which was started in order to exterminate Protestant heretics, Roman Catholic pope Gregory XV founded the Sacred Congregation for the Propagation of the Faith (sacra congregatio christiano nomini propaganda). The aim was to reassert Roman Catholic teachings and to counter the spread of Protestant and Ana-Baptist teachings in Europe.

One blogger put it this way, “Does the Roman Catholic Church use the media to block out and silence anyone who disagrees with them? I mean just look at what has happened to the careers of anyone who has tried to speak out against the terrorist organization known as the Catholic Church. Stefani Germanotta (Lady Gaga), Susan Sarandon, Sinead O'Connor. Even Richard Dawkins is hesitant to criticize the Roman Catholic “Church”. “Does the Roman Catholic Church use their position of power and influence to censor voices of criticism against their king [the Pope]? I absolutely revile that organization and regret ever having been involved in it. Unfortunately, my name is still in their registry of confirmation/baptism. (238)

Another factor to consider is that the Roman Catholic church is “committed to universal healthcare coverage.” In a May 24, 2012 HEALTHWATCH article entitled “Vatican: Catholic Church ‘committed’ to universal healthcare” by Elise Viebeck we read, “The Vatican said the Catholic Church is “committed to universal healthcare coverage” in a release Thursday that described a speech by one of its leaders before the World Health Assembly. Archbishop Zygmunt Zimoski told the meeting in Geneva on Wednesday that the Vatican supports Resolution WHA64.9, a measure that would urge countries to “plan the transition of their health systems to universal coverage.” (239) This is consistent with the movement toward global health care under the direction of the World Health Assembly. The central question is: Who or what agency will control the “universal coverage?”

But the influence of the Vatican is not only limited to the news media, federal government, military, national security and health care, it also extends to global economy, global trade and global banking. The “spirit of the ages” (the spirit guide known as *Lucifer*) is still at work inspiring and deceiving many. It is this same deceptive “spirit” who led the Vatican in calling for “a new world economic order.” A recent article titled “Vatican urges global econ power” in the *Daily American Republic* from October 24, 2011 further confirms the accuracy of biblical prophecies (Daniel 7:23-25, Revelation 13:7) and the continuing influence of Jesuit birthed liberation theology at the Vatican. The writer reported, “VATICAN CITY (AP) – The Vatican called Monday for radical reform of the world’s financial systems, including the creation of a global political authority to manage the economy. A proposal by the Pontifical Council for Justice and Peace calls for a new world economic order based on ethics and the “achievement of a universal common good.” It follows Pope Benedict XVI’s 2009 economic encyclical that denounced a profit-at-all-cost mentality as responsible for the global financial meltdown. The proposal acknowledges, however, that a “long road still needs to be traveled before arriving at the creation of a public authority with universal jurisdiction” and suggests the reform process begin with the United Nations as a point of reference. Vatican pronouncements on the economy are meant to guide world leaders as well as the global church...” (240)

This report becomes all the more important when we recognize that there are more Roman Catholic representatives in both the United States House and Senate than any other single denomination or religion. Likewise, as of December 2012, six of the nine supreme court

judges, including the chief justice - John Roberts, are Roman Catholics. To what extent does the Roman Catholic church and her teachings influence these Roman Catholic judges and representatives? Furthermore, many other key positions of authority in federal, state and local governments are held by Roman Catholics.

Why are these questions important and why is it a major priority for us (we the people) to hold these officials accountable for their actions and policies? Because their religious beliefs and possible bias have a direct impact on their daily actions and decisions. And their wrong decisions, legislations and policies (especially those in government, military, national security, and law enforcement) may result in the loss of our lives; the lives of our loved ones; our well-being; our freedoms (religious, political and economic); Constitutional rights; safety; livelihood and assets. The past sixteen centuries of Roman Catholic led persecutions against Protestants, Evangelicals and Baptists in church history justify our valid concerns.

Consider how much the decisions of Roman Catholics in key leadership positions may impact the direction of our nation and future wellbeing. Roman Catholic priest Malachi Martin wrote. In his 1990 book, that was dedicated to “the Immaculate Heart,” *THE KEYS OF THIS BLOOD THE STRUGGLE FOR WORLD DOMINION BETWEEN POPE JOHN PAUL II, MIKHAIL GORBACHEV AND THE CAPITALIST WEST*, an expert on the Roman Catholic Church, Jesuit priest and professor at the Vatican’s Pontifical Biblical Institute, the late Malachi Martin wrote, “Willing or not, ready or not, we are all involved in an all-out, no-holds barred, three way global competition. Most of us are not competitors, however. We are the stakes. For the competition is about who will establish the first one-world system of government that has ever existed in the society of nations. It is about who will hold and wield the dual power of authority and control...The competition is all-out because, now that it has started, there is no way it can be reversed or called off...No one can be exempted from its effects. No sector of our lives will remain untouched. The competition began and continues as a three-way affair because that is the number of rivals with sufficient resources to establish and maintain a new world order...

...Nobody who is acquainted with the plans of these three rivals has any doubt but that only one of them can win. Each expects the other two to be overwhelmed and swallowed up in the coming maelstrom of change. That being the case, it would appear inescapable that their competition will end up as a confrontation...As to the time factor involved, those of us who are under seventy will see at least the basic structures of the new world government installed. Those of us under forty will surely live under its legislative, executive, and judiciary authority and control. Indeed, the three rivals themselves – and many more besides as time goes on – speak about this new world order not as something around a distant corner of time, but as something that is imminent...

Pope John Paul II...-himself; his papal persona; the age-old Petrine office he now embodies; and his entire Church Universal, both as an institutional organization unparalleled in the world and as a body of believers united by a bond of mystical communion. **The other two contenders** in the arena of this “greatest historical confrontation humanity has gone through” are no mean adversaries...**Mikhail Sergeyevich Gorbachev**...Master of the Leninist-Marxist Party – State whose power and standing in the community of nations was built upon seventy years of physical and spiritual fratricide carried out in the name of a purely sociopolitical vision and a thoroughly this world ideology. **The final contender in the competition for the new world order is not a single individual leader of a single institution or territory. It is a group of men who are united as one**

in power, mind, and will for the purpose of achieving a single common goal: to be victorious in the competition for the new global hegemony. While the acknowledged public leader and spokesman of this group is the current American president, the contenders who compose this assemblage of individuals are Americans and Europeans who, taken together, represent every nation of the Western democratic alliance...”

...Unremittingly globalist in their vision and their activities, these individuals operate from two principal bases of power. The first is the power base of finance, industry and technology. Entrepreneurial in their occupations, the men in this phalanx qualify themselves and are often referred to by others, as Transnationalist in their outlook. What they mean by the term “Transnationalist” is that they intend to, and increasingly do, exercise their entrepreneurship on a worldwide basis...Members of the second phalanx of this group of globalist contenders – Internationalists, as they are frequently called – bring with them invaluable experience in government, in intergovernmental relationships, and in the rarefied art of international politics. Their bent is toward the development of new and even wider interrelationships between the governments of the world. Their aim is to foster increasing cooperation on an international basis – and to do that by maintaining the peace, at the same time they accomplish what war has already achieved: the breakdown of all the old natural and artificial barriers between nations...

...In the current competition to establish and head a one-world government, Transnationalists and Internationalists can be said for all practical purposes to act as one; to constitute one main contender. The Genuine Globalists of the West...both groups share the same philosophy about human life and its ultimate meaning – a philosophy that appears, in the surprised view of some observers, to be closer to Mikhail Gorbachev’s than to Pope John Paul’s. There is one great similarity shared by all three of these geopolitical competitors. **Each one has in mind a particular grand design for one world governance...Their geopolitical competition is about which of the three will form, dominate and run the world system that will replace the decaying nation system...** Rather, the new globalist mind envisioned an interdependence that would somehow accommodate the fact of the world as a shrinking place, but would also leave each nation its own identity...” (241)

In his book Martin presented, in essence, three competing visions for the kind of “New World Order” that is to be established to take the place of the decaying “nation state” system. The three visions include the Pope’s (Roman Catholic) version of the New World Order; Mikhail Gorbachev’s (Marxist) vision for the New World Order; and the version of the New World Order envisioned by “the Western democratic alliance” (consisting of Illuminati, highest level Freemasons, members of Skull and Bones, etc.). Martin wrote concerning the Western democratic alliance that, “...the acknowledged public leader and spokesman for this group is the current American president” (at date of writing-1990 – George H.W. Bush). But, amazingly, Martin failed to mention the fourth significant competing vision for a New World Order – the Islamic Global Caliphate. For many Muslims are looking for the return of an end-times messiah, the promised 12<sup>th</sup> Imam – al Mahdi. It is believed that al Mahdi will return to restore Islam and help establish a worldwide Islamic caliphate of peace and justice with Shariah law in all nations. He is to change the world into a perfect and just Islamic society. I strongly believe that the *antichrist* will have the demonically inspired ability to unite all four visions in a one-world, **SYNTHESIS OF EVIL**. This NEW SYNTHESIS will help unite all nations during the seventieth week of Daniel (Daniel 7:23-24, Revelation 13:7). Yet, let us recognize that a unity with falsehood (the *antichrist*’s false spirituality, false teachers, false worship and false

philosophies) is, and always will be, a false unity.

Keep in mind that Martin's book was written more than two decades ago. Martin died in 1999. Yet, the new age/occult agenda of creating a "New World Order" is the same aim for a universal, political and religious synthesis with falsehood and idolatry that the *LORD* judged and dispelled in Genesis 11:1-9. The current effort is truly the building of a new, occult Babel. Tragically, proponents fail to recognize that what they are embracing and supporting is a great spiritual deception. It is the fallen angel known as *the Devil* who inspired the vision of the New Atlantis. Advocates of this new global order see it as emerging from the "evolution of humanity" (Teilhard). Based on the false philosophies of Monism and Universalism, their vision of a new global civilization - a universal synthesis of nations, is exactly what Satan desired to prepare humanity for the rise of his global, false messiah – *the antichrist*...

The pieces of the one world revolution / solidarity puzzle are beginning to come together. Years ago, I was made aware of a plan of world development to establish ten, global, economic, trade block regions. This was presented in two research reports of The Club of Rome: 1) *Regionalized and Adaptive Model of The Global World System (1973)* 2) *Mankind at the Turning Point (the official Second Report of 1974)* Both reports were prepared under the direction of professors Eduard Pestel and Mihajlo Mesarovic. Gary Kah noted, "The Club of Rome has been charged with the task of overseeing the regionalization and unification of the entire world; the Club could therefore said to be one step above the Bilderbergers in the one-world hierarchy." (COR's founder, Peccei has been a close associate of the Bilderbergers)<sup>60</sup> **As far as I have been able to determine, most of the directives for the planning of the world government are presently coming from the Club of Rome...The [1973] document reveals that the Club has divided the world into ten political/economic regions, which it refers to as "kingdoms."** (242)

See also the *Global 2000 Report* prepared by Cyrus Vance for **The Committee of 300**. This global restructuring model has been advanced in World Economic Development, the World Citizenship movement, the sustainable development/depopulation movement, the radical environmentalism movement and Global Integration for decades. The model matches the prophecies of Daniel chapters two and seven. I consider this a possible fulfillment of the final global kingdom of *the antichrist* set forth in Daniel's prophecy of "*the ten horns*" of Daniel 7:24, and "*the feet and (ten) toes*" of the "*great image*" of Daniel 2:41-43. But, until recently, I didn't recognize **the historical, esoteric significance of "ten" regions. Why ten regions? To the occultists, the "ten global regions" represent the recreation of Atlantis - a one world government based on ten geopolitical regions. Is it possible that "the ten horns" of Daniel 7:24 represent ten, global, economic, trade block regions of the last days? Will these ten global regions become the foretold ten kingdoms of "the time of the end?"**

Mentioning an important concern of Paul Mazur, the late Malachi Martin wrote, "Mazur saw the globalist dreams of his most powerful associates taking on an ever-darkening aspect. Over a decade ago, in 1979, in his book, *Unfinished Business*, Mazur foresaw that, as the system of interdependence among nations escalated in complexity, so the international bureaucracy required to control that system would escalate in scope and authority. In Mazur's scenario, "finally the large number of government bureaus that will have their orbits in the atmosphere of our planet cannot be allowed the freedom to compete and collide with one another. So, in order to control the diverse bureaucracies required, a politburo will develop, and over this group organization there is likely to arise the final and single arbiter – the master of the order, the total dictator. We who have never lived within such a tightly centralized and vast collectivist system as Mazur was describing – that he was all but predicting,

in fact – cannot even imagine its details as they would affect our daily lives.” (243)

Has the Roman Catholic Church had a part in establishing the New World Order? First, consider the incredible influence of key Catholic leaders. For example, the late Roman Catholic priest Theodore Hesburgh (1917-2015), former president of the Jesuit founded University of Notre Dame, helped advance the one-world agenda. Mr. Hesburgh, a graduate of the Pontifical Gregorian University of Rome, Italy in 1940, served on the boards of the Rockefeller Foundation, Vatican Missions and was granted sixteen presidential appointments during his lifetime. Theodore Hesburgh, who considered himself to be a “world citizen,” served as a director of the Council on Foreign Relations and as director of the Chase Manhattan Bank.

Secondly, compare the previously mentioned data with the historical information provided in the research of author Gary Kah presented in his book *En Route to Global Occupation*. Mr. Kah reported, “Along with being responsible for [founding] the United Nations, the Council on Foreign Relations [officially established in July of 1921] would go on to serve as a mainspring for numerous spin-off groups, such as the Bilderbergers [1954], the Club of Rome [1968] and the Trilateral Commission [1973], each of which was designed to carry out a specific mission of establishing a New World Order. The creation of these new organizations would represent a mere restructuring of the one-world political hierarchy, which is always changing, revising, and adapting itself to current situations in a way that will most effectively further its agenda...

...The hierarchy, among other things, had called for world government to be achieved in stages through the forming of world administrative regions. This was in accordance with the U.N. Charter, which encourages the implementation and administration of world government on a regional basis. [According to Chapter 8, Articles 52 (2-3) and 53 (1) of the Charter, under “Regional Arrangements] The strategy was simple. The countries of the world would first be merged into several [interdependent] regions. This would serve to breakdown concepts of national sovereignty, then, these [interdependent] regions would be merged into a system of world government...

...However, it was soon realized that regionalized world government would be next to impossible to achieve politically because of resistance to the idea from the world’s people. So the powers-that-be decided to divide the world into [interdependent] economic regions first, hoping to pave the way for later political unions based on these same geographical boundaries. In order to accomplish this feat, several special task organizations were established to oversee the creation of regional trade associations. The society responsible for Europe’s economic integration would be the Bilderberg Group, better known as the Bilderbergers...The group consists of approximately one hundred power-elite from the member nations of NATO (North Atlantic Treaty Organization).<sup>48</sup> Its leadership is interlocked with that of the Council on Foreign Relations, and may therefore be accurately categorized as a CFR sister organization. Founded by a number of major one-world institutions, including the Rockefeller and Ford foundations, the express purpose of the Bilderberger group was to regionalize Europe.<sup>49</sup>...George McGhee, the former U.S. ambassador to West Germany, revealed that the Treaty of Rome which brought the Common Market into being was nurtured at the Bilderberg meetings.<sup>51</sup>...

...In other words, today’s European Economic Community...is a product of the Bilderberg Group. The overriding purpose of the Bilderbergers like that of its sister

organizations – the Council on Foreign Relations and the United Nations – is the establishment of a world government...It is not unfair to say that the Council on Foreign Relations and the Trilateral Commission run our government [in the U.S.A.]. In fact, any statement to the contrary, given the preceding information, would be inaccurate. As we have seen, membership in these organizations has become a prerequisite of running for the presidency or for being appointed to a significant position in the executive branch. This represents a complete breakdown in our political purpose...” (244)

Regardless of their efforts to create this new global order, history has demonstrated that the Roman Empire; the Roman Catholic Holy Roman Empire; the Islamic State and Shariah law; Adolf Hitler’s National Socialist Third Reich; the “global utopia” of Marxist Socialists, Joseph Stalin, Mao Tse-tung, and Pol Pot; and the Jesuit, man-made millennium of Pierre Teilhard de Chardin (the new “world civilization”); have all miserably failed to establish the truly just State – a world of righteousness, peace, just laws, and without corruption. Why? Because humanity is fallen, sinful, and corrupted. King David spoke the truth when he declared, “...every man at his best state is altogether vanity (Psalm 39:5).”

The apostle Paul accurately described the real spiritual condition of humanity when he proclaimed, “*What then? Are we better than they? No, in no wise: for we have before proved both Jews and Gentiles, that they are all under sin; As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one: There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God. They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no, not one. Their throat is an open sepulchre; with their tongues they have used deceit; the poison of asps is under their lips: Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness; their feet are swift to shed blood: destruction and misery are in their ways: And the way of peace have they not known: There is no fear of God before their eyes...For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God;...*” (Romans 3:9-17, 23)

Is there a better hope than the failed plans of fallen humanity? Thankfully, there is. Christ Jesus is the better hope. What Jesus offers to us is far better than the false philosophies, temporary vanities, and counterfeits of *the Devil*, his *antichrist* and Romanism.

About one hundred years ago. Dr. Charles Erdman a professor from Princeton Theological Seminary wrote an interesting article entitled “The Church And Socialism” which was printed in the book known as *The Fundamentals: A Testimony To The Truth*. In concluding his evaluation Mr. Erdman wrote, “The hope of the world is not in a new social order instituted by unregenerate men; not a millennium made by man; not a commonwealth of humanity organized as a Socialistic state; but a kingdom established by Christ which will fill the earth with glory at the coming of the King.” (245)

The true “*King of nations*” – Jesus Christ Himself is *coming* again to establish His righteous *kingdom* on earth (Jeremiah 10:7). All the surveillance technology and military power of *the antichrist* and his global army will not stop King Jesus from returning to reign. The *antichrist*; the false prophet; the counterfeit global kingdom; and the *antichrist*’s high-tech global army and global surveillance system will be finished at the Battle of Armageddon (Revelation 19:15-21). As the gospel song proclaims, “Our *LORD* is bigger than bad.” But, for the *LORD*’s people, the very best is yet to come. Regarding that future day the prophet Joel declared, “*The LORD also shall roar out of Zion, and utter his voice from Jerusalem: and the heavens and the earth shall shake: but the LORD will be the hope of his people, and the strength of the children of Israel.*” (Joel 3:16 KJV)



## CHAPTER IX: THE EPIDEMIC OF PEDOPHILIA AMONG THE PRIESTS OF ROME

***“NOW the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils; Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron; Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth. For every creature of God is good, and nothing to be refused, if it be received with thanksgiving; For it is sanctified by the word of God and prayer.”***  
– the apostle Paul (1 Timothy 4:1-5 KJV)

Notice that in our previously mentioned Bible text the actions of *“forbidding to marry”* and *“commanding to abstain from meats”* are specifically identified as examples of *“doctrines of devils”* by the apostle Paul. Amazingly, we find both of these erroneous teachings in Roman Catholicism. These include: 1) Prohibition of Roman Catholic clergy to marry 2) Prohibition of eating meats on Friday (i.e., “fish Friday”).

One of the most tragic and sickening outcomes of the Roman Catholic assimilation of the ancient, pagan, Roman practice of prohibiting their priests and nuns to marry, is observed in the long history of the many thousands of reported and not reported cases of pedophilia perpetrated by the priests, nuns and monks of the Roman Catholic church. I recall a conversation that I had in 1991 with a Roman Catholic nun. She asked if our *churches* were having any problems with child molestation cases. I explained that this was rare among Baptist churches, and that the more likely problem in a Baptist church was a phony pastor running off to commit adultery with the church secretary. She then shared her sincere concern about the great number of cases of sexual abuse of children that had been carried out by priests in the Roman Catholic church.

But, should this epidemic of pedophilia among the priests of Rome surprise us? Likewise, should it surprise us to discover that many of the priests and nuns of the Roman Catholic church are practicing sodomy and lesbianism? Herein we find the real result of the unbiblical, ungodly, pagan teachings of *“forbidding to marry”* and *“speaking lies in hypocrisy”* (1 Timothy 4:1-2). Even many of the clergy in the Roman Catholic church now recognize that the Roman Catholic requirement of vows of celibacy of the clergy is unnatural and ungodly.

In the past there were Roman Catholic leaders who presented the view that the Roman model of priesthood had much of its origin in the model of the ancient Hebrew priesthood. Whereas, it does not take much time to dispel this myth in the Hebrew Scriptures. In Ezekiel 44:21-22 the Levite priests were instructed, *“Neither shall any priest drink wine, when they enter into the inner court. Neither shall they take for their wives a widow, nor her that is put away: but they shall take maidens of the seed of the house of Israel, or a widow that had a priest before.”* Thus, even Old Testament priests were allowed to marry.

Referring to the widespread problem of sexual immorality being practiced among the clergy of the Roman Catholic church, in chapter twelve of his book *A Woman Rides the Beast* author Dave Hunt observed, “Let there be no misunderstanding: We are not suggesting that Catholic popes, priests and nuns are inherently more prone to promiscuity than the rest of mankind. Our hearts are all the same. Many of these tragic individuals no doubt began with

high moral and spiritual aspirations and in that spirit set out upon what they sincerely intended to be a life of purity and devotion to Christ. IT WAS THE [ROMAN] SYSTEM OF HIERARCHICAL PRIVILEGE, POWER AND AUTHORITY OVER THE LAITY [THE DOCTRINE OF THE NICOLAITANS-REVELATION 2:15] WHICH PERVERTED AND DESTROYED THEM...'

"...That system, as we have seen, gathered momentum through the centuries by the lust and greed of popes whose natural propensity for evil (innate in us all) found occasion through the unusual opportunities afforded by their office. To enhance their power they issued a host of false documents which purported to be the writings of early Church Fathers and decrees of early synods. One self-serving theme of these forgeries was the claim that the popes had inherited "innocence and sanctity from Peter" and could not be judged by any man. Von Dollinger writes, A saying ascribed to Constantine, at the council of Nice, in a legend recorded by Rufinus, was amplified till it was fashioned into a perfect mine of high-flying pretensions. Constantine, according to this fable, when the written accusations of the bishops against each other were laid before him, burned them, saying...that the bishops were gods and no man could dare to judge them.2..."

"...If one is on the level of the gods, what privileges could not one claim? Gods are above the law. No wonder, then, that the popes began to declare openly that they had power over kings and kingdoms and all persons, and power to behave like tyrants. The added pretense of infallibility only made matters worse. Each priest and nun, by association, shares (though to a lesser extent) this same corrupting [Roman] absolutism and elevation above laypersons. Add to this pretended Godlike authority the unnatural rule of celibacy (an intolerable burden which only a small minority of persons could possibly bear) and the stage is set for all manner of evil..."

"...One must understand that mandatory celibacy is not taught in the Bible, nor was it practiced by the apostles. This teaching developed as an integral part of the evolving papal system and gradually became essential to it. The concern was not morality, for celibacy proved to be a veritable cornucopia of evil. In fact, the rule of celibacy (for Roman clergy) was not the prohibition of sex but of *marriage*. Pope Alexander II (1061-73), for example, refused to discipline a priest who had committed adultery with his father's second wife because he hadn't committed the *sin of matrimony*. That was the great evil which had to be eliminated for the priesthood to be totally devoted to the [Roman] Church..."

"...All down through history not only priests and prelates but popes as well had their mistresses and visited prostitutes. Many were homosexuals. No member of the [Roman Catholic] clergy was ever excommunicated for having (illicit) sex, but thousands have been put out of the priesthood for the scandal of getting married. Why then the strict insistence upon celibacy (of Roman Catholic clergy), even to the present day, if it really doesn't mean abstinence from sex? It is because *the rule of celibacy has a very practical and lucrative result for the Church*. The clergy must have no heirs. Pope Gregory VII, bemoaning the difficulty in stamping out marriage among priests, declared: "The Church cannot escape from the clutches of the laity unless priests first escape from the clutches of their wives." Here is another vital reason for celibacy: to create a priesthood without the encumbrance (and loving loyalties) of wives and children. Thus fornication and adultery, though forbidden in theory, were preferable to a marriage relationship [for Roman Catholic clergy]..." (246)

This abuse of power and epidemic of sexual immorality practiced among the clergy of the Roman Catholic faith is nothing new. It has been reported for centuries in Roman Catholic

communities. In his book *FOURTEEN YEARS A JESUIT A Record of Personal Experience and a Criticism* by Count Paul von Hoensbroech, an ex-Jesuit priest, we read, “Heinrich von Lang, the director of the Bavarian State Archives, gives the following information from the papers of the Upper German Province of the Jesuit Order, which are now lying in the Imperial Archives at Munich – i.e. reports concerning members of the Order which were sent from the Superior of the Province to the General of the Order in Rome.\*...In the first place, Lang gives a complete account of the vicious conduct of the Jesuit, Jacob Marell, towards pupils [students] of the Jesuit establishment at Augsburg. Lang produces original letters of the Jesuits Banholzer, Erhart, and Osterpeutter, dated July 3<sup>rd</sup>, September 22<sup>nd</sup>, and December 26<sup>th</sup> 1698, which they, in their capacity of confessors, consultors and rectors, addressed from Augsburg to the Provincial Superior, Martin Muller, and in which the abominable details of the doings of their fellow-Jesuit Marell are reported.t Lang also prints signed statements by three pupils, Count Oettingen and the two Counts Fugger, who were most frequently misused [sexually abused] by the Jesuit Marell...

...From p. 26 onwards, in an extract, Lang gives thirty-six “informations” regarding the immoral behavior of as many Jesuits. The following are example: Information against Father Werner Ehinger for disgraceful intercourse with a Baron of Ratisbon; against Father Haas at Freiburg for illicit intercourse with two youths; against Father Adam Herter, of Constance, who corrupted seventeen youths; against Father Franz Schlegl, of Munich, for assaults on seven boys; against Father Ferdinand, of Augsburg, for misusing [sexually abusing] a servant girl; against Father Michael Baumgartner, who, whilst he was sub-regent at Dillingen, entered into an entanglement with a woman of seventy and seduced two girls, one of whom then said, “For shame, what kind of priests are these? And so on, in one continuous catalogue of similar abominations. In considering the list of grave offences we must bear in mindset that it deals with only one Province of the Order, the Upper German, that the numerous cases happened in the short time between 1650-1723, and that the editor, Lang, Director of the State Archives, declares that he could easily quote “hundreds and hundreds” of such “informations” from the manuscript material at his disposal in the Munich Archives. Kluckhohn, who thoroughly searched through the Jesuit papers at Munich in 1874, and gave reports on them before the Royal Bavarian Academy of Science, also confirms the data supplied by Lang.\*...” (247)

In chapter twelve of his book Dave Hunt wrote about a conference held at St. John’s Abbey, Collegeville, Minnesota on August 12-13, 1993 entitled “Sexual Trauma and the Church.” Hunt noted, “Conferees noted that accurate numbers of sexual-abuse cases are not available because of the widespread suppression of such information by the Church. One canon lawyer, Fr. Thomas Doyle, coauthor of the 1985 Doyle-Moulton-Peterson report on abuse in the clergy, estimated that in 1990 about 3000 of the 50,000 priests in America were “currently involved sexually with minors.” It is estimated that “four times as many priests involve themselves sexually with adult women and twice the number of priests involve themselves with adult men [in homosexuality] as those involved with children.”<sup>32</sup> The situation is out of hand, as it has been for centuries. Of his fellow [Roman Catholic] clergymen, William Hogan wrote after leaving the priesthood in the early nineteenth century: I am sorry to say, from my knowledge of them, since my infancy to the present moment, that there is not a more corrupt, licentious body of men in the world.<sup>33</sup>...”

“...Rome’s hypocrisy is monumental. She continues to lecture the rest of the world on high

moral standards and to pose as the arbiter and paragon of virtue, while tens of thousands of her clergy violate the very morals she proclaims. Consider the 179 pages of *Veritatis Splendor*, produced by (pope) John Paul II over six years and published late in 1993. This weighty theological treatise condemns contraception, illicit sex, and homosexuality as “intrinsically evil.” Conspicuous by its absence, however, is any admission that a high percentage of Roman Catholic clergy practice all three.” (248)

In Wikipedia we find: “The Catholic sex abuse cases are a series of allegations, investigations, trials and convictions of child sexual abuse crimes committed by Catholic priests, nuns and members of Roman Catholic orders against children as young as three years old with the majority between the ages of 11 and 14.<sup>[1][2][3]</sup> These cases include anal and oral penetration and have resulted in criminal prosecutions of the abusers and civil lawsuits against the church's dioceses and parishes. Many of the cases span several decades and are brought forward years after the abuse occurred. Cases have also been brought against members of the Catholic hierarchy who did not report sex abuse allegations to the legal authorities. It has been shown they deliberately moved sexually abusive priests to other parishes where the abuse sometimes continued.<sup>[4]</sup> This has led to a number of fraud cases where the Church has been accused of misleading victims by deliberately relocating priests accused of abuse instead of removing them from their positions.<sup>[5]</sup>

The cases received significant media and public attention in Canada, Ireland, the United States, and throughout the world.<sup>[6]</sup> In response to the attention, members of the church hierarchy have argued that media coverage has been excessive and disproportionate.<sup>[7]</sup> According to a Pew Research Center study, media coverage mostly emanated from the United States in 2002, when the *Boston Globe* began a critical investigation. By 2010 much of the reporting focused on child abuse in Europe.<sup>[8][9]</sup> From 2001-2010 the Holy See, the central governing body of the Catholic Church, has “considered sex abuse allegations concerning about 3,000 priests dating back up to 50 years” according to the Vatican's Promoter of Justice.<sup>[10]</sup> Cases worldwide reflect patterns of long-term abuse and the covering up of reports.<sup>[note 1]</sup> Church officials and academics knowledgeable about the Third World Roman Catholic Church, say that sexual abuse by clergy is generally not discussed, and thus is difficult to measure.<sup>[6][11]</sup> In the Philippines whereas of 2002 at least 85% of the population is Catholic, revelations of child sexual abuse by priests followed the United States' reporting in 2002.<sup>[12]</sup>

In the United States, which has been the lead focus of much of the scandals and subsequent reforms,<sup>[13]</sup> BishopAccountability.org, an “online archive established by lay Catholics,” reports that over 3,000 civil lawsuits have been filed against the church,<sup>[14]</sup> some of these cases have resulted in multi-million dollar settlements with many claimants. In 1998 the Roman Catholic Diocese of Dallas paid \$30.9 million to twelve victims of one priest (\$43.5 million in present-day terms).<sup>[15][16]</sup> From 2003 to 2009 nine other major settlements involving over 375 cases with 1551 claimants/victims, resulted in payments of over \$1.1 billion USD.<sup>[note 2]</sup> The Associated Press estimated the settlements of sex abuse cases from 1950 to 2007 totaled more than \$2 billion.<sup>[17]</sup> BishopAccountability puts the figure at more than \$3 billion in 2012.<sup>[18][14]</sup> Addressing “a flood of abuse claims” five dioceses (Tucson, Arizona; Spokane, Washington; Portland, Oregon; Davenport, Iowa, and San Diego) got bankruptcy protection.<sup>[17]</sup> Eight Catholic dioceses have declared bankruptcy due to sex abuse cases from 2004-2011.<sup>[19]”</sup>

Moreover, on 7-10-13, Allison Winfield Burns posted an article entitled “At the Vatican Noir: UN Seeking Disclosure of Thousands of Pedophile Cases Related to Clergy” in *The Huffington Post*. Burns wrote, “The United Nations Committee on the Rights of the Child (UNCRC) will investigate widespread sexual assault against children by Catholic clergy.

“We must ask ourselves what was wrong in our proclamation, in our whole way of living the Christian life,” says Benedict XVI (Joseph Alois Ratzinger), in a traditional end-of-the-year address to cardinals and bishops at the Vatican, 20 December 2010. He rushes to add that as late as the 1970s, pedophilia was not considered an absolute evil. Pedophilia, the sexual rape of children, was not a crime, says Pope Benedict XVI. He states that in 2010, rape allegations within the ranks of Catholic clergy have reached “unimaginable dimension”...

...Benedict XVI's Address to the Bishops, 20 December 2010: “In the 1970s, pedophilia was theorized as something fully in conformity with man and even with children. This, however, was part of a fundamental perversion of the concept of ethos. It was maintained - even within the realm of Catholic theology - that there is no such thing as evil in itself or good in itself. There is only a *better than* and a *worse than*. Nothing is good or bad in itself. Everything depends on the circumstance and on the end in view. Anything can be good or also bad, depending upon purposes and circumstances. Morality is replaced by a calculus of consequences, and in the process it ceases to exist...

...Benedict/Ratzinger is now yanked out of the fray, replaced by another man as pope. Ratzinger retired into seclusion. A popular Vatican tactic. A plethora of men come to mind. As a person who grew up in the Vatican culture, back in the days when Cardinal Dolan lived in Rome (I knew him there; I knew all of them there), I applaud the request made today by the UN: The United Nations is demanding that the Vatican provide a comprehensive list of sex abuse by Catholic priests, monks and nuns. The unprecedented request has been made by the Geneva-based UN Committee on the Rights of the Child, which polices the 1988 UN convention protecting children. (*Times of London*, James Bone in Rome and Ruth Gledhill) Cardinal Archbishop Groer was a close friend of John Paul II and a publicly known pedophile. Both of these men are now dead. Pope John Paul II oversaw rife infestation of child rapists among the Vatican clergy and priesthood. His Eminence Groer is listed as enthroned in 1986, and that his reign ended in 1995. Note that the Vatican considers cardinals princes of the Church. Groer is accused of abusing approximately 2,000 young males. The Vatican responded to complaints of abuse by placing Groer at a monastery as abbot. In a monastery, monks have vows of obedience. scathing report The Vatican curia put the sex offender Groer in charge of administrating and commanding others to do his will. After further complaints against his conduct, Groer was at last retired in 1998 and sent into exile by the Vatican, but Groer escaped legal prosecution. There have been so many sex abuse scandals...” (249)

Add to this evidence a 5 February, 2014 Los Angeles Times article entitled – “Catholic Church ‘systematically’ protected abusive priests, U.N. says” by Tom Kington we find: “ROME -- The Roman Catholic Church has “systematically” protected predator priests, allowing “tens of thousands” of children to be abused, a United Nations committee said Wednesday in a that cast the first shadow over Pope Francis’ honeymoon period as pontiff. The panel called on the Vatican to remove all suspects from their posts immediately and to open up its confidential archives in order “to hold abusers accountable.” “The committee is

gravely concerned that the Holy See has not acknowledged the extent of the crimes committed, has not taken the necessary measures to address cases of child sexual abuse and to protect children, and has adopted policies and practices which have led to the continuation of the abuse by and the impunity of the perpetrators,” the report said.

In a sharply worded response, the Holy See’s ambassador to the U.N. in Geneva, Archbishop Silvano Tomasi, attacked the report, calling it “surprising” and full of “incorrect” statements, and alleging that the U.N. had ignored steps taken by the Vatican in recent years to root out abuse. In an interview with Vatican Radio, Tomasi also suggested that nongovernmental organizations that oppose the Vatican’s positions on homosexuality and gay marriage had influenced the U.N. report, giving it an “ideological” slant. Addressing the U.N. committee last month, Tomasi said the Vatican had no responsibility for abusers because “priests are citizens of their own states, and they fall under the jurisdiction of their own country.” But the report disagreed, telling the Vatican that because priests are “bound by obedience to the pope” in canon law, the Vatican is accountable for their conduct.” (250)

Moreover, consider the results of one of the most exhaustive investigations of clergy sex abuse in the Roman Catholic church conducted by law enforcement in recent years. In the 14 August, 2018 press release entitled “Attorney General Shapiro Details Findings of 2-Year Grand Jury Investigation into Child Sex Abuse by Catholic Priests in Six Pennsylvania Dioceses” we read: “HARRISBURG – Surrounded by survivors of sexual abuse by Catholic priests, Attorney General Josh Shapiro today revealed the comprehensive findings of a statewide investigative grand jury that spent two years uncovering abuse of children by priests, and a systematic cover up spanning decades by senior church leaders in Pennsylvania and the Vatican. The grand jury recommended reforming the criminal and civil statutes of limitations on sexual abuse in Pennsylvania, among other recommendations, and Attorney General Shapiro called on every Catholic bishop to support the reforms.

“Today, the most comprehensive report on child sexual abuse within the church ever produced in our country was released,” Attorney General Shapiro said. “Pennsylvanians can finally learn the extent of sexual abuse in these dioceses. For the first time, we can all begin to understand the systematic cover up by church leaders that followed. The abuse scarred every diocese. The cover up was sophisticated. The church protected the institution at all costs.”

The investigation captured widespread sexual abuse and institutional cover up across the entire state. Building on investigations of the Altoona-Johnstown Diocese and the Philadelphia Archdiocese by previous grand juries, the 40<sup>th</sup> Statewide Grand Jury’s investigation covered the other Dioceses of Allentown, Erie, Harrisburg, Greensburg, Pittsburgh and Scranton, giving a complete picture of pervasive abuse in dioceses across Pennsylvania. The grand jury found:

- 301 Catholic priests identified as predator priests who sexually abused children while serving in active ministry in the church.
- Detailed accounts of over 1,000 children victimized sexually by predator priests, with the grand jury noting it believed the real number of victims was in the “thousands.”
- Senior church officials, including bishops, monsignors and others, knew about the abuse committed by priests, but routinely covered it up to avoid scandal, criminal charges against priests, and monetary damages to the dioceses.
- Priests committed acts of sexual abuse upon children, and were routinely shuttled to other parishes – while parishioners were left unaware of sexual predators in their midst.

The 884-page grand jury report documents scores of sexual assaults and rapes of children by priests, and **the institutional cover ups that followed by senior church officials**, including:

- **In the Diocese of Erie**, (41 predator priests named), one priest, Father Chester Gawronski, fondled boys and told them he was giving them a “*cancer check*.” Gawronski provided the Diocese with a list of 41 “possible” victims. He confessed to multiple instances of sexual abuse. Yet from 1987 until 2002 – 15 years – Gawronski remained in active ministry, repeatedly reassigned to new parishes.
- **In the Diocese of Allentown** (37 predator priests named), one priest, Father Michael Lawrence rubbed a 12-year-old boy’s genitals so roughly the boy felt pain. “*Please help me, I sexually molested a boy*,” Lawrence admitted to a church official, who noted the confession in a confidential memo. Even after that admission, the Diocese ruled: “*the experience will not necessarily be a horrendous trauma*” for the victim. Lawrence was left in ministry for years by three different Bishops.
- **In the Diocese of Greensburg** (20 predator priests named), one priest, Father Raymond Lukac, impregnated a 17-year-old, forged another pastor’s signature on a marriage certificate, then divorced the girl shortly after she gave birth. Despite that, Lukac remained in ministry while the Diocese sought a “benevolent bishop” in another state to take the predator, hiding him from justice.
- **In the Diocese of Harrisburg** (45 predator priests named), one priest, Father Joe Pease, sexually assaulted a boy repeatedly when the victim was between 13 and 15. Pease admitted to diocese officials to once finding the victim naked upstairs in the rectory – but called it “*horse play*”. In a secret memo, the Diocese noted: “*At this point we are at an impasse—allegations and no admission*” before cycling Pease through church-run treatment and allowing him back in active ministry for seven more years.
- **In the Diocese of Pittsburgh** (99 predator priests named), a group of at least four predator priests groomed and abused young boys. They used whips, violence and sadism in sexually assaulting their young victims. One boy, not yet 18, was forced to stand on a bed in a rectory, strip naked, and pose as Christ on the Cross for the priests. They took photos of their victim, adding them to a collection of child pornography which they produced and shared on church grounds.
- **In the Diocese of Scranton** (59 predator priests named), one priest, Thomas Skotek, raped a young girl, got her pregnant, and arranged an abortion. The Bishop, James Timlin, expressed his feelings in a letter: “*This is a very difficult time in your life, and I realize how upset you are. I too share your grief*.” The bishop’s letter was not sent to the girl. It was addressed to the rapist. To read the full grand jury report: <https://www.attorneygeneral.gov/report>

**The grand jury detailed that the cover ups by the church served a key purpose – the longer they covered up abuses, the less chance that law enforcement could prosecute predator priests because the statute of limitations would run out. “As a consequence of the cover up, almost every instance of abuse we found is too old to be prosecuted,” the grand jury found. But not in every instance.**

- **In Greensburg**, Father John Sweeney was charged by the Attorney General’s office with sexually abusing a 7-year-old boy named “Josh.” Sweeney pleaded guilty this month, is now an admitted sexual predator, and awaits sentencing.

- **In Erie**, Father David Poulson was charged with sexually assaulting a boy for eight years, starting when he was 8 years old. Poulson had the boy go to confession and admit his “sins” — to Poulson. Bishop Donald Trautman knew about and covered up the abuse.

**In making recommendations for significant changes to Pennsylvania law governing child sex abuse, the grand jury stated: “We can’t charge most of the culprits. What we can do is tell our fellow citizens what happened, and try to get something done about it.”** Attorney General Shapiro strongly supported each reform recommended by the grand jury – and issued a challenge to every Pennsylvania bishop. **“Adopt and support each of these recommended reforms to Pennsylvania law – now,”** Attorney General Shapiro said. **“Stand up today and announce your support for these common-sense reforms. That’s the test that will determine whether things have really changed or if it will just be business as usual when the dust settles...The grand jury wrote that the [Catholic] Church has used confidentiality agreements as a way to silence abuse victims from speaking publicly or cooperating with law enforcement. The grand jury proposes a new statute which clearly states that no past or present non-disclosure agreement prevents a victim from talking to police. Additionally, future agreements should state contact with police about criminal activity is permitted.”** (251)

**A website which presents the stories of victims of sexual abuse carried out by Roman Catholic clergy is found at: <http://www.snapnetwork.org> Here are some of the recent posts from *The Survivors Network of those Abused by Priests* -**

---

#### **Female Victims of Clergy Abuse:**

##### **Abuse by priest haunts Canadian woman**

**Even when she lived on a remote Gulf Island where no one locked their doors and everyone knew each other, Joanne Morrison felt nervous whenever her children stepped out the door. Morrison felt trapped by her own childhood memories of sexual abuse and felt paranoid over the safety of her own kids. Morrison was first molested by her priest when she was eight years old. The abuse lasted about three years, but the pain never went away, she said.**

##### **Complaints of sex abuse by nuns begin to emerge**

**Even now, decades later, the victims' voices falter as they describe the encounters that damaged them in ways they cannot fully cast off. Mary Dunford tells of a molester visiting her dormitory bed when she was 15. Susan Pavlak speaks of the teacher who talked to her of love, then seduced her at 16. Siblings describe how their piano teacher touched them in ways no adult should touch a child. In each case, the perpetrator was, or recently had been, a Roman Catholic nun. *Minneapolis Star Tribune*, June 25, 2006**

##### **Dozens allege sex abuse by nuns**

**Spotlighting the role of female clergy in sexual abuse for the first time, a victims advocacy group said yesterday that it had identified about 100 people in the United States who said they had been assaulted by Catholic nuns, sisters and other female religious workers. At a news conference, the Survivors Network of those Abused by Priests (SNAP) called for other victims to come forward so they could share their stories and receive help.**

***Baltimore Sun*, July 14, 2004**

##### **Boston review board dismissed accusations by females**

**When a woman complained to the Archdiocese of Boston in 1994 that the Rev. Lionel P. Ouellette had molested her as a schoolgirl in Lynn, the church ruled he could keep his job. When the Rev. Paul G. McPartland was accused by a woman, who said he had tried to sexually**



molest her in a car at Castle Island when she was 16, the church took no action. Records made public yesterday detailing alleged sexual misconduct by six priests suggest that women who complained that they had been assaulted as girls often received dismissive treatment by a church review board. *Boston Globe*, February 7, 2003

#### **Nuns as sexual victims get little notice**

Already shaken by a yearlong sex abuse scandal involving priests and minors, the Roman Catholic Church has yet to face another critical challenge - how to help thousands of nuns who say they have been sexually victimized. A national survey, completed in 1996 but intentionally never publicized, estimates that a "minimum" of 34,000 Catholic nuns, or about 40 percent of all nuns in the United States, have suffered some form of sexual trauma. By Bill Smith, *St. Louis Post-Dispatch* - January 4, 2003

#### **Women face stigma of clergy abuse**

Jean Leahy kept her secret for 40 years: that she had had to fend off the Rev. Robert V. Meffan's repeated sexual advances - the hand on the thigh, the hug that lasted too long, the invitations to his bedroom - when she was a teenager studying at Sacred Heart Convent in Kingston. Why tell anyone, she reasoned, when few people would believe the word of a woman over the word of a beloved priest? But when Meffan's personnel file became public Dec. 3, and he acknowledged having sexual activity with teenage girls who, like her, were preparing to be nuns, Leahy decided there was no need for secrecy any more. By Sacha Pfeiffer, *Boston Globe*, December 27, 2002

#### **My female pastor molested me**

It's not just boys who have been violated by religious figures. Here 30-year-old Julie Prey-Harbaugh shares a particularly shocking tale of sexual abuse. *Cosmopolitan*, August 2002  
In Massachusetts, women tell their own stories of abuse.

There was more grief and betrayal expressed yesterday by victims of predatory clergy -- but this time the memories of abuse were delivered primarily by women. Over a half-dozen abuse survivors, mostly women, sat on the altar of North Parish Church and told members of the Voice of the Faithful, a lay reformist group, about experiences that came close to ruining many of their lives. - *Lawrence (MA) Eagle Tribune*, November 18, 2002

#### **Clergy sex abuse of females complicates intricate issue**

They are the forgotten victims of clergy sex abuse, neglected by the media and overlooked by church activists. Yet many experts estimate that females -- both girls and women -- constitute a sizable number of all victims of sexual abuse by priests.

- *Kansas City Star*, July 12, 2002

#### **Father Figure**

In the controversy over child abuse by Catholic priests, one group is being overlooked--adult women. A growing number of adult women who are coming forward to charge priests or clergy members with sexual abuse and to demand that their cases be taken seriously. As the Catholic bishops struggle to control scandals over clergy sexual abuse of minors--including issuing a historic no-tolerance policy--women say their stories have been given short shrift. In

these complex cases the priests were not pedophiles but heterosexual men who, the women say, broke their vow of celibacy and abused the power and trust placed in them.

From the June 27-July 3, 2002 issue of *Metro, Silicon Valley's Weekly Newspaper*.

**Women tell of priests' abusing them as girls**

Linda Burke said that when she was a 14-year-old growing up in Chicago, her priest began wrestling with her on the floor, roughhousing so insistently that her clothing became undone. When she was 17, she said, another priest began to kiss and fondle her in a chapel, and later other priests used their spiritual influence to seduce her into full-fledged sex. - *By SAM DILLON, The New York Times* - June 14, 2002

**Massachusetts priest says he abused dozens of young girls**

The Rev. Robert E. Kelley admitted in a sworn deposition that he sexually molested "50 to 100" young girls while he was an associate pastor to St. Cecilia's parish in Leominster, Massachusetts, from 1976 to 1983. - *Worcester Telegram*, May 11, 2002

**Female victims often overlooked in horror stories of clergy abuse**

They are Californians with shared histories of violence, abuse and unspeakable betrayal. At age 6, one was sodomized in the church sanctuary by the family priest, then raped again at 8 by a second priest in another state. Another was lured into a sexual relationship at age 16 by one priest, who invited six other priests along for the "fun" over the next four years. Still another Californian remembers wandering into the rectory at about age 8, only to be raped. Who are they?, *Sacramento Bee* - March 21, 2002 (252)

## CHAPTER X: SILENCING THE CRIES OF THE MARTYRS

*“And thou shalt speak my words unto them, whether they will hear, or whether they will forbear: for they are most rebellious...But the house of Israel will not hearken unto thee; for they will not hearken unto me: for all the house of Israel are impudent and hardhearted... Son of man, I [JHVH] have made thee a watchman unto the house of Israel: therefore hear the word at my mouth, and give them warning from me.”*  
- Ezekiel (Ezekiel 2:7; 3:7, 17 KJV)

As *Christians*, do we truly care about the incredible suffering that our brothers and sisters in Christ have endured; are enduring; and will experience in many places around the world? In Ecclesiastes 3:1 we read, *“To everything there is a season, and a time to every purpose under the heaven:...A time to weep, and a time to laugh, a time to mourn, and a time to dance;...”* (Ecclesiastes 3:1,4) The apostle Paul instructs believers to *“...weep with them that weep.”* (Romans 12:15) In John’s vision regarding the martyrs of Jesus we discover, *“And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the word of God, and for the testimony which they held: And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth? And white robes were given unto every one of them; and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little season, until their fellow-servants also and their brethren, that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled...”* (Revelation 6:9-11 KJV)

In 2 Timothy 3:12 the apostle Paul declared, *“Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution.”* Persecution comes in various ways. It may come through an insult, ridicule, mocking, discrimination, assault, robbery or even murder. Over the centuries, many *Christians* have experienced severe persecution and millions have been killed because of their Christian faith. We call these people Christian martyrs. Our Savior taught that we are to love all of our brothers and sisters in Christ including those who are being persecuted (John 13:35, Ephesians 1:15, Colossians 1:4). Do we love and pray for those who are suffering persecution for their faith in Christ? Do we truly care about and pray for the surviving family members of Christian martyrs?

There are three common responses among *Christians* when the subjects of persecution and martyrdom are mentioned in our day:

1) **APATHY AND INDIFFERENCE** These are the people who “don’t want to hear about it.” “I don’t like to think about it,” would be a common response of many. Folks in this camp may fear offending others by discussing the issue of millions of Protestants and (Ana) Baptists who were martyred by Roman Catholics. Whereas, it’s comforting to know that our LORD JESUS cares much about them.

2) **THEY MUST HAVE DONE SOMETHING REALLY BAD.** This is the response of a person who seeks to justify or rationalize the actions of the persecutors.

3) **CARE, PRAY, ACT IN CHRISTIAN LOVE. WHAT WOULD JESUS DO (WWJD)? #3 - Let’s do likewise – Matthew 25:40, John 13:35; 15:12.** In the final analysis, we either listen to the cries

of Christian martyrs or we refuse to hear their cries. If we refuse to listen to their cries, we are siding with the ungodly of the world to help silence their cries.

Moreover, one of the ways the cries of the martyrs are being silenced in the *churches* is by means of phony, popular, contemporary “psychologized Christianity.” Psychology has deceived the minds of many in the twenty-first century and pre-conditioned believers to reject anything “negative.” Upon mentioning any of the many past Vatican-incited inquisitions, holocausts, massacres or persecutions, the inevitable answer of those deceived by it is something like the following: “I don’t want to hear about those “negative” stories.” or “Let’s discuss something “positive.”

But, to be consistent in their rejection of all things “negative,” these people must also ignore all “negative” warnings and rebukes found in the writings of Old Testament prophets and those found in the teachings of Jesus and His apostles. To such, Christ’s command to, “Take heed that no man deceive you.” (Matthew 24:4) means nothing. Without paying close attention to the clear warnings of Jesus and His apostles in the Scriptures of truth, many lack discernment and are vulnerable to receiving a different Jesus, a different gospel and a distorted imitation of Christianity.

Unfortunately, like many of the uninformed, unprepared Protestants / Evangelicals and Anabaptists who were slaughtered in past centuries, many today have already been deceived. They are placing blind trust in Roman Catholic leaders and have chosen to ignore the dangerous, anti-Protestant and anti-Baptist teachings advocated in Roman Catholicism.

For the benefit of the uninformed of our era, author William Grady noted in *FINAL AUTHORITY*, “In his book *Global Peace and the Rise of the Antichrist*, Dave Hunt took exception with the so-called leading authority on the Christian family (James Dobson) for running an article which identified Pope John Paul II as “the most eminent religious leader who names the name of Christ.”<sup>13</sup> When this author contacted James Dobson’s headquarters for an explanation, he was politely informed by the public relations department that “Dr. Dobson is a Christian *psychologist*, not a *theologian*.”...

...This courting of Rome is especially disgraceful in light of the voluminous evidence documenting over fifteen centuries of Vatican-induced butchery. The caliber of material discussed in chapter nine is generally placed on the “back burner” by neo-evangelical scholarship. For instance, we find the name *Torquemada* conspicuously absent in both the index and the ten-page section dealing with the Inquisition in the *Eerdmans’ Handbook to the History of Christianity* (pages 314-323). Concerning these murders, it was stated, “Inquisitors were not all agitated zealots...Most were well-educated and devoted to what they considered their duty.”<sup>14</sup>...

...To find out about these Catholic gangsters, one has to read Foxe: Torquemada was chief inquisitor (in Spain) until his death, and during the eighteen years he ruled the Holy Office, *ten thousand two hundred and twenty persons* were burned alive, and *ninety-seven thousand three hundred and twenty-two* punished with loss of property, or imprisonment-numbers so large as to seem incredible, but which are given by Llorente, the Spanish historian of the Inquisition, who was well qualified to judge of their accuracy.<sup>15</sup>...

...Similarly, the same neo-evangelical publication devotes an *entire page* to Pope John XXIII crediting him with, among other things, a “deep but traditional piety,”<sup>16</sup> while relegating the

horrendous *St. Bartholomew's day Massacre* to a mere *thirteen words* elsewhere.”<sup>17</sup> With at least two Catholic historians listed among the contributing editors, we are not surprised that the Eerdmans people would rather you read about Pope John's “kindliness and wit.”<sup>18</sup> than the barbaric slaughter of over *ten thousand* Bible-believing Huguenots [in Paris] by bloodthirsty Roman Catholics on August 24, 1572.<sup>19</sup>...

...Of all the Pope's victims, it was the *Anabaptists* who generally suffered the most. In the year 1528, the fanatically Catholic Charles V, emperor of the Holy Roman Empire (1550-1558), issued an edict making baptism [by immersion outside the Roman Catholic church] a *capital crime*. The Diet of Speyer (1529) sanctioned the Emperor's decree and ordered that such HERETICS SHOULD BE DEPRIVED OF ANY JUDICIARY PROCESS AND KILLED IMMEDIATELY LIKE “WILD BEASTS.” [SOUND FAMILIAR? – I.E., THE SUPPOSED “WAR ON TERRORISM” LEGALLY EXPANDED TO TARGET ALL THOSE LABELED “EXTREMISTS” OR “FUNDAMENTALISTS”] An Anabaptist historian has left us this moving legacy:

...Some were racked and drawn asunder; others were burnt to ashes and dust; some were roasted on pillars or torn with red-hot pincers. Others were hanged on trees, beheaded with the sword, or thrown into the water. Some starved or rotted in darksome prisons. Some who were deemed too young for execution were whipped with rods, and many lay for years in dungeons. Numbers had holes burnt into their cheeks. The rest were hunted from one country and place to another. Like owls and ravens, which durst not fly by day, they were often compelled to hide and live in rocks and clefts, in wild forests or in caves and pits.<sup>20</sup>

...When called on the carpet to account for these atrocities, Catholic apologists will invariably take cover behind such rhetoric as, “the spirit of the times,” or “the unfortunate acts of an unenlightened age,” etc. That this is pure nonsense can be easily confirmed by a survey of Catholic bloodletting in the *twentieth century*. Reference works such as *The Vatican's Holocaust* by Avro Manhattan and *Convert...or Die!* By Edmond Paris present the documented facts that the [Roman] Catholic church liquidated over 800,000 orthodox Serbians in Croatia, Yugoslavia, during the years 1940-1945...

...The next time some bigoted Catholic tries to dismiss his murderous heritage as a “thing of the past,” ask him to explain: 250 peasants buried alive in the Serbian district of Bjelovar;<sup>23</sup> a father and son crucified together and then burned in their own home in Mliniste;<sup>24</sup> mothers and children (as young as three) impaled on the same stake in Gorevac;<sup>25</sup> a mother forced to hold the basin which caught the blood of her four sons as their throats were slit in Kosinj;<sup>26</sup> an expectant mother having her unborn child cut out of her womb and replaced by a cat in the death camp at Jasenovac;<sup>27</sup> 1,360 prisoners having their throats cut in a single night by one guard during a sadistic throat-cutting contest (also at Jasenovac);<sup>28</sup> not to mention dismemberments;<sup>29</sup> beheadings;<sup>30</sup> crowns of thorns;<sup>31</sup> “graviso” knives for specialized throat cutting;<sup>32</sup> necklaces of human tongues and eyes;<sup>33</sup> the confining of prisoners to rooms filled with blood to the ankles;<sup>34</sup> and ten thousand other atrocities condoned by the Roman Catholic Archbishop Aloysius Stepinac who prayed at the opening of the Croatian Parliament in February of 1942, for “.the Holy Ghost to descend upon the sharp knives of the Ustashi [Catholic guerrilla army].”<sup>35</sup> (253)

Concerning Roman Catholic inquisitions from *BENEDICT'S HISTORY* in the section *SEARCHING FOR BAPTISTS TO PUNISH* author David Benedict observed, “Singular methods

of detecting the heretics. The priests would sometimes carry a crucifix through the market, or wherever there was a concourse of people, and all who did not pay it reverence were marked as victims to be apprehended and examined; if a woman was heard singing a pious hymn, or a man was observed to ask a blessing at his meals at the inns or elsewhere where he might stop on a journey, or on business – in short, any indications of piety above the catholic standard, which was at that time extremely low, would excite suspicion and alarm...” [SOUND FAMILIAR?]

“...Informers would run with the news to the minions of the hierarchy. In this way MULTITUDES WERE ARRESTED, and if they declined to swear themselves clear, their trials would go on. As these brethren were conscientiously opposed to oaths of all kinds, deplorable indeed was their condition. Again, if any one showed any kindness or sympathy towards the suffering martyrs in the prisons, the courts, or at the stake, they would run the risk of their liberty and life...”

“...The great sufferings of the martyrs previous to being put to death. Their imprisonments were generally long and distressing; they were often thrust into the most wretched and filthy places that could be selected, among vile malefactors, in doleful dungeons, deprived of every comfort, and exposed to every thing degrading and painful. But all these things were the beginning of their sorrows; but few of them escaped torture of all the painful varieties which the cruel inquisitors well knew how to inflict...”

“...They were racked upon the wheel, suspended with cords, with heavy weights fastened to their limbs, screws and lashes, and all the tormenting contrivances of persecuting vengeance, with savage barbarity and in quick succession were dealt out to the poor defenseless Anabaptists, without distinction of age or sex. Multitudes were thus crippled for life, had they been permitted to live...”

“...And all these excruciating and agonizing pains were inflicted upon them, not to extort from them their religious faith, for this they freely confessed in the outset, but to make them disclose the names of their brethren – their places of abode – who baptized them – who were present at the time – where their meetings were held, Etc. And in addition to all the rest of their protracted trials, was the annoyance which they experienced from the never ending officiousness of the priests and monks, who came to them with their driveling mummery in favor of the catholic faith, with an earnest solicitude for the salvation of their souls...”

“...The very faulty character of these men was generally well understood by the sufferers, and excited in them an abhorrence and disgust which it required strong efforts to suppress, and some of the more resolute brethren would bear down upon them in a most plain and pointed manner. – Copied from *BENEDICT’S HISTORY*, pages 126-127” (254)

**FURTHERMORE, CONSIDERING WHAT BIBLICAL CHRISTIANS HAVE SUFFERED AT THE HANDS OF THEIR PERSECUTORS OVER THE CENTURIES, WE HAVE VERY GOOD REASONS TO BE CONCERNED ABOUT THE INFLUENCE OF THE AGENTS OF ROME ON THE MEDIA, GOVERNMENT, MILITARY AND NATIONAL SECURITY IN OUR TIME AS WELL. A CAREFUL STUDY OF CHURCH HISTORY REVEALS:**

- 1) The #1 mass-murderer of Bible-believing *Christians* is Islam. From the sixth century to present, an estimated 270 million *Christians* (from all professing groups) have been murdered by Islamic jihads and massacres. (255)
- 2) The #2 mass-murderer of Bible-believing *Christians* is Marxism / Socialism / Communism /

Progressivism with an estimation of over 100 million murdered in Communist led assassinations, massacres, purges and wars (256).

3) But let us not forget that the #3 mass-murderer of Bible-believing *Christians* is the Roman Catholic church. From its origin in the fourth century during the reign of Emperor Constantine (with the fusion of Christianity to the pagan Roman Mysteries), the murderous doctrines of Rome have been responsible for many massacres, wars, assassinations, and inquisitions (257). It is estimated that at least 50 million people [*BEHIND THE PURPLE CURTAIN*, p. 91] have died as a result of the many massacres, wars, assassinations, and inquisitions incited by the popes, cardinals, bishops and priests of the “Holy” Roman Catholic church over the centuries. (258) Thus, the Roman Catholic Vatican is responsible for the deaths of many millions of Bible-believing *Christians* (Protestants, Evangelicals, Ana-Baptists and Baptists) who have suffered terribly from her persecutions (Revelation 17:6; 18:4-5) (259).

In *THE OTHER SIDE OF ROME* author John B. Wilder reported, “Dr. Walter M. Montano, former Catholic priest and a Doctor of Philosophy from San Marcos University, asserts in his book, *Behind the Purple Curtain*, that it has been estimated that fifty million people died for the faith during the Dark Ages [p. 91]. Alexander Campbell, well-known religious leader of the nineteenth century, stated in a debate with the Reverend John B. Purcell, [Roman Catholic] Bishop of Cincinnati, in 1837 that the records of historians and martyrologists show that it is reasonable to estimate that from fifty to sixty-eight millions of human beings died, suffered torture, lost their possessions or were otherwise devoured by the Roman Catholic Church during the awful years of the Inquisition. The [Roman Catholic] bishop did not refute this statement...”

“...Juan Antonio Llorente, himself a [Catholic] priest, was secretary of the Holy Office, the Catholic organization that was responsible for carrying on the Inquisition in Spain. Sickened by the horrors with which he dealt, this priest took upon himself the task of writing some of the history of the Inquisition in Spain. He is considered reliable and his work has been widely printed...According to this Catholic historian, Rome burned [alive] more than three hundred thousand Spaniards in the period covered by his writing! Llorente says that the last burning of a living human being [in Spain] by the Catholic Church took place on November 7, 1781. At the same time when such men as George Washington and Benjamin Franklin were carving a free nation from the western wilderness, the Church of Rome was burning people alive in Spain. And this sort of thing is still going on, although not at this time on the organized and popular scale that marked its terrors in Europe less than two centuries ago...”

“...The newsmagazine *Tiempo*, published in Mexico City, came out with an article on February 8, 1952, that was to astonish many readers. Starting with the year 1944, *Tiempo* gave detailed information on cases of murder, pillage and rape that had been carried out by priest-led mobs against helpless Protestants during the next eight years, to 1952. These cases numbered seventy-six and included the destruction of entire communities by the Church of Rome. The magazine even gave the names of the priests who were responsible for these crimes and went into sickening detail as to how non-Catholic Christians had been abused by these religionists. Preachers were killed and quartered, and their homes and houses were sacked and burned. Other Protestants were hanged, others slain with machetes, while still others were dragged to death behind horses. Women were violated, and the small son of a Protestant pastor was found with eighty-five knife wounds in his body after his father had

tried to halt some of the abuses the local priest was inflicting against the villagers. Remember, **THESE CRIMES TOOK PLACE BETWEEN 1944 AND 1952, SEVENTY-SIX AUTHENTICATED CASES OF THEM...**"

**"...IN NOT ONE INSTANCE OF THESE CRIMES WAS A [ROMAN CATHOLIC] PRIEST BROUGHT TO TASK BY THE AUTHORITIES OF THE REPUBLIC [OF MEXICO]. THIS IS AN INDICATION OF THE POWERS OF ROME WHERE ITS PEOPLE CAN DOMINATE THE BALLOT BOXES OF THE LAND. In the same article *Tiempo* pointed to other Catholic persecutions in Chile, Ecuador, Brazil, Columbia, Nicaragua, Costa Rica and Cuba. Thus it is no wonder that non-Catholic leaders in America are becoming alarmed at the growing power of [Roman] Catholicism on every hand..." (260)**

In addition, Mr. Wilder wrote, **"...I do not know any Bible-believing Christian who would purposely set out to become a martyr for Christ at the hands of an angry Roman Catholic priest-stirred mob. Nevertheless, these attacks by Roman Catholics against Protestants, Evangelicals and Baptists have occurred many times in the past. I agree with author John Wilder who cautioned, "WE WOULD NEVER HURT A CATHOLIC, NOR WOULD WE FOR ONE MOMENT DEPRIVE HIM OF HIS LIBERTY TO FOLLOW HIS FAITH AND TO PUBLISH IT. BUT AFTER A GLANCE AT HISTORY, WE GROW UNEASY AT WHAT THE CATHOLIC CHURCH MAY DO TO US, SHOULD IT GAIN IN THIS LAND THE POWER THAT IT HAS HELD IN OTHER COUNTRIES. AN INFORMED PUBLIC OPINION IS OUR ONLY EARTHLY DEFENSE AGAINST THIS AGGRESSION." (261)**

In his book *BEHIND THE PURPLE CURTAIN* the former friar of the Dominican Order and Roman Catholic priest Dr. Walter Montano warned, **"Some sincere Catholics, unable to deny the cruel actions of their church through her various agencies like the Inquisition, admit that, "It is associated with policies, methods, and excesses which are as repugnant to the modern-day Catholic as to the modern-day non-Catholic. The Catholic does not have to defend everything done in days gone by in the name of the Church or the State."<sup>2</sup> Unfortunately, the actions of the Roman Church are not essentially different from those of the past. Under these circumstances we are justified in believing that the past is the preparation to weave the curtain for the present, and the present therefore must be a warning for tomorrow, for as Patrick Henry said, "I know of no way of judging the future but by the past...Roman Catholics not only claim the right to punish "heretics by death, but they actually glory in their intolerance as so often manifested in the past. Her [the Roman Catholic church] avowed doctrine is 'that heretics ought to be visited by the secular powers [international, federal, state, local governments] with temporal punishments, and even by death itself.' <sup>4</sup>..."**

**"...In a standard Catholic work it is boldly claimed that the [Roman] church has the divine right to "confiscate the property of heretics, imprison their persons, and condemn them to the flames [i.e., cremation, as was practiced during the Inquisitions and in Nazi death camps]." It is further affirmed: "In our age the right to inflict the severest penalties, even death, belong to the [Roman] church" because "experience teaches us that there is no other remedy," for "the last recourse is the death penalty," The same author continues: "There is no graver offense than heresy...and therefore it must be rooted out with fire and sword. It is a Catholic tenet which must be faithfully held, that the extreme penalty not only may, but must be inflicted on obstinate heretics."<sup>5</sup> Miguel Rizzo, Jr., brings a practical case of this doctrine of "fire and sword," as he tells: When I was in the United States representing the Presbyterian Board of Foreign Missions,**



(United States of America), I told an audience that the Catholic Church had engineered the burning of Protestant houses of worship in Brazil. My hearers appeared skeptical. Fortunately I had just received a copy of an important Sao Paulo daily which reproduced a photograph of a Protestant church in flames and reported how the conflagration had started. Thus I was able to convince them in some measure of the violence of which Romanism is capable.” (262) Similar twentieth-century examples include the anti-Protestant terrorist actions of the Roman Catholic Ustashi in Yugoslavia and the Irish Republican Army in Ireland and Great Britain.

As Bible-obeying *Christians*, we are commanded by our Lord Jesus to love all people. This includes those who label us as their enemies. We are to pray for their salvation, and purpose to do good to them (Matthew 5:44). Yet, let us at the same time, recognize that we live in a fallen, sin corrupted world full of fallen, sin corrupted people, many of whom would prefer that Bible-believing (“fundamentalist”) *Christians* not exist here. Let us not be willingly deceived, robbed, or murdered by those who despise us because we fail to discern their evil intentions toward us and wisely prepare accordingly. May we also remember the command of Jesus found in Matthew 24:4: “...Take heed that no man deceive you.” May we refuse to be willingly led to the slaughter fields of genocide by our enemies because we naively fail to recognize their evil agendas and the dangers of our time. Well this is one Bible-believing preacher who will boldly proclaim, NOT ON MY WATCH!!!

Are you aware of the fact that more *Christians* died as martyrs in the twentieth century than any other century in church history? On the website of International Christian Concern [www.persecution.org](http://www.persecution.org) Jeff King proclaims, “In this past century alone, more Christians were murdered for their faith than any other century in human history, an estimated 200 million. The persecuted church suffers in the forefront of this war in order that the church might be established where the gospel is either non-existent or opposed by other religions. From Indonesia to India, to the horn of Africa, believers are economically marginalized, denied education for their children, beaten, tortured, raped, imprisoned, and sadly even murdered for their faith. The oppression is limitless and usually unseen by the world...Persecution is rarely reported on by the media and therefore most of the Western Church has no idea of the suffering of this part of our body.” (263)

There is perhaps no greater recent example of this than that of Communist China. Chinese *Christians* understand all too well the dangers of oppressive, totalitarian, demonically-deceived government leaders. For in a regime practicing statism or totalitarianism, your body and personal property become property of the State. Under Communism, your only purpose for existing is to serve the State. Communism makes the State a false god in place of the true and living God of the Holy Bible. In Communism / Marxism / Socialism human value and human rights are determined by the State. Marxists indoctrinate their citizens in order that they might become slaves to serve the Marxist State.

Whereas, biblical Christianity affirms that our bodies and properties belong to our *LORD* (1 Corinthians 3:16-17; 6:19-20). Our purpose for existing is to serve, honor and glorify our *LORD* in all things. We believe that our dignity, rights and freedoms come from our *Creator*. Therefore, those who would plan to kill us, defile our bodies, or steal our properties should be forewarned that they are defiling the *LORD* Himself and stealing from Him. They can be certain that our omnipotent Savior has promised to judge them (1 Corinthians 3:16-17; 6:19-20).

A recent report seems to confirm that which we have discovered elsewhere. It is a very dangerous time to be an authentic *Christian*. An article titled *China accused of vast trade in organs: Harvests come from religious dissidents* by Julia Duin was printed in the May 3<sup>rd</sup> 2010 issue of *The Washington Times*. The author reported, "China's hidden policy of executing prisoners of the forbidden quasi-Buddhist group Falun Gong and harvesting their organs for worldwide sale has been expanded to include Tibetans, "house church" Christians and Muslim Uighurs, human rights activists said April 26. In a news conference on Capitol Hill, several speakers, including attorney David Matas of B'nai Brith Canada and Ethan Gutmann of the Foundation for the Defense of Democracies, said their investigations have unearthed a grisly trade in which an estimated 9,000 members of Falun Gong have been executed for their corneas, lungs, livers, kidneys and skins. They likened the practice to the Nazi treatment of Jewish prisoners in World War II concentration camps,..." (264)

Keep in mind that what was reported in this article is only a small fraction of what is being done to those labeled "dissidents" or "enemies of the state" by the Communist / Marxist government of China. Here, I will not list the many violations of human rights and the murderous actions against *Christians* done over the years by the Chinese Communist government. There would not be enough space in this report or many reports to list their atrocities. OUR LORD KNOWS WHAT THEY HAVE DONE AND WILL JUDGE THEM ACCORDINGLY. We know that under the regime of Mao Tse-tung, many millions of people were murdered by Marxists / Communists / Socialists / Progressives in China. During the "Cultural Revolution" in China many Chinese young people, who had been indoctrinated in Marxist Socialism in their public schools, helped report and have their own parents murdered in service to the totalitarian Communist State. This is a totalitarian government that regularly murders its own citizens without conscience or remorse as was publicly demonstrated in the notorious Tiananmen Square massacre in 1989. Over the years, the Christian ministry *Voice of the Martyrs* in Bartlesville, Oklahoma has reported eyewitness accounts of the atrocities done against *Christians* in China by the Chinese Communist government.

As *Christians*, we must pay close attention to Bible prophecies regarding the time just prior to the 2<sup>nd</sup> coming of Jesus. Do you recall what our LORD foretold would happen to His followers in the end time? Jesus warned, "Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake." (Matthew 24:9) Was Jesus serious about this? Was He just trying to frighten His *disciples*? or Did he know in advance just how evil the hearts of many people and leaders would be in "the time of the end?"

Moreover, how can technology play a role in potential future persecutions carried out against Bible-believing *Christians* in the last days? Technology can be used for good purposes to benefit humanity. However, the same technology used to help people can be used for great evil and destruction if it is used by evil people for evil purposes. Such is the case with modern surveillance technology. Surveillance cameras can be used to protect people and property. This is what they were originally designed to do. For example, an article in *Popular Mechanics* from October 1, 2009 titled "Surveillance Society: New High-Tech Cameras Are Watching You" demonstrated the need for surveillance in the work place. "In 2006 theft and fraud cost American stores \$41.6 billion, an all time high. Employee theft accounted for nearly half of the total (shoplifting was only a third), so much of the surveillance aims to catch in-house crooks." (265) Unfortunately, the same surveillance cameras can be used to spy on,

identify and track citizens, and aid in rounding up “undesirable” or “non-conformist” citizens in the event of mass arrests by a despotic/totalitarian government.

Perhaps you have noticed the many new dome-shaped surveillance cameras that have been installed at highway intersections, road entrances, and throughout many cities and towns in the United States during recent years. Why are these new surveillance cameras being installed? Now I’m certain that those responsible for the installations of these many, new surveillance cameras throughout the nation would explain that they are for “national security” and “for our protection and our good.” Others would argue that they are necessary for “governments and law enforcement to maintain social control, recognize and monitor threats, and prevent/investigate criminal activity (266).” Well these seem like reasonable answers. But the problem is, what does the decision to create “a mass surveillance society” mean for the political and personal freedoms that our forefathers fought and died to preserve?

Who and/or what agency or agencies are funding the installations of the thousands of new surveillance cameras? “The Department of Homeland Security gives billions of dollars per year in Homeland Security grants for local, state, and federal agencies to install modern video surveillance equipment. For example, the city of Chicago, IL recently used a 5.1 million Homeland Security grant to install an additional 250 surveillance cameras, and connect them to a centralized monitoring center, along with its preexisting network of over 2000 cameras in a program known as Operation Virtual Shield. Chicago mayor Richard Daley has announced that Chicago will have a surveillance camera on every street corner by the year 2016...” (267)

In addition to the massive use and integration of various types of surveillance cameras, surveillance by means of biometrics is widespread. Biometrics is “the science of identifying people through distinct physical traits: fingerprints, irises, face geometry.” (268) A major part of the biometrics surveillance industry is facial recognition software. Biometrics technology, including facial-recognition software, is now being used by governments and corporations for surveillance in a variety of ways. These same security technologies developed in the United States are being sold for use in China. And what has been created in China in recent years may be helping to set up an even more effective and lethal future persecution against millions of authentic Christians who worship in “unregistered” house churches in that nation. This is referred to as the Golden Shield project. Writing about China’s Golden Shield Project in a May 29, 2008 article entitled “China’s All-Seeing Eye” Naomi Klein explained, “...This is how this Golden Shield will work: Chinese citizens will be watched around the clock through networked CCTV cameras and remote monitoring of computers. They will be listened to on their phone calls, monitored by digital voice-recognition technologies. Their Internet access will be aggressively limited through the country’s notorious system of online controls known as the “Great Firewall.” Their movements will be tracked through national I.D. cards with scannable computer chips and photos that are instantly uploaded to police databases and linked to their holder’s personal data. This is the most important element of all: linking all these tools together in a massive, searchable database of names, photos, residency information, work history and biometric data. When Golden Shield is finished, there will be a photo in those databases for every person in China: 1.3 billion faces...”

...In Shenzhen one night, I have dinner with a U.S. business consultant named Stephen Herrington. Before he started lecturing at Chinese business schools, teaching students concepts like brand management, Herrington was a military intelligence officer, ascending to

the rank of lieutenant colonel. What he is seeing in the Pearl River Delta, he tells me, is scaring the hell out of him – and not for what it means for China. “I can guarantee you that there are people in the Bush administration who are studying the use of surveillance technologies being developed here and have at least skeletal plans to implement them at home,” he says. “We can already see it in New York with CCTV cameras. Once you have the cameras in place, you have the infrastructure for a powerful tracking system. I’m worried about what this will mean if the U.S. government goes totalitarian and starts employing these technologies more than they are already. I’m worried about the threat this poses to American democracy...” (269)

Meanwhile, it appears that the Department of Homeland Security is currently creating a modified version of China’s Golden Shield Project here in America. But is this new, mass surveillance society in the U.S.A. part of a larger “global security agenda”, a bigger Plan? Is it helping to build a new “international order” in which, “...all nations have certain rights and responsibilities.” as revealed in the President’s National Security Strategy report of 27 May, 2010? (270)

Are the leaders of our government and of other nations being deceived by *Satan* regarding the outcomes of this global, esoteric agenda? Is *the Devil* himself the spiritual source of the collectivist, universal vision for a “New World Order” which was first advocated in the teachings of the Bavarian Illuminated (by *Lucifer*) Freemasonry of Jesuit-trained Professor Adam Weishaupt (Jacobinism)? Years later, this same *Devil*-inspired vision was passed on to the Marxists, Fabian Socialists and Darwinists in the nineteenth and twentieth centuries. Likewise, Roman Catholic Jesuit priest Pierre Teilhard de Chardin, S. J., embraced this satanic vision and further developed it in his Universalism and “Omega Point” theology. Subsequently, the Luciferian vision of the creation of a New World Order captured the souls and minds of many in the academic world by means of the teachings of Annie Besant, George Bernard Shaw, H. G. Wells, John Dewey, Pierre Teilhard de Chardin, S. J. (Society of Jesus) and many other Marxists / Socialists / Progressives (Daniel 2:40-45; 7:23-24, John 10:10, Revelation 13:7).

Now, fast forward in the future tense to see the logical outcome of this technetronic, new age agenda. Is it plausible that these drones and surveillance cameras could be used against American citizens and innocent civilians in the future? Well, judge for yourself where this agenda is taking our nation. But, keep in mind that according to Bible prophecies, a global tyrant with a one-world global kingdom is scheduled to rise in the last days. He is referred to as the “*antichrist*” (1 John 2:18) and “*the beast*” (Revelation 13:1-18). And if we are as close to the end time as it appears, this same surveillance technology that is now allegedly “for our good,” may very well be used in the near or distant future to help spy on Bible-believing *Christians*, track us, and/or round us up in mass arrests for execution (Matthew 24:9, Revelation 6:9-11). Benjamin Franklin is quoted as saying, “Any society that would give up a little liberty to gain a little security will deserve neither and will lose both.” (271)

Let’s reverse back to reconsider the present tense. Can our nation change course before it’s too late? Do we have the courage and faith necessary to separate ourselves from this globalist, Luciferian, totalitarian train-wreck ahead. As genuine *Christians*, let us not be found aiding *the Devil* in the construction of his global, counterfeit kingdom here. For unless this continuing “government overreach gone wild” and centralization of national security, law

enforcement and everything else is stopped, the Leftist-controlled DHS will soon become the new KGB of the North American Community. And it may even help provide, in the future, the global security technology necessary to facilitate the global rise and global dominion of *the antichrist*. The Scriptures clearly indicate that *the antichrist* will rule over a global unification of nations and will have a global army supported by a global police/security force (Daniel 7:23-25; 11:36-39, Revelation 13:4-10; 16:14; 19:19). Nevertheless, according to Bible prophecies, “*the beast*” (*antichrist*) will be defeated in the future battle of Armageddon at the 2<sup>nd</sup> coming of our Lord Jesus Christ (Revelation 19:15-21).

As Bible-believing *Christians* we believe that the only, true “*King of nations*” is Jesus Christ, and that He is coming again to establish His righteous, global *kingdom* on earth (Jeremiah 10:7, Zechariah 14:1-20, Revelation 20:1-6). However, before Jesus returns, the global leader identified in Scriptures as *the antichrist* (also known as “*the beast*”) will rise along with a counterfeit global kingdom in the last days (Daniel 7:23-28, 2 Thessalonians 2:1-8, 1 John 2:18, Revelation 13). Since we are likely near “*his time*” to rise, wise leaders in government must be careful not to have a part in helping to prepare the way for his global reign by means of unwise globalist, totalitarian plans and policies.

Nevertheless, according to Bible prophecies, eventually, unsaved leaders of the nations will unite under the authority of antichrist (Daniel 7:23-28, Revelation 13:3-18; 17:11-18). Saved leaders will not unite with them. Thankfully, all the surveillance technology and military power of the coming *antichrist* (the false messiah, the false king of nations), his followers, his global order and his global army/police force will not stop King Jesus from returning to reign. The *antichrist*, the false prophet; the counterfeit global kingdom; and the antichrist’s high-tech global army/security force will be finished at the future battle of Armageddon (Revelation 19:15-21).

The psalmist proclaimed, “*Why do the heathen rage, and the people imagine a vain thing? The kings [rulers] of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the LORD [JHVH], and against his anointed [- Jesus the true Christ of Israel], saying, Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us. He that sitteth in the heavens shall laugh: the Lord shall have them in derision. Then shall he speak unto them in his wrath, and vex them in his sore displeasure...Be wise now therefore, O ye kings [government leaders]: be instructed, ye judges of the earth. Serve the LORD with fear, and rejoice with trembling. Kiss the Son, lest he be angry, and ye perish from the way, when his wrath is kindled but a little. Blessed are all they that put their trust in him.*” (Psalm 2:1-5,10-12)

In Psalm chapter two we find a prophetic summary of the *LORD*’s true and righteous judgments concerning the nations during the future time of “*great tribulation*.” It is an appeal to the leaders of the nations to submit themselves to the *LORD* (JHVH) – Jesus Christ, the true, eternal *King of nations*, and to serve and obey Him (Psalm 2:10-12). Tragically, most leaders of the nations will not repent of their sins and submit themselves to the *LORD*’s righteous rule. Rather, they choose to set themselves “against the LORD, and against his anointed (Psalm 2:2).” They despise the *LORD*’s laws revealed in the Holy Bible and desire to “cast away” His righteous rules for their lives (Psalm 2:3). Psalm 2:5-6 helps us to understand the divine purpose of the *LORD*’s judgments during the future “*great tribulation*.” The *LORD* will, “*...speak unto them in his wrath, and vex them in his sore displeasure* (Psalm 2:5).” It is no coincidence that the future time of “*great tribulation*” is called, “*...the great day of his*

***wrath...***” in Revelation 6:14-17.

But, for the ***LORD***’s people, the very best is yet to come (***“a new heaven and a new earth”*** – Revelation 21:1-2). For Bible-loving, Bible-believing ***Christians***, it is comforting to know that our Lord Jesus Christ – the only, true ***Messiah, Savior***, and coming ***King of kings*** will make things right, in ***“the time of the end.”*** Regarding that future day the prophet Joel declared, ***“The LORD [JHVH] also shall roar out of Zion, and utter his voice from Jerusalem: and the heavens and the earth shall shake: but the LORD [JHVH] will be the hope of his people, and the strength of the children of Israel (Joel 3:16 KJV).”***

Our prayer is, ***“Even so, come, Lord Jesus.”*** (Revelation 22:20 KJV)

## CHAPTER XI: WE WILL REMEMBER AND HONOR THE FALLEN

*“And when he opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the word of God, and for the testimony which they held: And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth? And white robes were given unto every one of them; and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little season, until their fellow-servants also and their brethren, that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled...Come hither; I will shew unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters:...And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand...And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH. And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus:...The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth...And he saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues...And the woman which thou sawest is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth...for thy merchants were the great men of the earth; for by thy sorceries were all nations deceived. And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth...Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong is the Lord God who judgeth her...AND after these things I heard a great voice of much people in heaven, saying, Alleluia: salvation, and glory, and honour, and power, unto the Lord our God: For true and righteous are his judgments: for he hath judged the great whore, which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath avenged the blood of his servants at her hand...”*

(Revelation 6:9-11; 17:1,3-6,9,15,18; 18:8,23-24; 19:1-2 KJV)

On 11 September 2001 about three thousand Americans died and many more were injured as a result of two passenger airliner attacks on the Twin Towers of the World Trade Center (along with controlled demolition within the buildings), an attack on the Pentagon (including controlled demolition within the building) and one downed passenger airliner in Pennsylvania carried out by mass-murdering terrorists in the United States. See article entitled “15 YEARS LATER: ON THE PHYSICS OF HIGH-RISE BUILDING COLLAPSES” at <https://www.europhysicsnews.org/articles/ePN/pdf/2016/04/ePN2016474p21.pdf> It was a very tragic moment in time. This tragedy had an immediate and devastating impact on the nation. Years later, memorials are still held to remember and honor the fallen.

Yet, over the centuries, millions of our authentic brothers and sisters *in Christ* have been killed, many in the most horrific and cruel ways, as a result of Vatican incited inquisitions, wars and massacres. How many of us remember and honor these fallen Christian martyrs? It is an act of hypocrisy for true *Christians* to choose to remember the deaths of about three thousand people who died as victims of murderous acts of terrorism on 11 September 2001 while at the same time choosing to ignore and forget the cruel deaths of millions of Christian martyrs who have died as victims of Roman Catholic ideology. We should remember and honor the three thousand who perished on 9-11-01 and the millions of our

genuine brothers and sisters *in Christ* who died as victims of Roman Catholic ideology. Is not the motto of many “WE WILL REMEMBER.”

IN NAZI GERMANY THE JEWS WERE FIRST VILIFIED AND MARGINALIZED; THEN, THEY TARGETED FOR CRIMINALIZATION AND PERSECUTION; AND FINALLY, THEY WERE ARRESTED AND SLAUGHTERED BY THE MILLIONS. SO LIKEWISE, ARE BIBLICAL *CHRISTIANS* IN OUR TIME BEING VILIFIED, MARGINALIZED, CRIMINALIZED AND INCREASINGLY TARGETED FOR PERSECUTION. WHAT COULD BE NEXT?

As genuine *Christians*, we are instructed by our Lord Jesus to forgive those who are guilty of these horrible crimes against humanity of the past (Matthew 6:14-15, Luke 6:37). We are to recognize that vengeance is the *LORD's*, He will fully repay the incredible amount of evil that was done to our *Christian brethren* by Roman Catholic mass-murderers (Romans 12:19). *Christians* are taught to, “*Be not overcome of evil [their evil actions toward us], but overcome evil [their evil actions toward us] with good.*” (Romans 12:21) YET, WE MUST NOT DISREGARD OR FORGET THE HORRIBLE DEATHS OF THESE MILLIONS OF CHRISTIAN MARTYRS OF THE PAST. RATHER, LET US REMEMBER WHAT HAPPENED TO THEM AND TEACH PEOPLE THE FACTS IN ORDER THAT WE MIGHT LEARN FROM HISTORY. LET US WORK TO PREVENT ALLOWING THESE SAME TERRIBLE CRIMES THAT WERE CARRIED OUT AGAINST *CHRISTIANS* IN THE PAST TO BE REPEATED IN OUR TIME.

In the book *FOXES' BOOK OF MARTYRS* by John Foxe we read in CHAPTER 4 about the “Papal Persecutions.” “...We come now to a period when persecution, under the guise of [Roman Catholic] Christianity, committed more enormities than ever disgraced the annals of paganism. Disregarding the maxims and the spirit of the Gospel, the papal [Catholic] Church, arming herself with the power of the sword, vexed the Church of God and wasted it for several centuries, a period most appropriately termed in history, the “dark ages.” The kings of the earth gave their power to the “Beast,” and submitted to be trodden on by the miserable vermin that often filled the papal [pope's] chair, as in the case of Henry, emperor of Germany. The storm of papal persecution first burst upon the Waldenses in France...”

“...popery having brought various innovations into the Church, and overspread the Christian world with darkness and superstition, some few, who plainly perceived the pernicious tendency of such errors, determined to show the light of the Gospel in its real purity, and to disperse these clouds which artful priests had raised about it, in order to blind the people, and obscure its real brightness. The principal among these was Berengarius, who, about the year 1000, boldly preached Gospel truths, according to their primitive purity. Many, from conviction, assented to his doctrine, and were, on that account, called Berengarians. To Berengarius succeeded Peer Bruis, who preached at Toulouse, under the protection of an earl, named Hildephonsus; AND THE WHOLE TENETS OF THE REFORMERS, WITH THE REASONS OF THEIR SEPARATION FROM THE CHURCH OF ROME, WERE PUBLISHED IN A BOOK WRITTEN BY BRUIS, UNDER THE TITLE OF “*ANTICHRIST*”...[capitalization added] “...By the year of Christ 1140, the number of the reformed was very great, and the probability of its increasing alarmed the pope, who wrote to several princes to banish them [or exterminate them] from their dominions, and employed many learned men to write against their doctrines. In A.D. 1147, because of Henry of Toulouse, deemed their most eminent preacher, they were called Henericians; AND AS THEY WOULD NOT ADMIT OF ANY PROOFS RELATIVE TO RELIGION BUT WHAT COULD BE DEDUCED FROM THE SCRIPTURES



**THEMSELVES, THE POPISH PARTY GAVE THEM THE NAME OF “APOSTOLICS.” At length, Peter Waldo, or Valdo, a native of Lyons, eminent for his piety and learning, became a strenuous opposer of popery; and from him the reformed, at that time, received the appellation of WALDENSES or WALDOYS. Pope Alexander III being informed by the bishop of Lyons of these transactions, EXCOMMUNICATED WALDO AND HIS ADHERENTS, AND COMMANDED THE BISHOP TO EXTERMINATE THEM...”**

**“...The proceedings of Waldo and the reformed occasioned the first rise of the inquisitors; for Pope Innocent III authorized certain monks as inquisitors, to inquire for, and deliver over, the reformed to the secular power. The process was short, as AN ACCUSATION WAS DEEMED ADEQUATE TO GUILT, AND A CANDID TRIAL WAS NEVER GRANTED TO THE ACCUSED [SOUND FAMILIAR?]. The pope, finding that these cruel means had not the intended effect, sent several learned monks to preach among the Waldenses, and to endeavor to argue them out of their opinions. Among these monks was one Dominic, who appeared extremely zealous in the cause of popery. THIS DOMINIC INSTITUTED AN ORDER, WHICH, FROM HIM, WAS CALLED THE ORDER OF THE DOMINICAN FRIARS; AND THE MEMBERS OF THIS ORDER HAVE EVER SINCE BEEN THE PRINCIPAL INQUISITORS IN THE VARIOUS INQUISITIONS IN THE WORLD. THE POWER OF THE INQUISITORS WAS UNLIMITED; THEY PROCEEDED AGAINST WHOM THEY PLEASED, WITHOUT ANY CONSIDERATION OF AGE, SEX OR RANK. LET THE ACCUSERS BE EVER SO INFAMOUS, THE ACCUSATION WAS DEEMED VALID; AND EVEN ANONYMOUS INFORMATIONS, SENT BY LETTER, WERE THOUGHT SUFFICIENT EVIDENCE. TO BE RICH WAS A CRIME EQUAL TO HERESY; THEREFORE MANY WHO HAD MONEY WERE ACCUSED OF HERESY, OR OF BEING FAVORERS OF HERETICS, THAT THEY MIGHT BE OBLIGED TO PAY FOR THEIR OPINIONS. THE DEAREST FRIENDS OR NEAREST KINDRED COULD NOT, WITHOUT DANGER, SERVE ANYONE WHO WAS IMPRISONED ON ACCOUNT OF RELIGION. TO CONVEY TO THOSE WHO WERE CONFINED A LITTLE STRAW, OR GIVE THEM A CUP OF WATER, WAS CALLED FAVORING OF THE HERETICS, AND THEY WERE PROSECUTED ACCORDINGLY [SOUND FAMILIAR?]. NO LAWYER DARED TO PLEAD FOR HIS OWN BROTHER, AND THEIR MALICE EVEN EXTENDED BEYOND THE GRAVE; HENCE THE BONES OF MANY WERE DUG UP AND BURNT, AS EXAMPLES TO THE LIVING. IF A MAN ON HIS DEATHBED WAS ACCUSED OF BEING A FOLLOWER OF WALDO, HIS ESTATES WERE CONFISCATED, [SOUND FAMILIAR?] AND THE HEIR TO THEM DEFRAUDED OF HIS INHERITANCE; AND SOME WERE SENT TO THE HOLY LAND, WHILE THE DOMINICANS TOOK POSSESSION OF THEIR HOUSES AND PROPERTIES, AND, WHEN THE OWNERS RETURNED, WOULD OFTEN PRETEND NOT TO KNOW THEM. THESE PERSECUTIONS WERE CONTINUED FOR SEVERAL CENTURIES UNDER DIFFERENT POPES AND OTHER GREAT DIGNITARIES OF THE [UN]HOLY ROMAN] CATHOLIC CHURCH.” (272)**

In addition, John Foxe reported concerning the persecutions of the Albigenses ordered by the Roman Catholic church: “The Albigenses were a people of the reformed religion, who inhabited the country of Albi. They were condemned [labeled “heretics”] on the score of religion in the Council of Lateran, by order of Pope Alexander III. Nevertheless, they increased so prodigiously, that many cities were inhabited by persons only of their persuasion, and

several eminent noblemen embraced their doctrines. Among the latter were Raymond, earl of Toulouse, Raymond, earl of Foix, the earl of Beziers, etc...”

“...A friar, named Peter, having been murdered in the dominions of the earl of Toulouse, THE POPE MADE THAT MURDER A PRETENSE TO PERSECUTE THAT NOBLEMAN AND HIS SUBJECTS. TO EFFECT THIS, HE SENT PERSONS THROUGHOUT ALL EUROPE, IN ORDER TO RAISE FORCES TO ACT COERCIVELY AGAINST THE ALBIGENSES, AND PROMISED PARADISE TO ALL THAT WOULD COME TO THIS WAR, WHICH HE TERMED A HOLY WAR, AND BEAR ARMS FOR FORTY DAYS. THE SAME INDULGENCES WERE LIKEWISE HELD OUT TO ALL WHO ENTERED THEMSELVES FOR THE PURPOSE AS TO SUCH AS ENGAGED IN CRUSADES TO THE HOLY LAND. The brave earl defended Toulouse and other places with the most heroic bravery and various success against the pope’s legates and Simon, earl of Montfort, a bigoted Catholic nobleman. Unable to subdue the earl of Toulouse openly, the king of France, and the queen mother, and three archbishops raised another formidable army, and had the art to persuade the earl of Toulouse to come to a conference, when he was treacherously seized upon, made a prisoner, forced to appear barefooted and bareheaded before his enemies, and compelled to subscribe an abject recantation. THIS WAS FOLLOWED BY A SEVERE PERSECUTION AGAINST THE ALBIGENSES; AND EXPRESS ORDERS THAT THE LAITY SHOULD NOT BE PERMITTED TO READ THE SACRED SCRIPTURES. In the year 1620 also, the persecution against the Albigenses was very severe. In 1648 a heavy persecution raged throughout Lithuania and Poland. The cruelty of the Cossacks was so excessive that the Tartars themselves were ashamed of their barbarities. Among others who suffered was the Rev. Adrian Chalinski, who was roasted alive by a slow fire, and whose sufferings and mode of death may depict the horrors which the professors of Christianity have endured from the enemies of the Redeemer...”

“...The reformation of papistical error very early was projected in France; for in the third century a learned man, named Almericus, and six of his disciples, were ordered to be burnt at Paris for asserting that God was no otherwise present in the sacramental bread than in any other bread; that it was idolatry to build altars or shrines to saints and that it was ridiculous to offer incense to them. The martyrdom of Almericus and his pupils did not, however, prevent many from acknowledging the justness of his notions, and seeing the purity of the reformed religion, so that the faith of Christ continually increased, and in time not only spread itself over many parts of France, but diffused the light of the Gospel over various other countries...”

“...In the year 1524, at a town in France, called Melden, one John Clark set up a bill on the church door, wherein he called the pope Antichrist. For this offense he was repeatedly whipped, and then branded on the forehead. Going afterward to Mentz, in Lorraine, he demolished some images, for which he had his right hand and nose cut off, and his arms and breast torn with pincers. He sustained these cruelties with amazing fortitude, and was even sufficiently cool to sing the one hundredth and fifteenth Psalm, which expressly forbids idolatry; after which he was thrown into the fire, and burnt to ashes. Many persons of the reformed persuasion were, about this time, beaten, racked, scourged, and burnt to death, in several parts of France, but more particularly at Paris, Malda, and Limosin. A native of Malda was burnt by a slow fire, for saying that Mass was a plain denial of the death and passion of Christ. At Limosin, John de Cadurco, a clergyman of the reformed religion, was apprehended

and ordered to be burnt. Francis Bribard, secretary to cardinal de Pellay, for speaking in favor of the reformed, had his tongue cut out, and was then burnt, A.D. 1545. James Cobard, a schoolmaster in the city of St. Michael, was burnt, A.D. 1545, for saying "That Mass was useless and absurd"; and about the same time, fourteen men were burnt at Malda, their wives being compelled to stand by and behold the execution..."

"...A.D. 1546, Peter Chapot brought a number of Bibles in the French tongue to France, and publicly sold them there; for which he was brought to trial, sentenced and executed a few days afterward. Soon after, a cripple of Meaux, a schoolmaster of Fera named Stephen Poliot, and a man named John English, were burnt for the faith...In the year 1554, two men of the reformed religion, with the son and daughter of one of them, were apprehended and committed to the castle of Niverne. On examination, they confessed their faith, and were ordered to execution; being smeared with grease, brimstone, and gunpowder, they cried, "Salt on, salt on this sinful and rotten flesh." Their tongues were then cut out, and they were afterward committed to the flames, which soon consumed them, by means of the combustible matter with which they were besmeared..." (273)

Moreover, Mr. Foxe described one of the most notorious holocausts in world history carried out by Roman Catholics against the Protestant Huguenots in France. "The Bartholomew Massacre at Paris, etc. On the twenty second day of August, 1572, commenced this diabolical act of sanguinary brutality. It was intended to destroy at one stroke the root of the Protestant tree, which had only before partially suffered in its branches. The king of France had artfully proposed a marriage between his sister and the prince of Navarre, the captain and prince of the Protestants. This imprudent marriage was publicly celebrated at Paris, August 18, by the [Roman Catholic] cardinal of Bourbon, upon a high stage erected for the purpose. They dined in great pomp with the bishop, and supped with the king at Paris. Four days after this, the prince (Coligny), as he was coming from the Council, was shot in both arms; he then said to Maure, his deceased mother's minister, "O my brother, I do now perceive that I am indeed beloved of my God, since for His most holy sake I am wounded." Although the Vidam advised him to fly, yet he abode in Paris, and was soon after slain by Bemjus; who afterward declared he never saw a man meet death more valiantly than the admiral..."

"...The soldiers were appointed at a certain signal to burst out instantly to the slaughter in all parts of the city. When they had killed the admiral, they threw him out at a window into the street, where his head was cut off, and sent to the pope. The savage papists, still raging against him, cut off his arms and private members, and, after dragging him three days through the streets, hung him by the heels without the city. After him they slew many great and honorable persons who were Protestants; as Count Rochfoucault, Telinius, the admiral's son-in-law, Antonius, Clarimontus, marquis of Ravely, Lewes Bussius, bandineus, Pluvialius, Burneus, etc., and falling upon the common people, they continued the slaughter for many days; in the three first they slew of all ranks and conditions to the number of ten thousand. The bodies were thrown into the rivers, and the river appeared presently like a stream of blood. So furious was their hellish rage, that they slew all papists whom they suspected to be not very staunch to their diabolical religion. FROM PARIS THE DESTRUCTION SPREAD TO ALL QUARTERS OF THE REALM. At Orleans, a thousand were slain of men, women, and children, and six thousand at Rouen. At Meldith, two hundred were put into prison, and later

brought out by units, and cruelly murdered. At Lyons, eight hundred were massacred. Here children hanging about their parents, and parents affectionately embracing their children, were pleasant food for the swords and bloodthirsty minds of those who call themselves the Catholic Church. HERE THREE HUNDRED WERE SLAIN IN THE [ROMAN CATHOLIC] BISHOP'S HOUSE; AND THE IMPIOUS MONKS WOULD SUFFER NONE TO BE BURIED..."

"...At Augustobona, on the people hearing of the massacre at Paris, they shut their gates that no Protestants might escape, and searching diligently for every individual of the reformed Church, imprisoned and then barbarously murdered them. The same cruelty they practiced at Avaricum, at Troys, at Toulouse, Rouen and many other places, running from city to city, towns, and villages, through the kingdom...In the meantime, all the friends of Coligny were assassinated throughout Paris; men, women, and children were promiscuously slaughtered and every street was strewn with expiring bodies. SOME PRIESTS, HOLDING UP A CRUCIFIX IN ONE HAND, AND A DAGGER IN THE OTHER, RAN TO THE CHIEFS OF THE MURDERERS, AND STRONGLY EXHORTED THEM TO SPARE NEITHER RELATIONS NOR FRIENDS...The king's palace was one of the chief scenes of the butchery; the king of Navarre had his lodgings in the Louvre, and all his domestics were Protestants. Many of these were killed in bed with their wives; others, running away naked, were pursued by the soldiers through the several rooms of the palace, even to the king's antechamber. The young wife of Henry of Navarre, awakened by the dreadful uproar, being afraid for her consort, and for her own life, seized with horror, and half dead, flew from her bed, in order to throw herself at the feet of the king her brother. But scarce had she opened her chamber door, when some of her Protestant domestics rushed in for refuge. The soldiers immediately followed, pursued them in the sight of the princess, and killed one who crept under her bed. Two others, being wounded with halberds, fell at the queen's feet, so that she was covered with blood..."

"...Very few of the Protestants escaped the fury of their enthusiastic persecutors. Among these was young La Force (afterward the famous Marshal de la Force) a child about ten years of age, whose deliverance was exceedingly remarkable. His father, his elder brother, and he himself were seized together by the Duke of Anjou's soldier[s]. These murderers flew at all three, and struck them at random, when they all fell, and lay one upon another. The youngest did not receive a single blow, but appearing as if he was dead, escaped the next day; and his life, thus wonderfully preserved, lasted four score and five years. Many of the wretched victims fled to the water side, and some swam over the Seine to the suburbs of St. Germaine. The king saw them from his window, which looked upon the river, and fired upon them with a carbine that had been loaded for that purpose by one of his pages; while the queen-mother, undisturbed and serene in the midst of slaughter, looking down from a balcony, encouraged the murderers and laughed at the dying groans of the slaughtered..."

"...THE MASSACRES ON ST. BARTHOLOMEW'S DAY ARE PAINTED IN THE ROYAL SALOON OF THE VATICAN AT ROME, WITH THE FOLLOWING INSCRIPTION: PONTIFEX, COLIGNY NECEM PROBAT, I.E., "THE POPE APPROVES OF COLIGNY'S DEATH..."  
[capitalization added] THIS HORRID BUTCHERY WAS NOT CONFINED MERELY TO THE CITY OF PARIS. THE LIKE ORDERS WERE ISSUED FROM COURT TO THE GOVERNORS OF ALL THE PROVINCES IN FRANCE; SO THAT, IN A WEEK'S TIME, ABOUT ONE HUNDRED THOUSAND PROTESTANTS WERE CUT TO PIECES IN DIFFERENT PARTS OF THE KINGDOM!

**TWO OR THREE GOVERNORS ONLY REFUSED TO OBEY THE KING'S ORDERS.** One of these, named Montmorrin, governor of Auvergne, wrote the king the following letter, which deserves to be transmitted to the latest posterity. "Sire: I have received an order, under your majesty's seal, to put to death all the Protestants in my province. I have too much respect for your majesty, not to believe the letter a forgery; but if (which God forbid) the order should be genuine, I have too much respect for your majesty to obey it..."

"...At Rome the horrid joy was so great, that they appointed a day of high festival, and a jubilee, with great indulgence to all who kept it and showed every expression of gladness they could devise! **AND THE MAN WHO FIRST CARRIED THE NEWS [OF THE HOLOCAUST AGAINST THE PROTESTANTS] RECEIVED 1,000 CROWNS OF THE CARDINAL OF LORRAINE FOR HIS UNGODLY MESSAGE. THE KING ALSO COMMANDED THE DAY TO BE KEPT WITH EVERY DEMONSTRATION OF JOY, CONCLUDING NOW THAT THE WHOLE RACE OF HUGUENOTS WAS EXTINCT [CAPITALIZATION ADDED]. MANY WHO GAVE GREAT SUMS OF MONEY FOR THEIR RANSOM WERE IMMEDIATELY AFTER SLAIN; AND SEVERAL TOWNS, WHICH WERE UNDER THE KING'S PROMISE OF PROTECTION AND SAFETY, WERE CUT OFF AS SOON AS THEY DELIVERED THEMSELVES UP, ON THOSE PROMISES, TO HIS GENERALS OR CAPTAINS...**"

"...At Bordeaux, at the instigation of a villainous monk, who used to urge the papists to slaughter in his sermons, two hundred and sixty-four were cruelly murdered; some of them senators. Another of the same pious fraternity produced a similar slaughter at Agendicum, in Maine, where the populace at the holy inquisitors' satanical suggestion, ran upon the Protestants, slew them, plundered their houses, and pulled down their church. The duke of Guise, entering into Blois, suffered his soldiers to fly upon the spoil, and slay or drown all the Protestants they could find. In this they spared neither age nor sex; defiling the women, and then murdering them; from whence he went to Mere, and committed the same outrages for many days together. Here they found a minster named Cassebonius, and threw him into the river. At Anjou, they slew Albiacus, a minister; and many women were defiled [raped] and murdered there; among whom were two sisters, abused before their father, whom the assassins bound to a wall to see them, and then slew them and him..."

"...The Protestants at Rochelle, who were such as had miraculously escaped the rage of hell, and fled there, seeing how ill they fared who submitted to those [un]holy devils, stood for their lives; and some other cities, encouraged thereby, did the like. Against Rochelle, the king sent almost the whole power of France, which besieged it seven months; though by their assaults, they did very little execution on the inhabitants, yet by famine, they destroyed eighteen thousand out of two and twenty. The dead, being too numerous for the living to bury, became food for vermin and carnivorous birds. Many took their coffins into the church yard, laid down in them, and breathed their last. Their diet had long been what the minds of those in plenty shudder at; even human flesh, entrails, dung, and the most loathsome things, became at last the only food of those champions for that truth and liberty, of which the world was not worthy. At every attack, the besiegers met with such an intrepid reception, that they left one hundred and thirty-two captains, with a proportionate number of men, dead in the field. The siege at last was broken up at the request of the duke of Anjou, the king's brother, who was

proclaimed king of Poland, and the king, being wearied out, easily complied, whereupon honorable conditions were granted them..." (274)

Likewise, John Foxe explained what happened to Protestants as a result of the Vatican's influence to have the Edict of Nantes revoked. "the Revocation of the Edict of Nantes...Protestants were expelled from all offices, trades, privileges, and employs; thereby depriving them of the means of getting their bread: and they proceeded to such excess in this brutality, that they would not suffer even the midwives to officiate, but compelled their women to submit themselves in the crisis of nature to their enemies, the brutal Catholics. Their children were taken from them to be educated by the Catholics, and at seven years of age, made to embrace popery. The reformed were prohibited from relieving their own sick or poor, from all private worship, and divine service was to be performed in the presence of a popish priest. To prevent the unfortunate victims from leaving the kingdom, all the passages on the frontiers were strictly guarded; yet, by the good hand of God, about 150,000 escaped their vigilance, and emigrated to different countries to relate the dismal narrative..."

"...All that has been related hitherto were only infringements on their established charter, the edict of Nantes. At length the diabolical revocation of their edict passed on the eighteenth of October, 1685, and was registered the twenty-second, contrary to all form of law. Instantly the dragoons were quartered upon the Protestants throughout the realm, and filled all France with the like news, that the king would no longer suffer any Huguenots in his kingdom, and therefore they must resolve to change their religion. Hereupon the intendants [administrative officials] in every parish (which were popish governors and spies set over the Protestants) assembled the reformed inhabitants, and told them they must, without delay, turn Catholics, either freely or by force. The Protestants replied, that they "were ready to sacrifice their lives and estates to the king, but their consciences being God's they could not so dispose of them." Instantly the troops seized the gates and avenues of the cities, and placing guards in all the passages, entered with sword in hand, crying, "Die, or be Catholic!" In short, they practiced every wickedness and horror they could devise to force them to change their religion..."

"...They hanged both men and women by their hair or their feet, and smoked them with hay until they were nearly dead; and if they still refused to sign a recantation, they hung them up again and repeated their barbarities, until, wearied out with torments without death, they forced many to yield to them. Others, they plucked off all the hair of their heads and beards with pincers. Others they threw on great fires, and pulled them out again, repeating it until they extorted a promise to recant. Some they stripped naked, and after offering them the most infamous insults, they stuck them with pins from head to foot, and lanced them with penknives; and sometimes with red-hot pincers they dragged them by the nose until they promised to turn. Sometimes they tied fathers and husbands, while they ravished their wives and daughters before their eyes. Multitudes they imprisoned in the most noisome dungeons, where they practiced all sorts of torments in secret. Their wives and children they shut up in monasteries..."

"...Such as endeavored to escape by flight were pursued in the woods, and hunted in the fields, and shot at like wild beasts; nor did any condition or quality screen them from the ferocity of these infernal dragoons: even the members of parliament and military officers,

though on actual service, were ordered to quit their posts, and repair directly to their houses to suffer the like storm. Such as complained to the king were sent to the Bastille, where they drank the same cup. **THE [ROMAN CATHOLIC] BISHOPS AND THE INTENDANTS MARCHED AT THE HEAD OF THE DRAGOONS, WITH A TROOP OF MISSIONARIES, MONKS, AND OTHER ECCLESIASTICS TO ANIMATE THE SOLDIERS TO AN EXECUTION SO AGREEABLE TO THEIR HOLY CHURCH, AND SO GLORIOUS TO THEIR DEMON GOD AND THEIR TYRANT KING.** [CAPITALIZATION ADDED] (275)

The massacre of the Waldensians in April of 1655 is one of the most tragic events in church history. Roman Catholic forces led by the Duke of Savoy carried out a notorious massacre of the Christian Waldensians in the Piedmont region of Italy. "On April 17, the Marquis of Pianezza appeared **WITH AN OVERWHELMING FORCE [SOUND FAMILIAR?]** of mixed Piedmontese, French, and Irish troops. They conducted a few skirmishes, then made nice with the Waldensian civic leaders and induced them to quartering their troops temporarily further to some expedient pretext. Alas! alas! These poor people were undone. **THEY HAD RECEIVED UNDER THEIR ROOF THE EXECUTIONERS OF THEMSELVES AND THEIR FAMILIES. [SOUND FAMILIAR?]** The first two days, the 22d and 23d of April, passed in peace, the soldiers sitting at the same table, sleeping under the same roof, and conversing freely with their destined victims..."

"...At last the blow fell like a thunderbolt. At four of the clock on the morning of the 24<sup>th</sup> April the signal was given from the Castle of La Torre. But who shall describe the scenes that followed? On the instant a thousand assassins began the work of death [i.e. mass murder]...Little children were torn from the arms of their mothers, and dashed against the rocks; or, more horrible still, they were held betwixt two soldiers, who, unmoved by their piteous cries and the sight of their quivering limbs, tore them up into two halves. Their bodies were then thrown on the highways and the fields. Sick persons and old people, men and women, **WERE BURNED ALIVE IN THEIR OWN HOUSES [SOUND FAMILIAR?];** some were hacked in pieces; some were bound up in the form of a ball, and precipitated over the rocks or rolled down the mountains...Some were slowly dismembered, and fire applied to their wounds to staunch the bleeding and prolong their sufferings; some were flayed alive; some roasted alive; others were disemboweled, some were horribly and shamefully mutilated..." (276)

Concerning the Roman Catholic holocaust of the Waldensians, it is believed that John Milton wrote, "Avenge O Lord thy slaughter'd Saints, whose bones Lie scatter'd on the Alpine mountains cold, Even them who kept thy truth so pure of old When all our Fathers worship't Stocks and Stones, Forget not: in thy book record their groanes Who were thy Sheep and in their antient Fold Slayn by the bloody Piemontese that roll'd Mother with Infant down the Rocks. Their moans The Vales redoubl'd to the Hills, and they to Heav'n. Their martyr'd blood and ashes sow O're all th' Italian fields where still doth sway The triple Tyrant: that from these may grow A hunder'd-fold, who having learnt thy way Early may fly [from] the Babylonian wo." (277)

In *BEHIND THE PURPLE CURTAIN* Dr. Walter Montano included a prayer written by Leonard Schoener, a believer in Jesus Christ, who was beheaded in Rottenberg, Wurttemberg on 14 January, 1528. As one of the hunted victims of the Vatican decreed Roman Catholic Inquisition he wrote, "We are scattered like sheep having no shepherd. We have been compelled to forsake house and home. We are as night ravens, which abide in the rocks. Our chambers are in holes

and crags...Not only men but likewise women and maidens have borne witness to the truth that Jesus Christ is the truth, the only way to eternal life. The world still rolls and rests not: it raves as if mad. THEY INVENT LIES AGAINST US. THEY CEASE NOT THEIR FIRES AND MURDERS. O Lord, how long wilt Thou be silent? How long wilt Thou not judge the blood of Thy saints? Let it come up before Thy throne. How precious in Thine eyes is the blood of Thy holy ones. Therefore have we comfort in all our need, a refuge in Thee alone, and in none besides; but neither comfort, nor rest, nor peace on this earth. But he who hopeth in Thee shall never be confounded. O Lord, there is no sorrow so great, that can separate us from Thee.” (278)

***“AND IN HER WAS FOUND THE BLOOD OF PROPHETS, AND OF SAINTS,  
AND OF ALL THAT WERE SLAIN UPON THE EARTH...”*** (Revelation 18:24 KJV)

***“...OF WHOM THE WORLD WAS NOT WORTHY...”*** (Hebrews 11:37-38 KJV)

**OUR PRECIOUS, COURAGEOUS BROTHERS AND SISTERS IN CHRIST WHO BECAME  
MARTYRS FOR CHRIST JESUS, WE LOVE YOU AND HONOR YOU.  
WE WILL NOT FORGET WHAT WAS DONE TO YOU.  
WE WILL REMEMBER!**



## CHAPTER XII: HERE WE STAND, WE CAN DO NO OTHER...

*“Jesus saith unto him, I am the way [singular], the truth, and the life:  
no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.”*

– Christ Jesus (John 14:6 KJV)

*“For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour; Who will have all men  
to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth. For there is one God,  
and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus;  
Who gave himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time.”*

– the apostle Paul (1 Timothy 2:3-6 KJV)

*“...by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth,...the stone...the head of the corner.  
Neither is there salvation in any other; for there is none other name  
under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.”*

– the apostle Peter (Acts 4:10-12 KJV)

In the same year that Vatican II was concluded, Avro Manhattan published his well researched book entitled *VATICAN IMPERIALISM IN THE TWENTIETH CENTURY*. Mr. Manhattan saw through the crafty, new Jesuit strategy introduced at Vatican II and the numerous Vatican “smoke screens” of the twentieth century. Manhattan wrote, “This warning is necessary. The Catholic Church has not changed at all. Furthermore, the Catholic Church will never change. She cannot change. For, if she did, she would no longer be the Catholic Church. WHAT HAS CHANGED ARE HER METHODS, OR, RATHER, HER TACTICS. It must never be forgotten that she is out to liquidate the Protestant Church, to absorb the Orthodox Church, and to convert to herself, and to herself alone, all the teeming millions of the other great world religions. Her final goal is no more nor less than that. BEING ENGAGED IN THE TOTAL SPIRITUAL CONQUEST OF THE WORLD, SHE HAS FORMULATED A GRAND STRATEGY DIRECTED AT ATTAINING THIS BY THE EMPLOYMENT OF POLICIES CONSONANT WITH SUCH AN AIM. The adoption of novel practices, therefore, is never inconsistent as long as these help her in her millenarian campaign...”

“...Pope Paul VI spoke very clearly on the matter. “Even before converting the world,” he said “nay, in order to convert it, we must meet the world and talk to it.” That is, SPEAK OF RE-UNION, OF UNITY, AND OF UNDERSTANDING OF THE CHRISTIAN AND NON-CHRISTIAN RELIGIONS... “although it would be vain to look for other principles of unity in place of the one established by Christ Himself.”<sup>18</sup> “CATHOLIC MEANS ALL-EMBRACING, SINCE ALL THINGS HUMAN ARE OUR CONCERN.”<sup>19</sup>...”

“...[AS “*THE GREAT WHORE*” OF REVELATION 17:1] THE CATHOLIC CHURCH IS ALL-EMBRACING FOR IT IS HER VERY NATURE AND HER MISSION TO EMBRACE AND TO ABSORB WITHIN HER BOSOM EVERYTHING AND EVERYONE . This means that she is bound,

and she is determined, to make everything and everyone CATHOLIC. Since that has always been, is, and will always be her set goal, it follows that she must, while pursuing such a consistent aim, ADAPT HERSELF to the terrain and to the times in which she has to battle...”

“...AS SHE IS BOTH A RELIGIOUS AND A POLITICAL INSTITUTION, IT FOLLOWS THAT SHE HAS TO ADJUST HERSELF IN HER DUAL ROLE TO HER CONTEMPORARIES. That is, to the ideologies, economic systems and political doctrines dominating each particular age.” (279)

We have been forewarned by numerous authors concerning the Vatican agenda. The aim of the Progressives is for occult global integration in schools, universities, seminaries, courts, denominations and governments. It is for global conquest by means of global unification. In *BEHIND THE PURPLE CURTAIN* Dr. Walter Montano quoted Dr. Charles Morrison who warned Bible-believing Christians in his time, “The Supreme Court decision...should open the eyes of all American minded citizens, and especially Protestant citizens, to the strategy of the Roman Catholic Church in its determination to secure a privileged position in the common life of the country...The Roman Church wants the state to provide for the complete support of its parochial [Catholic] schools with money from taxes levied on all citizens...The Protestant churches have themselves to blame...Few Protestant ministers have brought this issue to their people...They felt that it was such ‘a little thing’ to get excited about – first free textbooks, then free bus transportation for parochial [Catholic] schools at public expense. They were blind to the strategy of the Roman Church in using these apparently insignificant matters as the thin edge of the wedge which would ultimately crack open the Constitution...If Protestantism passively tolerates any compromise of the principle of the equality of all religious faiths before the American state, it seals its own destiny. It dooms itself to become, in the end, a minority sect existing on the margins of American life...” (280)

Likewise, Dr. Montano quoted Canon Melville who declared, “Make peace if you will with Romanism, receive it unto your Senate, shrine it in your churches, plant it in your hearts. But be certain as that there is a heaven above you, and a God over you that the popery thus honored and embraced is the very popery that was loathed and degraded by the holiest of your [Christian] fathers, [Romanism] the same haughtiness and intolerance [against biblical Christianity] which lorded it over kings, assumed the prerogative of deity, crushed human liberty, and slew the [true] saints of God.”<sup>12</sup> (281)

It must be clearly understood that the canons and decrees of the Roman Catholic church are not equal to the commands of Christ Jesus found in the Scriptures of truth – the Holy Bible (2 Timothy 3:16-17). Our Lord Jesus said to His followers, “*If ye love me, keep my commandments.*” Notice that Jesus said specifically “my commandments” (John 14:15). Where are Christ’s commands found? THEY ARE RECORDED IN THE NEW TESTAMENT – Matthew 7:24-29, John 8:31-32; 15:10-12; 17:6-8; 17:14-17; Acts 1:1-3; 1 John 2:3-4; 5:2-3. Jesus did not say, “If ye love me, keep my commandments and the traditions of the Roman Catholic church.” Jesus didn’t teach His *disciples* to pray to Mary.

Moreover, who died to pay the full penalty of our sins? Was it the pope who died to pay for the punishment of our sins? NO! Did the Roman Catholic church die on the cross to atone for all our sins? NOT! Did Mary die in our place to provide forgiveness for our sins? NO! The Scriptures declare the truth. The apostle Peter proclaimed, “*For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just [Jesus] for the unjust [sinners], that he might bring us to God, being put to*

*death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit:...*" (1 Peter 3:18) Likewise, in Romans 5:8 Paul declared, *"But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us."* Also, it is a fact that all people, priests, popes and preachers have sinned (Romans 3:10-23). Whereas, Jesus of Nazareth, the Son of God, never committed sin. Subsequently, Christ Jesus is the only sinless mediator between God the Father and sinful humanity to whom we can confess our sins (1 Timothy 2:5-7). **JESUS IS OUR ONLY, SINLESS HIGH PRIEST TO WHOM WE ENTRUST OUR CARES AND PETITIONS IN PRAYER** (Hebrews 7:24-28).

Therefore, as followers of Jesus, our supreme allegiance, love and devotion are first and foremost to our Lord Jesus above all other people (Matthew 10:37-39). And no person (priest, pope, mother or pastor) may take the place of Jesus in our lives. We do not seek a "substitute" for Jesus in our journey with God. It was Augustine (354-430 A.D.), a bishop in Hippo Regius, who proclaimed, *"Christ is not valued at all unless He is valued above all."* (282) Our eternal salvation is based totally on what Jesus has already done when He died to pay the full punishment of our sins only once forever (Hebrews 10:10-14). We are not doing religious works or paying money to the Roman Catholic church for "indulgences" in order to "merit" salvation. These works could never pay the debt we owe for salvation. In fact, Christ's death would have been unnecessary if we could pay for our sin debt by means of our own works or money. The prophet Isaiah declared, *"But we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags; and we all do fade as a leaf; and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away."* (Isaiah 64:6) In Romans 10:3-4 Paul said, *"For they being ignorant of God's righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves to the righteousness of God. For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth."*

**THERE IS GOOD NEWS FOR ALL ROMAN CATHOLICS: TRUE, BIBLICAL SALVATION IS NOT FOR SALE! SALVATION IS THE FREE GIFT OF GOD THROUGH PERSONAL FAITH IN CHRIST JESUS AND HIS FINISHED WORK ON CALVARY! FORGIVENESS OF SINS IS NOT FOR SALE! PURGATORY DOES NOT EXIST, NOR IS IT NECESSARY! INDULGENCES ARE NOT NEEDED! THE ONE TIME DEATH OF CHRIST JESUS FOR OUR SINS IN THE FIRST CENTURY IS MORE THAN SUFFICIENT EXPIATION FOR ALL OUR SINS (PAST, PRESENT AND FUTURE). JESUS ALREADY PAID OUR SIN DEBT IN FULL WHEN HE DIED ONCE FOR OUR SINS (Hebrews 10:10-14, 1 Peter 3:18). We believe, as the apostle John declared, *"And he [Jesus] is the propitiation [expiation] for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world."* (1 John 2:2) Because of Christ's finished sacrifice and mediation in our behalf in the presence of God the Father (Hebrews 7:25; 10:19-22), we may pass directly into the presence of our Father in Heaven in prayer in the name of Jesus and receive forgiveness and cleansing from all sin. (1 John 1:7-10) The apostle John proclaimed, *"...and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin."* (1 John 1:7) Likewise, John declared, *"If we confess our sins [to God in context], he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness."* (1 John 1:9)**

We are not "doing" for our salvation. We could never possibly "do" enough, pay enough or keep the sacraments enough to "merit" our salvation. Rather, our faith is in what our Lord Jesus has already "done" by His one, sinless, sacrificial death as the total basis of our eternal salvation (Romans 3:24-26; 5:1-2, Ephesians 2:8-9, Titus 3:5-7). **CHRIST JESUS IS OUR ETERNAL HOPE!** We are trusting fully in what Christ has already done by His death to forgive

and cleanse us of all our sins (Hebrews 1:3). God has promised, *“And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more. Now where remission [forgiveness] of these is, there is no more offering [sacrifice] for sin.”* (Hebrews 10:17-18) Consequently, the sacrifice of the Roman Catholic mass is unnecessary. There is no need for a “victim” or “hostia” to be re-sacrificed over and over again as is done in the Catholic mass. Jesus has already died for our sins *“...once for all.”* (Hebrews 10:10) There is absolutely nothing we can add to Christ’s one time, finished sacrifice for our sins. It is 100% sufficient to pay in full our sin debt.

We believe that God loves Roman Catholics (John 3:16, Romans 5:8). Likewise, we love Roman Catholics. At the same time, for many good reasons, we wholeheartedly reject Roman Catholicism. It is God’s desire that Roman Catholics, including Jesuits, should get saved and come to the knowledge of the truth from the Scriptures of truth (John 8:31-32, 1 Timothy 2:1-5). It is an action of Christian love to share the message of the biblical *gospel* with Catholics and win them from Roman Catholicism to Christ Jesus and Biblical Christianity (Mt. 7:12).

After Catholics get saved, they must be urged to follow Jesus according to the New Testament Scriptures in a New Testament *church* (John 17:6-18, Acts 2:40-42, Hebrews 10:25). In order to do this, they must depart from Roman Catholicism (Ephesians 5:11, 2 Corinthians 6:14-18, Revelation 18:4-5). Why? Because the Roman Catholic church is not a genuine Christian church. ROMAN CATHOLICISM IS MOST ACCURATELY DEFINED AS A SYNTHESIS OF THE PAGAN ROMAN RELIGIOUS PRIESTHOOD, RITES, CEREMONIES, TEACHINGS, SYMBOLS AND CUSTOMS WITH CHRISTIANITY. Moreover, as evidenced by her doctrines and actions, she is: 1) a false church 2) counterfeit Christianity 3) an unholy synthesis.

THE ROMAN “MOTHER” CHURCH IS A RELIGION OF ASSIMILATION AND SYNTHESIS (Revelation 17:1-6). Wherever it has spread, the Roman Catholic church assimilates the pagan and worldly rites, ceremonies, teachings, symbols and customs of the nations with Christian teachings and practices. The result is a blend of Christianity with paganism which is known as CHRISTO-PAGANISM. IT IS VERY DIFFERENT THAN FIRST CENTURY, NEW TESTAMENT CHRISTIANITY. THUS, ROMAN CATHOLICISM AND NEW TESTAMENT CHRISTIANITY ARE NOT COMPATIBLE.

One must choose to continue to believe the false teachings, canons and traditions of Roman Catholicism or choose to receive and follow the teachings of Jesus and His apostles as recorded in the New Testament (*“the faith once delivered to the saints”* – Jude 3). As Roman Catholic apologist Karl Keating noted, “Catholics are required to hold and believe all the declared doctrines of the Church.” (283) In the final analysis the Roman Catholic is faced with the decision to make a choice between these two faiths. Concerning the false, global, spiritual whore church of Revelation chapters 13, 17 and 18, our *LORD’s* instruction is clearly revealed in the Scriptures of truth. *“Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues. For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities.”* (Revelation 18:4-5)

After compiling much evidence in his book *THE TWO BABYLONS*, Alexander Hislop declared, “It has been known all along that Popery is baptized Paganism; but God is now making it manifest, that the Paganism which Rome has baptized is, in all its essential elements, *the very Paganism* which prevailed in the ancient literal Babylon, when Jehovah opened before Cyrus the two-leaved gates of brass, and cut in sunder the bars of iron...Rome

is in very deed the Babylon of the Apocalypse; that the essential character of her system, the grand objects of her worship, her festivals, her doctrine and discipline, her rites and ceremonies, her priesthood and their orders, have all been derived from ancient Babylon; and finally, that the Pope himself is the lineal representative of Belshazzar.” (284)

From her origin in the fourth century during the reign of the Emperor Constantine, the “Roman” Catholic church has practiced the “Hegelian dialectic” of “change” concerning the teachings and practices of Christianity and paganism. The Hegelian dialectic, as stated by Heinrich Moritz Chalybaeus, includes three stages of evolution: 1) There is a thesis (a teaching, concept, or theory). 2) There is a reaction to the thesis called an antithesis. 3) The tension created by the clash of the thesis and antithesis results in an effort to reconcile the differences. This compromise or solution is known as a synthesis. (285) It is very important to observe that THE NEW SYNTHESIS INVOLVES A CHANGE FROM THE THESIS.

When applied to Christian morality, doctrinal beliefs and practices in the *church*, the Hegelian principle is disastrous. Why? Because this is a satanic, evolutionary, false philosophy of the world that results in blending and compromise. It presupposes no thesis such as an eternal doctrinal truth or moral absolute (via special revelation from God) which cannot be changed. Thus, the Hegelian dialectic applied to Christianity undermines belief in *sound doctrine* and obedience to God’s Word - the Holy Bible (Jn. 10:35; 14:15-24; 17:6-17).

For example, in the teachings of the Scriptures we have God-breathed, eternal truth by means of special revelation (John 17:6-17, 2 Timothy 3:16-17, 2 Peter 1:19-21). We are instructed by Jesus to continue in His Word – the teachings of Christ recorded in the Scriptures of truth (John 8:31-32; 17:6-17). We do not need to reconcile biblical truth with the false teachings and philosophies of the world in order to win people to Christ Jesus. This blend creates theological relativism (2 Timothy 4:1-4).

Likewise, in the Scriptures we find moral absolutes - God’s commands. If we attempt to reconcile the *LORD’s* moral instructions with the disobedient practices and lifestyles of unbelievers, we create moral relativism. For genuine *Christians*, there is no compromise between obedience to God and disobedience to God. We have no desire to blend obedience with disobedience. The two concepts cannot be reconciled.

In contrast to the Roman Catholic model, our Lord Jesus and His first century apostles strongly refuted attempts to SYNTHESIZE OR ASSIMILATE pagan religious priesthood, rituals, teachings, symbols and customs with Christianity. This is made clear in the teachings of Christ and the apostles recorded in the New Testament (Acts 15:27-29; 21:25, Romans 16:17-19, 2 Corinthians 6:14-18; 11:1-15, Colossians 2:8-10, Ephesians 4:14-24; 5:11, 2 Peter 2:1-22, 1 John 4:1-6, 2 John 1-9, Revelation 2:6; 2:14-16).

Therefore, following the example of our Lord Jesus and his first-century apostles, we choose not to compromise or synthesize our biblical beliefs and Christian morality with man’s false philosophies in order to please those living in disobedience to God and His instructions recorded in the Holy Scriptures. (2 Peter 3:17-18). “*If any man love not the Lord Jesus Christ, let him be A-nath-e-ma Mar-an-a-tha.*” (1 Corinthians 16:22 KJV) Ω

\*The Roman Catholicism chart follows this page. It is based primarily on the writings of James McCarthy in *The GOSPEL ACCORDING TO ROME*, (Eugene, OR, HARVEST HOUSE PUBLISHERS, 1995). (286) Some editing has been done to strengthen the points.

## THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH TEACHES:

Numbers in parenthesis refer to the teachings from the *Catechism of the Catholic Church – 1994* which was officially approved by Pope John Paul II and the Roman Catholic bishops.

### *About salvation...*

1. Initial justification is by means of infant baptism (1262-1274).
2. Justification is infused righteousness by means of keeping the sacraments (1987-1995).
3. Infant baptism provides the new birth and forgiveness of sins - baptismal regeneration (1250-1267).
4. Salvation is by means of keeping the sacraments (sacerdotal salvation – 183, 1127-1129, 1815, 2002, 1434-1460).
5. Grace is merited by good works (2010, 2027).
6. Purgatory is necessary in order to atone for sin and cleanse the soul (1030-1031).
7. Venial sin does not result in eternal punishment (1855-1863).

## NEW TESTAMENT CHRISTIANITY TEACHES:

References in parenthesis are taken from the Holy Bible which is the ultimate standard of truth for all true Christians (Matthew 4:4, Luke 1:1-4, John 8:31-32; 10:35; 14:21; 17:6-17, 2 Timothy 3:15-17).

### *About salvation...*

1. Justification is by faith alone in Jesus Christ and in His one time, finished sacrificial death for our sins (Acts 13:38-39, Rom. 3:24-28; 5:1-9, Gal. 2:16; 3:26).
2. Justification is imputed righteousness. God imputes his own righteousness to us by means of the substitutionary atonement of Jesus Christ for our sins at the moment we are saved (John 5:24, Rom. 3:5; 10:1-17, Gal. 2-3, Eph. 1:13, 2 Cor. 5:21).
3. Infant baptism is not a means of salvation. In the New Testament, baptism was by immersion. It is a public testimony that should occur only after one has personally accepted God's gift of salvation (Acts 8:36-39; 16:14-15; 16:30-34).
4. Salvation is by grace through faith in Jesus Christ alone (Romans 5:9-11, Galatians 3:24-26, Ephesians 2:8-9, Titus 3).
5. Grace is a free gift of God (Romans 11:6, 1 Corinthians 1:4, James 4:6).
6. According to the Scriptures, Jesus made purification for all sins by one sacrifice at His death (Romans 5:9; 8:1, Hebrews 1:3; 10:10-14). Purgatory does not exist nor is it necessary. The ancient, eastern religious belief of purgatory was assimilated from the pagan Roman Mysteries.
7. Every sin is punishable by eternal death (Rom. 6:23, Jam. 2:10, Rev. 21:8).

8. “Serious sins” must be confessed to a priest at least once a year (1456-1457).

9. The Roman Catholic bishops and priests have the power to forgive all sins (1442, 1448, 1461).

10. No one can be certain that he will attain to eternal life (1036, 2005).

11. Eternal life is a merited reward (1821, 2010)

12. The Roman Catholic church is necessary for salvation (846).

### ***About the mass...***

13. The sacrificial work of redemption is continually carried out through the sacrifice of the mass (1364, 1405, 1846). The mass is a central element in the Roman Catholic faith.

14. Each sacrifice of the mass appeases God’s wrath against sin (1371, 1414).

15. The bread and wine become the real body and blood of Jesus Christ – the doctrine of transubstantiation (1373-1377).

16. The consecrated bread and wine are heavenly food which help one to attain to eternal life (1392, 1405-1419).

8. Sin must be confessed directly to God (Ezra 10:11, Psalm 32:5; 51:1-10, Daniel 9:16-20, Luke 18:13, 1 John 1:9)

9. No one can forgive sins except God alone (Mark 2:5-7, Luke 5:21).

10. The true *Christian* is 100% certain that he or she has eternal life on the basis of the promises of the Holy Bible (John 3:16-36; 5:24; 10:27-29, Phil. 3:20-21, 1 John 5:11-13).

11. Eternal life is the free gift of God (Romans 3:15-21; 6:23, Ephesians 2:8-9).

12. There is salvation in no one but Jesus Christ (John 14:6, Acts 4:12, 1 Tim. 2:5).

### ***About the mass...***

13. According to the Scriptures, the sacrificial work of redemption was forever finished with Christ’s “*one sacrifice for sins for ever*” (Eph. 1:7, Heb. 1:3; 10:10-14). The word mass is not found in the Bible nor does it have a biblical origin. The sacrifice of the mass is a continuation of the essential elements of a pagan religious rite and ceremony that originated in ancient Babylon (See Ex. 20:4-5, 2 Chron. 34:4, Jeremiah 7:8-20; 44:19). It was assimilated by means of the Roman Mysteries.

14. The “*one sacrifice for sins for ever*” by Jesus Christ fully appeased God’s wrath against sins (Rom. 5:9, Heb. 10:10-18).

15. The bread and new wine (grape juice) are only symbols of the body and blood of Jesus (1 Cor. 11:23-25 “*in remembrance of me*”). In fact, if transubstantiation were true, it would involve drinking human blood. But God prohibited the drinking of blood which is the abhorrent practice of pagan religions (See Lev. 17:10-14, Acts 15:25-29).

16. The bread and new wine (grape juice) are only symbols which help us remember (a memorial) the completed sacrifice of Jesus Christ (Luke 22:19, 1 Cor. 11:23).

17. God desires that the consecrated bread and wine be worshipped as divine (1378-1381).

### ***About authority in the church...***

18. Peter was the head of the apostles. The Catholic bishops are the successors of the apostles (552, 765, 861-862, 880, 938).

19. The pope, as the bishop of Rome, is the successor of Peter. The Roman Catholic bishops, with the pope as their head, rule the universal church (882-883, 894-896, 936).

20. God has entrusted revelation to the Roman Catholic bishops (81-86).

21. The magisterium is the authoritative teacher of the church (85-87).

22. The magisterium is the infallible interpreter of Scriptures (890-891, 2043-2035).

23. The magisterium alone has the ability and the right to interpret the Scriptures (890-891, 2034-2035).

24. The Holy Bible and Catholic traditions together are the Word of God (81, 85, 97, 182).

17. The *LORD* forbids the worship of any object, even those intended to represent Him (Ex. 20:4-5, Deut. 5:8-9, Is. 42:8). It is a form of idolatry. In both the ancient Roman and Egyptian Mysteries, a round cake was consecrated by a priest during the mass. At consecration, the Egyptians believed the cake became the flesh of Osiris, the sun divinity. The cake was received and eaten as the flesh of deity in the ritual.

### ***About authority in the church...***

18. Jesus Christ was the *head* of the apostles (John 13:13). The apostles had no direct successors. For to succeed them, one needed to be a witness of Christ's resurrection (Acts 1:21-22).

19. Jesus Christ is the one true *head* of *the church*. He alone rules the church (Eph. 5:23-24, Col. 1:18-2:10). Jesus Christ is the only true potentate according to I Tim. 6:15.

20. God has entrusted revelation to the saints (Jude 3). The *saints* refer to all true believers in Jesus Christ (1 Cor. 1:2, Col. 4:21-22, 1 Thes. 1:10).

21. The *Holy Spirit* is the authoritative teacher of *the church* (John 14:26; 16:13, 1 John 2:27).

22. Scripture is the only infallible interpreter of Scripture (Luke 8:9-18, John 2:21, Acts 2:16-21; 17:11, Rev. 17:18).

23. Every believer, aided by the *Holy Spirit*, has the ability and the right to interpret the Scriptures (John 8:31-32; 17:6-8, 1 Jn. 2:27).

24. The Holy Bible is the Word of God (John 10:35; 17:6-8, 17, Acts 1:16, 1 Thes. 2:13, 2 Tim. 3:16-17, 2 Pet. 1:19-21).



25. Catholic tradition and the church's interpretations of the Bible are the test of truth (80-82).

### ***About Mary...***

26. Mary is the co-redeemer, for she participated with Jesus Christ in the act of redemption (618, 964, 968-970).

27. Mary is the co-mediator to whom we can entrust all our cares and petitions (968-970, 2677).

28. Mary was preserved from all stain of original sin from the first instant of her conception-doctrine of immaculate conception (490-492)

29. Mary lived a sinless life (411, 493).

30. Mary was a virgin, before, during and after the birth of Christ (496-511).

31. At the end of her life, Mary was assumed body and soul into heaven-doctrine of the assumption (966, 974).

25. The Holy Bible is the ultimate test of truth (Mark. 7:7-13, John. 17:17, 2 Timothy 3:16-17).

### ***About Mary...***

26. Jesus Christ alone is the Redeemer. Jesus Christ alone suffered and died to pay the penalty of our sins (Gal. 3:13, Eph. 1:7, 1 Pet. 3:18).

27. Jesus is the only true mediator between God and mankind (1 Tim. 2:5). We can entrust all our cares and petitions to Him (Jn. 14:13-14, Heb. 4:14-16; 7:25, 1 Pet. 5:7).

28. Mary, a descendant of Adam, was born a sinner (Ps. 51:5, Rom. 3:23; 5:12). The doctrines of "the Holy Virgin" and of "the immaculate conception" were assimilated from the ancient Greek Mysteries.

Proserpine was believed to be the wife of Pluto and the daughter of Ceres. She was worshipped as "the Holy Virgin." The pagan Greeks believed that Proserpine was without actual sin and had an "immaculate conception."

29. Mary was a sinner who confessed her need of the Savior and salvation. See "*God my Saviour*" in Luke 1:47 and "*his mercy*" in Luke 1:50. God alone is without sin (Revelation 15:4).

30. Mary was a virgin only until the birth of Jesus Christ (Matt. 1:25). Later, Mary had other children (See Matt. 13:55-56, Mark 3:31 and Luke 8:19-21).

31. At her death, Mary's body returned to the dust. Her spirit returned to God (Gen. 3:19, Eccl. 12:7, John 5:28-29).

## Did you know that you can be 100% certain in this life that when you die you will have eternal life in Heaven?

In 1 John 5:13, the apostle John wrote, *"These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; **that ye may know that ye have eternal life**, and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of God."*



**How can you be saved (born again) and know it?**

### 1. Recognize that you are a sinner and guilty as charged before God.

Romans 3:23 declares, *"For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God;"*

You may have sinned more or less than others. However, it only takes one sin to separate you from God for all eternity (Romans 6:23, James 2:10).

### 2. Repent and believe the gospel.

In Mark 1:15 Jesus said, *"The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe the gospel."*

To **repent** means changing your mind about your sins and need of salvation. It is turning from your sins to God (Luke 18:13; 19:8-10, Acts 26:20).

To **believe** in Jesus Christ means to put your full trust in Him and His sinless, one time, eternal sacrifice on the cross for your salvation.

The **gospel** is defined in 1 Corinthians 15:3-4: *"...Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures; And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures:"* Therefore, **"the gospel"** message is that Christ Jesus died to pay the penalty of your sins, was buried and rose again from the dead for your salvation.

### 3. Call on the name of the Lord Jesus in prayer and personally receive Him as your Lord and Savior.

*"For whosoever shall **call** upon the name of the Lord (Jesus—10:9) **shall be saved.**"* Romans 10:13

*"But as many as **received** him (Christ Jesus), to them gave he the power to become the sons of God, even to them that **believe** on his name:"* (John 1:12)

### 4. Confess Jesus before others.

*"That if thou shalt **confess** with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou **shalt be saved.**"* (Romans 10:9)

*"Whosoever therefore shall **confess** me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven. But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven."* (Matthew 10:32-33)

**God loves you so much that He sent His Son Jesus from Heaven so that you might be "saved" from your sins (John 3:16-18). By faith, you can make the eternal decision to be saved now. If you believe with all your heart that Jesus is the Son of God and want to be saved, pray this prayer of faith out loud:**

***Dear Heavenly Father, I come to you in the name of Jesus. I believe in my heart that Jesus Christ died to pay the penalty for my sins, was buried and rose again from the dead for me. I repent of my sins. Lord Jesus, please forgive my sins and come live in my heart forever. Please save my soul and make me a child of God by your Holy Spirit. Thank you my Lord for the gift of salvation. Amen.***

Write the date that you made this salvation decision in your Bible. Please let us know if you have personally received Jesus Christ as your Savior and Lord today so that we may rejoice with you. Confess Jesus before others. Be baptized by immersion, worship, attend and serve with other Christians in a church where the Bible is the final authority. For personal assurance that you are now a citizen of Heaven by faith in JESUS read John 14:1-6, Philippians 3:20-21, 1 Peter 1:3-5 and Revelation 22:17.

## Appendix A

### A Biblical Evaluation of **ENCYCLICAL LETTER *FRATELLI TUTTI***

by Nolan McFadden

#### A

The words *Fratelli Tutti* are Italian meaning “All Brothers.” **ENCYCLICAL LETTER *FRATELLI TUTTI*** was signed by Jesuit Pope Francis “on 3 October, 2020 in Assisi in the eponymous basilica. After celebrating Mass in front of the said tomb [7] Francis put the text of the encyclical “on the altar under the tomb of St. Francis and signed it.” [8] This signature marked the first time a papal encyclical was signed outside of Rome.” (1) ***FRATELLI TUTTI*** was the third encyclical signed by Jesuit Pope Francis during his papacy. The subject was ***ON THE FRATERNITY AND SOCIAL FRIENDSHIP.***

***FRATELLI TUTTI*** advances “a new world” [order] synthesis which includes: 1) “a global authority” (i.e., global government) (105., 172.), 2) global “integration” (10.-11., 170., 217.), 3) “the global community” (32., 154., 173., 175., 179., 257., 260.), 4) global “solidarity” (126., 146., 169., 205.), 5) “the global common good” (105., 127., 172., 174.), 6) Humanism (168., 276.), 7) Global Socialism / Progressivism (29., 116., 118.-126., 141.), 8) anti-capitalism (22., 285.), 9) “the subordination of all private property to the universal destination of the earth’s goods, and thus the right of all to their use” thereby reducing private property to “a secondary natural right” (120., 123.), 10) “social justice” (164.), 11) “the abolition of the death penalty” (268., 269., 270.), 12) religious and political Universalism advocated in *Lucifer*-illuminated Freemasonry (8., 9., 125., 180., 271., 277., 279., 286.), 13) a world “WITHOUT BORDERS” (3., 124. ) and 14) the “universal fraternity” doctrine of *Lucifer*-illuminated Freemasonry (4., 8., 9., 110., 125., 173., 176., 180., 271., 276., 277., 285., 286.).

On the other hand, this encyclical condemns: 1) “the prevailing individualism” (12., 42., 105., 163., 166., 182., 275.), 2) “fundamentalist intolerance” (191.), 3) “fundamentalist violence” (284.), 4) “unrestrained profit” [i.e., capitalism] (285.), 5) “myopic, extremist, resentful and aggressive nationalism” (11.), 6) “division” (31., 285.), 7) “racism” (20., 27., 41.) and 8) “terrorism” (283., 284., 285.) The authors imply that “deplorable” “terrorism” is caused by “fundamentalist intolerance” and “fundamentalist violence.” (283., 284., 285.). It appears that the globalist ideology of “universal fraternity” is inclusive of all people except “fundamentalists” and all others who reject it. Subsequently, Jesuit Pope Francis recently referred to Catholics who disagree with the false teachings presented in ***FRATELLI TUTTI*** as “fundamentalist” Catholics, thereby condemning them, along with other people labeled “fundamentalists” by the leftist Vatican. But the concerns of observers are valid.

Rather than expressing Roman Catholic beliefs, ***FRATELLI TUTTI*** looks more like a letter written by a team of illuminated Freemasons (i.e., “illuminated” by the fallen angel *Lucifer* according to *Morals and Dogma* by A. Pike). For example, just before 103. We read the words “Liberty, equality and fraternity.” This is the motto of the Freemason organization Grande Oriente de France and was used by radical, anti-Christian Freemasons (including the Jacobins) during the Reign of Terror and “de-Christianization” of France in the French Revolution. (2) Keep in mind that during this State-ordered “Terror[ism]” in France, following the “Law of 22 Prairial,” many thousands of people were executed on the basis of mere rumor or accusation of being a political “enemy” of the revolutionary government. According to this law, “For a citizen to become suspect it is sufficient that rumor accuses him.” It likewise mandated, “Every

citizen is empowered to seize conspirators and counterrevolutionaries and bring them before the [revolutionary] magistrate.” This kangaroo court known as the “Revolutionary Tribunal” called no witnesses and allowed no defense counsel to the accused. Mere rumor or accusation was grounds for execution. (3) This is known as *the unrighteous rule of law*.

“The Grand Orient of Italy wrote in its official magazine *Erasmus* to praise the encyclical, saying the “idea of universal brotherhood as a bond that unites all human beings, regardless of their faith, ideology, color, skin, social background, language, culture and nation” expressed in it are “close to the ideals that have been the very foundations of Freemasonry from the very beginning.” (4) Likewise, El Oriente, the Grand Lodge of Spain praised the encyclical saying, “In Fratelli Tutti, the Pope embraces Universal Fraternity, the great principle of modern Masonry...” (5) Roman Catholic Archbishop Viganò referred to *FRATELLI TUTTI* as an “...ideological manifesto that is in the service of the New World Order.” (6) In this encyclical there are numerous Bible texts, including Gen. 11:1-9, which are misinterpreted in order to support the new ideology. Also, the biblical words “*love*,” “*peace*” and “*justice*” are distorted to advance “social[ist] love,” “social[ist] peace” and “social[ist] justice.”

The “new synthesis” presented in *FRATELLI TUTTI* is the prostitution of “ecumenical Christianity” (under the leadership of the Vatican) to *Lucifer*-illuminated Freemasonry, Islam and International Socialism. The global unification of the world’s religions in a single one-world, apostate, false religion / fraternity is prophetically foretold in the Holy Bible. It will eventually be led by the second “*beast*” of Revelation 13:11-18. The second “*beast*” is also known as *the false prophet* who will help in the *antichrist*’s rise to power over a “world authority” (i.e., world government) of the last days (Dan. 2:40-43; 7:19-25; 11:36-39, 2 Th. 2:1-12, Rev. 13:7-18; 16:13). In Revelation 17:5 this one-world, “universal fraternity” of the last days is referred to as “...*MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH*.” (KJV) In Revelation chapter 17 she is called “*the great whore*” and “*THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS*” which seduces the leaders of the world to commit spiritual “*fornication*” with her (Rev. 17:1-7). The evil, apostate ideology, spirituality and works of this religious and political “*BABYLON*” are clearly described in Revelation chapters 17-18.

How do we know that this prophetically foretold religious and political *BABYLON* is presently emerging? In biblical prophecies it is accompanied by the following key elements: 1) The rise of anti-*Christian* sentiment and persecution of genuine “*Christians*” throughout the world (Mt. 24:9-12) 2) Apostasy involving many professing “*Christians*” departing from both Christian beliefs (“*sound doctrine*”) and Christian morality (2 Th. 2:1-3, 1 Tim. 4:1-5, 2 Tim. 4:1-4) 3) Global unification of the leaders of nations and false religions (Rev. 13:7; 16:13-14) 4) The creation and empowerment of a single world government (or “a world authority”) in which the global leader known as *the antichrist* (also called “*the beast*”) will rise to power in the last days (Dan. 2:40-43; 7:19-25; 11:36-39, Rev. 13:7).

Moreover, in *FRATELLI TUTTI* we clearly observe the esoteric, religious and political Universalism taught in Freemasonry. In 180. we read, “Recognizing that all people are our brothers and sisters,...it seeks the common good.” In 183. this “Charity, with its impulse to universality, is capable of building a new world [order].” Referring to all religions in 279., the encyclical reads, “...as children of the one God, we are all brothers and sisters.”

What is esoteric, religious Universalism? “1...The belief that all humankind will eventually be saved...Universalism, a product of the 18<sup>th</sup> century Enlightenment, holds that all living beings will attain complete salvation.” (7) This view regards people of all religions (including

Muslims, Jews, Hindus, Buddhists, Freemasons, New Agers, etc.) as our spiritual “brothers and sisters.” Universalism is based on the philosophical belief that “...all religions are equally worthy...” as stated by French philosopher Jean-Jacques Rousseau (1712-1778). Rousseau also advocated: 1) Democratic pantheistic Deism 2) Political Collectivism (collective will of the people – an early form of Socialism / Communism) 3) Innate perfectibility of humanity (8) Of Rousseau’s “totalitarian thesis”, J. S. Maloy wrote, “...the twentieth century added Nazism and Stalinism to Jacobinism on the list of horrors for which Rousseau could be blamed...” (9)

What is esoteric, political Universalism? “2. A political movement that proposes the unity of all people or states and the elimination of obstacles that prevent their full communication and relationship.” (10) Political Universalism includes: 1) universal brotherhood 2) universal government 3) universal laws 4) universal equality 5) universal (controlled) healthcare 6) universal spirituality 7) universal liberty (right to sin) (Note: This is very different from Christian *liberty* taught in the New Testament.) 8) universal religion 9) universal morality 10) universal depopulation (11) As a political movement Universalism advocates global “integration” (i.e., Globalism or Internationalism): one-world government (i.e., “New World Order” – H. G. Wells), world citizenship, global laws (i.e., U.N. Agenda 21 and U.N. Agenda 2030), global environmentalism, global solidarity, global disarmament, global economy, global banking, global education, global security, etc. The founding of the United Nations in October of 1945 was the political actualization of esoteric Universalism. See <http://www.freemasonryrywatch.org>. (12)

As Biblical *Christians*, what is our response to the concept of spirituality taught in esoteric Universalism? We believe that God loves all people and wants them to be “*saved*” and come to “*the knowledge of the truth*” in the Scriptures of truth – the Holy Bible (Jn. 3:16-18, Rom. 5:8; 10:9-13, 2 Pet. 3:9, Rev. 22:17). Yet, as clearly revealed in the New Testament Scriptures, there are two completely different spiritual realms (Lk. 11:18, Acts 26:18). These are: 1) the eternal kingdom of *Jehovah* - the (singular) *LORD God* of Israel (Dan. 2:44; 7:27, Zech. 14:1-9, Mt. 6:10; 6:33, Lk. 1:31-33; 13:28; 14:15, Jn. 3:3-5; 18:36, Col. 1:13). 2) the temporary kingdom of “*the god of this world*” – “*Satan*” (or “*Lucifer*”, called the light-bearer by “illuminated” Masons) See Is. 14:12-20, Mk. 3:23-26, Lk. 11:18 and 2 Co. 4:3-4.

There are two different spiritual families on the earth (Jn. 8:41-47, 1 Jn. 3:10). They are: 1) the saved 2) the unsaved Only those who are born again of the *Holy Spirit* by personal faith in our Lord Jesus Christ are in the *LORD’s* eternal family (Jn. 1:12-13; 3:3-7; 5:24, 1 Jn. 3:7-10). Christ Jesus and His first century apostles clearly taught that those who reject our Lord and His *gospel* message will not be saved. The apostle John wrote, “*He that believeth on the Son [Jesus] hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.*” (Jn. 3:36). Without genuine repentance and personal faith in Jesus and His *gospel* message, the unsaved will spend eternity in “*the lake of fire.*” Personal faith in Christ Jesus and His *gospel* message of salvation is the only, true path to our Father in Heaven (Jn. 14:1-6). Our Lord Jesus proclaimed, “*I am the way [singular], the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.*” (Jn. 14:6) The apostle Paul declared, “*For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.*” (Romans 1:16) See also Jn. 3:13-36; 5:24; 10:1-10; 11:25-27; Acts 4:12, Ro. 3:22-24; 5:1, 1 Co. 6:9-11, Gal. 5:16-21, 1 Ti. 2:3-6 and Heb. 7:25.

What is our response to the concept of esoteric, political Universalism also known as global

integration (i.e., Globalism, Internationalism)? As authentic *Christians*, we worship and serve only one Lord, one Master, one King of kings – Christ Jesus who will establish His millennial *kingdom* in Jerusalem at His personal, visible, literal second *coming* (Ps. 2:1-12, Is. 9:6-7, Mic. 5:2, Zech. 14:1-9, Mt. 2:1-6; 23:8-10, Lk. 1:31-33, 1 Tim. 6:14-15, Rev. 19-20). We are not seeking to help create a man-made millennium on earth or a “world civilization” with a “new humanity.”

Our Lord Jesus does not call true *Christians* to be citizens of a one-world government system which will eventually be led by the global leader known as the *antichrist* (Dan. 7:23-24, 1 Jn. 2:18, Rev. 13-14). In fact, believers *in Christ Jesus* are commanded to not be “*unequally yoked together with unbelievers*” in 2 Co. 6:14-18. In like manner, we are warned to separate ourselves from the global “*MYSTERY BABYLON*” of the last days described in Revelation chapters 17-18. The apostle John wrote, “*And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues. For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities.*” (Revelation 18:4-5)

As genuine *Christians*, we are already regarded as citizens of Heaven through faith in Jesus Christ (Phil. 3:20-21, 1 Pet. 1:3-4). Moreover, we are also citizens of our nation-states. In the Scriptures, nations are regarded as valid governments (Acts 2:5-11, Rev. 5:9). Additionally, national boundaries are considered valid boundaries by our *LORD* in Joel 3:2 and Acts 17:26. Likewise, in the Holy Bible the *LORD God* of Israel affirms the value, dignity and rights of the individual and the right of individuals and families to own and control private property (Josh. 13-21, 1 Ki. 21:1-16, Mt. 20:1-16, Acts 5:1-4). For further study see the article *A Biblical Evaluation of Universalism* at: Institute of Biblical Discipleship.com.

Daniel said, “...but the wise shall understand.” (Daniel 12:10)

Ω

© 2021 Nolan McFadden Copies permitted

#### Endnotes:

1. [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fratelli\\_tutti](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fratelli_tutti)
2. [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Liberté\\_égalité\\_fraternité](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Liberté_égalité_fraternité)
3. [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Law\\_of\\_22\\_Prairial](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Law_of_22_Prairial)
4. [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fratelli\\_tutti](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fratelli_tutti)
5. [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fratelli\\_tutti](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fratelli_tutti)
6. <https://www.lifesitenews.com/news/vigano-on-popes-encyclical-a-manifesto-in-the-service-of-the-new-world-order>
7. <https://en.oxforddictionaries.com/definition/universalism>
8. Will and Ariel Durant, *The Story of Civilization Volume X, Rousseau and Revolution*, (New York, New York, Simon & Schuster, 1967), pp. 213-214, 883-891
9. J. S. Maloy, “*The Very Order of Things: Rousseau’s Tutorial Republicanism*,” (2005) *Polity* 37:235-261, [www.journals.uchicago.edu/doi/10.1057/palgrave.polity.2300011](http://www.journals.uchicago.edu/doi/10.1057/palgrave.polity.2300011)
10. <https://en.oxforddictionaries.com/definicion/universalismo> (translated from Spanish to English for reader)
11. Nesta H. Webster, *WORLD REVOLUTION THE PLOT AGAINST CIVILIZATION*, (LONDON, CONSTABLE & COMPANY, 1921), pp. 22-23
12. <http://www.freemasonrywatch.org>

## Global Socialism

vs.

## Biblical Christianity

1. Supreme authority: the State in *absolute control*
2. Supreme law: Luciferian, masonic "*rule of law*" *Morals and Dogma* by A. Pike, 1°, "*jus et norma*," Unrighteous rule of law is supported and practiced.
3. Movement Objective: Creation of a totalitarian, socialist New Global Order of government (i.e. "*the World State*" - H. G. Wells) under the guise of "Sustainable Development Goals (SDG's)." This deceptive, Devil-inspired, Communist planned New World Order includes at least seven elements:
  - 1) Global planned economy and development via Sustainable Development (for world citizens).
  - 2) UN global "*control*" over all human activity See UN Agenda 21 and Agenda 2030. (totalitarianism)
  - 3) Creation of a global classless society free of all "*inequalities*." Universal values, beliefs, attitudes.
  - 4) Creation of a global cashless society (i.e. "*control*" of all financial transactions)
  - 5) Government redistribution of wealth (i.e. theft)
  - 6) Global education in *amorality* (i.e. no morality)
  - 7) Global "*population control*" (i.e. Neo-Malthusianism – human population reduction.) It is a Global Coalition of Evil (GCE). Socialist and/or Globalist organizations advancing this leftist, global agenda include: the United Nations, Open Society Foundation, Socialist International, Democratic Socialists of America, Sierra Club, Greenhouse Crisis Foundation, Our Revolution, Club of Rome, The World Government Summit, Bilderberger Group, Council on Foreign Relations, Trilateral Commission, Fabian Society, Rockefeller Foundation, Ford Foundation, Gates Foundation, Obama Foundation, Organizing for Action, Southern Poverty Law Center, World Council of Churches and other captives of *the black arts*, etc.
4. Movement is rooted in the ideology of Marxism. Socialism is one step in development of Marxism.
5. Movement is anti-Christ, anti-Bible, anti-God's authority (i.e. *spirit of antichrist*).
6. Movement is in active rebellion against the *LORD's* absolute moral commands found in the Holy Bible (i.e. Luciferianism)
7. Movement proposes nations with open borders. National law is subject to global law.
8. Movement disregards the private property rights of individuals and families.
9. Movement advocates a scientifically planned society controlled by a technocratic *elite*.
10. Movement aims for government *control* of all health care. Sustainable medicine, rationing, "Duty to Die." All human bodies belong to the State.
11. Aims for government *control* of all education of children (i.e. indoctrination in Progressivism).
12. Movement supports social[ist] justice, international laws, World Court, etc.
13. Movement affirms *normalization* of LGBTQ and all other forms of sexual perversion.
14. Movement aims to vilify and criminalize Biblical Christianity, Bible believers and Christian morality.

1. Supreme authority: King Jesus (1 Tim. 6:15)
2. Supreme law: God's eternal, moral laws revealed in the Holy Bible (such as the Ten Commandments) Righteous rule of law is supported and practiced.
3. Faith objective: Great commission of Christ Biblical Christianity teaches the establishment of the global reign of King Jesus Christ on earth from Jerusalem at His literal, visible, personal second *coming* (Dan. 2:44, Mic. 5:2, Zech. 14:9-17, Rev. 19:1-21, 20:1-10). The Holy Bible advocates:
  - 1) Freedom of each nation-state to determine its economy, foreign trade, etc. (1 Kin. 5:1-18)
  - 2) Private ownership and control of property and the means of production (1 Kin. 21:1-7, Josh. 13-21, Mt. 6:21; 7:24-27; 20:1-8, Lk. 13:6-7, Acts 5:3-4).
  - 3) Freedom to work and prosper in nation-states. Teaches biblical values, beliefs, attitudes.
  - 4) Freedom in banking and financial transactions. Rejection of Antichrist's global rule (Rev. 13-15)
  - 5) Freedom to give or not to give (Acts 5:3-4)
  - 6) Practice of Christian morality (Jn. 14:15-23)
  - 7) Affirms the sanctity and value of all human life including unborn children and the elderly. Jehovah commands, "*Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it:...*" (Gen. 1:28) (i.e. Have children.) This is the opposite of the false doctrine of "sustainable development." Our *LORD* commands *Christians* to separate from satanic/luciferian, *antichrist* doctrines, rituals and organizations (i.e. secret societies, etc.) See Mt. 24:4-5, Acts 15:20, 2 Co. 6:14-18, Eph. 5:11, 1 Jn. 4:1-6 and Rev. 18:1-6. Paul warns, "*Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.*" (Col. 2:8)
4. Beliefs are rooted in the teachings of Jesus Christ and His apostles ("*the faith*" – Jude 3).
5. Authentic Christianity is pro-Christ, pro-Bible and affirms submission to God's authority.
6. Real *Christians* obey Christ Jesus and His righteous rule as revealed in His absolute moral commands of the Holy Bible (Mt. 28:20, Jn. 14:15).
7. The nation-state is recognized as a valid human government with boundaries (Acts 17:26).
8. True Christianity defends private property rights of individuals and families (Jos. 13, Mt. 20:8, Ac. 5).
9. It validates private control of the means of production (1 Kin. 21:1-7, Mt. 20:1-8, Acts 5:4)
10. Defends health care freedom. Natural products and medicines recommended. Our bodies belong to our *LORD*, not to the State (1 Co. 3:16; 6:13-20).
11. It teaches parental control of all education of children (Deut. 6-7, Prov. 1-7, 2 Tim. 3:14-17).
12. It supports God's righteous justice advanced in the courts of nation-states (Is. 10:1-3, Rev. 16:7).
13. God commands all people to repent of these sins of fornication (Acts 17:30-31, 1 Thes. 4:1-7).
14. True *Christians* choose to obey God and His biblical moral laws (Acts 4:18-20, Jn. 14:15-23)

## Appendix B

# A Biblical Evaluation of ENCYCLICAL LETTER LAUDATO SI' ON CARE FOR OUR COMMON HOME Prepared by Pope Francis, Cardinal Peter Turkson (of the Pontifical Council for Justice and Peace), his team and other editors

by Nolan McFadden

## A

The encyclical letter LAUDATO SI' was given at Saint Peters on 24 May, 2015. (1) In English the words LAUDATO SI' are translated "Praise be to you." Concerning this title in the Wikipedia article entitled *Laudato si'* we read, "The title of the social encyclical is from an Umbrian phrase <sup>[4]</sup> from Francis of Assisi's 13th-century "**Canticle of the Sun**" (also called the Canticle of the Creatures), a poem and prayer in which God is praised for the creation of the different creatures and aspects of the Earth." (2) This was the second encyclical given during the papacy of Jesuit Pope Francis.

LAUDATO SI' is addressed to "every person living on this planet" (3.) The purpose of the encyclical is a global call to: 1) a new "ecological spirituality" (216.); 2) "a global ecological conversion" (5., 216.); 3) "a communitarian salvation" (149.) 4) "repent of the ways we have harmed the planet" [i.e., "Mother Earth, who sustains and governs us"] (1.-2., 8.); 5) "accept the world as a sacrament of communion" (9.); 6) experience "cosmic love" (236.); 7) achieve "universal reconciliation with every creature" or "with creation" (66., 218.); 8) "discover God in all things" (233.); 9) "a new and universal [global] solidarity between all peoples" (14., 172.); 10) "a universal awareness" (207.); 11) "universal communion" (89., 92.); 12) overcome "rampant [capitalist] individualism" and "the culture of [capitalist] consumerism" (162., 184., 208.); 13) "a genuine and profound humanism" (181.); 14) oppose "a tyrannical anthropocentrism unconcerned for other creatures" (68.); 15) "support policies and programmes of [U.N.] sustainable development" (192., 193.); 16) "a new synthesis" (121.); 17) "a global perspective" (164.); 18) "global society" (158.); 19) "move forward in a bold cultural revolution" (114.); 20) support "the subordination of private property to the universal destination [re-distribution] of (the world's) goods" (93., 158.); 21) establish systems of governance for the "global commons" (174.) 22) "bring about integral and timely disarmament" (175.) 23) "ecological citizenship" [or "planetary citizenship"] (211.); 24) support "a true world political authority" (173.-175.) Of course, all of this is for "the global common good" of the new "global society" [or global civilization] (158., 169.).

This encyclical is rooted in the New Age, esoteric spirituality taught by Jesuit Roman Catholic priest Pierre Teilhard de Chardin, S.J. (1881-1955). Teilhard's writings include "global civilization," "global evolution," "universal communion" "Omega Point," a "new synthesis," a "cosmic Christ," a "cosmic theology," a "cosmic love," cosmic humanism and religious universalism. Likewise, Teilhard taught that, "...no evolutionary future awaits anyone except in association with everyone else." [i.e., Religious and Political Universalism] (3) This teaching is referred to as forced "solidarity."



**LAUDATO SI' is a universal synthesis of religious and political beliefs, philosophies, ideas and ideologies.** This document includes the following elements: 1) Religious and political universalism propagated by both the Society of Jesus (Jesuits) and European Freemasonry; 2) Western Occultism 3) Roman Catholic theology; 4) Roman Catholic ecumenism 5) Anti-capitalism 6) Global socialism 7) Anti-America ideology 8) Jesuit–birthed liberation theology 9) Views of climate change scientists and organizations 10) Support of Sustainable Development Goals (SDG's) of United Nations Agenda 21 and United Nations Agenda 2030 11) Pro-life perspective of neo-conservatives 12) Deep ecology movement ("Gaia hypothesis")

**LAUDATO SI' is an appeal to all people of all religions, all political parties (including neo-conservatives) and all nations to unite for the "common" task of "saving" Mother Earth.** The letter includes similar points of view found in the 1992 book entitled *Earth in the Balance: Ecology and the Human Spirit* by former Vice-president Al Gore. Gore's book introduced a radical green theology and climate change ideology which included population control, birth control, etc. **The central message of Gore's book is that people must "reconnect" with Mother Earth and make the global environmental crisis "the central organizing principle" for creating a new global civilization.** See the article entitled *An Evaluation of Earth in the Balance: Ecology and the Human Spirit* (1992 edition). (4) Whereas, LAUDATO SI' adds Roman Catholic theology and social teachings including the pro-life perspective of neo-conservatives.

**In essence, LAUDATO SI' is a call to global environmental activism rooted in "ecological spirituality", "economic [or "distributive"] justice" and a new, global "green theology" expressed in Roman Catholic religious terms.** Moreover, in various texts it is a document which may be regarded as both pro-Global Socialism and anti-Capitalism. Both economic "systems" are presented in different terms. Capitalism is referred to as the system of current "global market economy." The central elements of **Global Socialism** (including global planned and "controlled" economy, global collectivism, global social justice, global integration, global disarmament, government re-distribution of wealth, diminishing of personal property rights, open borders, anti-Capitalism, etc.) are advocated without referring to them as "Socialist" goals. **Note that the authors of LAUDATO SI' frequently use the word "common" in this document. Is it merely a coincidence that throughout the history of Marxism the word "common" is so commonly used in the writings of Marxist leaders?**

**Socialism is one step in the "development" of the Marxist State. I describe this ideology as Socialism / Communism because both German "Socialists" Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels used the terms "Communist" and "Socialist" interchangeably in their writings. Leon Trotsky referred to himself as "a revolutionary socialist." Global Socialism is this same ideology applied on a global scale.**

**Moreover, Marxism / Socialism / Communism / Progressivism is a false philosophy applied to government and "economy" accurately described in Proverbs 1:10-19. This form of government is comparable to a gang of thieves saying, "Come with us...We shall find all precious substance, we shall fill our houses with spoil [from the wealthy Capitalist nations]: Cast in thy lot among us; let us all have one purse..." (Proverbs 1:10-14). But Solomon warned, "My son, walk not thou in the way with them; refrain thy foot from their path: for their feet run to evil, and make haste to shed blood. Surely in vain the net is spread in the sight of any bird. And they lay wait for their own blood; they lurk privily for their own lives. So are the ways of every one that is greedy of gain; which taketh away the life of the owners thereof." (Proverbs 1:15-19)**

In addition, we should be aware that Global Socialists frequently quote the New Testament passages of Acts 2:44-45 and 4:32-35 out of their historical and biblical contexts in order to claim examples of “Communism” or “Socialism” being practiced by *Christians* in the early church. But a closer examination of these Bible texts demonstrates that early *Christians* were practicing voluntary generosity to their brethren who were facing the loss of their work, housing and other basic needs due to severe persecution by unbelievers (Acts 5-9, 1 Corinthians 16:1-3, 2 Corinthians 8-9 ). In the same biblical context of these passages the right to own private property was recognized by God and early Christians as clearly revealed in Acts 4:34-37; 5:1-4.

Early *Christians* were not Marxists / Communists / Socialists / Progressives. They were generous toward other believers because they were filled with the Holy Spirit (Acts 4:31). Their hearts were full of God’s love, joy, peace, grace, mercy and kindness. They had the same mindset of the apostle John who taught, *“Hereby perceive we the love of God, because he [Jesus] laid down his life for us: and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren. But whoso hath this world’s good, and seeth his brother have need, and shutteth up his bowels of compassion from him, how dwelleth the love of God in him? My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue; but in deed and in truth.”* (1 John 3:16-18)

In his 18 June 2015 article in THE WALL STREET JOURNAL entitled “Pope Blames Markets for Environment’s Ills” Francis X. Rocca reported, “Pope Francis in his much-awaited encyclical on the environment offered a broad and uncompromising indictment of the global market economy, accusing it of plundering the Earth at the expense of the poor and of future generations. In passionate language, the pontiff attributed global warming to human activity, blamed special interests for holding back policy responses and said the global North owes the South “an ecological debt.” (5)

Rocca added, “The pontiff goes on to argue that there is “an urgent need” for policies to drastically cut the emission of carbon dioxide and other gases and promote the switch to renewable sources of energy. **But the pope goes further by weaving his signature theme of economic justice and his vehement criticism of capitalism throughout the entire encyclical. The document alternates between passages of almost apocalyptic moralizing and more-technical language, including practical proposals for alleviating environmental problems. Pope Francis opens the encyclical, which includes extensive sections on the theology of creation, with a lament for man’s sins against “Mother Earth”: “We have come to see ourselves as her lords and masters, entitled to plunder her at will. The violence present in our hearts, wounded by sin, is also reflected in the symptoms of sickness evident in the soil, in the water, in the air and in all forms of life.”** (6)

Likewise, in THE NEW YORK TIMES article of 18 June, 2015 entitled “Pope Francis, in Sweeping Encyclical, Calls for Swift Action on Climate Change” we read, **“Pope Francis on Thursday called for a radical transformation of politics, economics and individual lifestyles to confront environmental degradation and climate change, blending a biting critique of consumerism and irresponsible development with a plea for swift and unified global action...Metropolitan John Zizioulas of Pergamon says that the environmental crisis is a “spiritual problem,” during a news conference on Thursday about Pope Francis’ encyclical on climate change...The proper relationship between humanity and the earth or its natural environment has been broken with the fall both outwardly and within us and this rapture constitutes what we call sin. The church must now introduce in its teachings about sin, the sin against the environment, the ecological sin. Repentance must be extended to cover also the damage we do to nature both as individuals**

and as societies.” (7)

Also, it should be of no surprise that in *LAUDATO SI'* we observe some familiar elements of the Jesuit-birthered liberation theology interwoven with this new global green theology. For those unfamiliar with liberation theology, a brief overview may be helpful. Liberation theology was birthed and developed within the Society of Jesus (Jesuit Order of the Roman Catholic church) in the 1950's and 1960's by some Jesuit priests and professors. It is a synthesis of Roman Catholic social teachings with elements of Marxist Socialism and European Masonic Universalism. This new synthesis became known as liberation theology. Liberation theology is referred to as Catholic Socialism or Catholic Marxism. Global Socialism is this same ideology applied on a global scale.

Which elements are similar? For example, we find the call to “cultural revolution (114.),” “a preferential option for the poor” (158.),” a “new synthesis” (121.), “universal solidarity” (14., 172.) and “global society”(158.) in both contemporary political theologies. Likewise, we read of the necessity for social[ist] justice (157.); economic justice (re-titled “distributive justice”) (157.); re-distribution (re-titled “universal destination”) of “the world's goods” to the poorer nations (93., 158.); “decreased growth” in developed nations while simultaneously re-directing economic investment and “healthy growth” to the poorer, developing nations (193.); and having “solidarity” with the poor (158.).

In both of these new, progressive theologies we see comments reflecting anti-Capitalism, a path toward Global Socialism, Religious Universalism, Political Universalism and global solidarity. The aim is “liberation” from Capitalist (re-titled “the current global system”) consumerism, political and social oppression. The biblical definition of sin is broadened and re-defined so as to condemn those who oppose the new ideologies as selfish, unloving and apathetic to the needs of others. We must be “liberated” from Capitalist “anthropocentrism.”

In the 22 December 2016 article entitled “How Pope Francis Became the Leader of the Global Left” in *THE WALL STREET JOURNAL* Francis Rocca wrote, “When Pope Francis delivers his Christmas message this weekend he will do so not just as the head of the Catholic Church but as the improbable standard-bearer for many progressives around the world. With conservative and nationalist forces on the rise in many places and with figures such as U.S. President Barack Obama and French President Francois Hollande on their way out, many on the left—from **socialists** in Latin America to environmentalists in Europe—are looking to the 80-year-old pontiff for leadership.” (8)

Consequently, in the endeavor of evaluating *LAUDATO SI'* the warnings of author and former Jesuit priest Malachi Martin, S.J. come to mind. His writings find new relevance in our era. In his book entitled *THE JESUITS The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church*, Martin wrote about the “new Jesuit mission” set forth in the Working Paper of the “Jesuit national leadership project” of the 1960's. It includes “their intention to change the fundamental structure of America from that of a capitalist democracy” to a “new kind of society that cannot be “democratic capitalism as we know it.” This movement for “transformation of the sociopolitical face of the West” was the outcome of “the strange alliance between Jesuits and Marxists” [i.e. Liberation Theology] birthed in Latin America. (9)

Liberation Theology has not only had a far reaching impact in Latin America, many in the United States have embraced it or been greatly influenced by it as well. Just how dangerous and evil are the teachings of **Liberation Theology** and the Jesuit propagation of it to government leaders, religious leaders, students and those with wealth? Martin observed, “...Arthur F.

McGovern, S. J., is an outstanding and convinced apologist for **the new Jesuit anticapitalism**. In 1980, he published a book on the subject – *Marxism: an American Christian Perspective*...**Quickly, scores of Jesuits began to work with the passion and zeal that has always been so typical of them, for the success of the Sandinocommunists in Nicaragua**; and, when the Sandinistas took power, those same Jesuits entered crucial posts in the central government, and attracted others to join at various regional levels. In other Central American countries, meanwhile, Jesuits not only participated in guerrilla training of Marxist cadres, but some became guerrilla fighters themselves...” (10)

Furthermore, an even more chilling fact emerges as we gather additional data about the Jesuits. Martin noted, “Teilhard’s thinking [i.e., Omega Point] had become part of the thinking of the intellectual leadership of the Society of Jesus...As Teilhard had filled the gap of scientific underpinnings for the new theology of George Tyrrell, S. J., so Liberation Theology – championed largely by Latin American Jesuits – provided a tangible objective for the new theories of Teilhard de Chardin, S. J.: the liquidation of capitalist and transnational (which is to say, American) economic imperialism. And those same Jesuits provided as well a real space in which to experiment with the installation and nourishment of the “new Humanity”: every country in Latin America and the Third World.” (11)

An example of this Global Socialist agenda of “the liquidation of capitalist and transnational economic imperialism” is observed on page 122 of LAUDATO SI’. We read, “We know that technology based on the use of highly polluting fossil fuels – especially coal, but also oil and, to a lesser degree, gas – needs to be progressively replaced without delay. Until greater progress is made in developing widely accessible sources of renewable energy, it is legitimate to choose the less harmful alternative or to find short term solutions. But the international community has still not reached adequate agreements about the responsibility for paying the costs of this energy transition...” (165.)

Since the United States of America is currently the world’s leading producer of crude oil and natural gas, also #3 in coal production, submission to this Jesuit Roman Catholic pope’s encyclical would help bring the U.S. economy to incredible destruction. Many thousands of people would lose their jobs in the USA. In like manner, the implementation of this radical agenda on a global scale would bring about the loss of hundreds of thousands of more jobs. A multitude of people would be plunged into poverty and despair.

Whereas, it is truly “unethical” and dishonest to destroy people’s lives in order to re-distribute the world’s wealth and establish a Socialist world government under the guise of cleaning up the planet. Jesus said, “*The thief [i.e., Marxist / Socialist / Communist / Progressive] cometh not, but to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly.*” (John 10:10) Personally, I prefer the New Testament teachings of Jesus over the leftist, New Age “ecological spirituality” of the Vatican. A more sensible approach would be the real commitment and accountability of nation states and local communities to clean up their own lands. We should also continue to support development and implementation of technologies which are creating cleaner production and use of fossil fuels. Since they must live there, residents of local communities with fossil fuel industries can make a better difference by cleaning up their own communities.

Concerning helping those in poverty: We need not rob the rich in order to feed the poor. Former U.S. President Abraham Lincoln taught, “We do not enrich the poor by impoverishing

the rich.” Yet, this is precisely the outcome of Global Socialism. Thankfully, we find in the Scriptures that our God loves the poor and is fully aware of their needs, sorrows and oppressions. Our Lord Jesus gave a promise to all who will seek and follow Him. This promise is just as relevant in the twenty-first century as it was when spoken by our Savior in the first century. Regarding our basic needs of food and clothing, Jesus taught, *“But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you.”* (Matthew 6:33 KJV) The question is: Do we have faith to believe that our **LORD** is still able to keep His promise to us in the twenty-first century?

In addition, we are following our **LORD’s** example when we minister to those in poverty (Luke 6). The Scriptures have much to say about the poor and reveal our **LORD’s** compassion toward them. In Psalm 9:18 King David proclaimed, *“For the needy shall not always be forgotten: the expectation of the poor shall not perish forever.”* Likewise, David declared, *“Blessed is he that considereth the poor: the LORD will deliver him in time of trouble.”* (Psalm 41:1) In Proverbs 19:17 we read, *“He that hath pity [compassion] upon the poor lendeth unto the LORD; and that which he hath given will he pay him again.”* Thus, we find that it is pleasing to **JEHOVAH, the LORD GOD of Israel** to help the poor. We will be blessed of the **LORD** if we minister to those in poverty. We recognize the importance of serving the poor in Christ’s name (Matthew 25:40).

**THE CENTRAL QUESTION IS: HOW DO WE BEST HELP THE POOR?** 1) IT IS NOT A SIN TO BE POOR. 2) WE NEED NOT SELL OUR SOULS TO GLOBAL SOCIALISM IN ORDER TO FIND HELP FOR THE POOR. 3) GLOBAL SOCIALISM WILL CAUSE MORE PROBLEMS AND WORSE CONDITIONS IN THE LONG-TERM. 4) THERE IS A BETTER WAY. FOLLOWING OUR SAVIOR’S EXAMPLE IS BETTER. CHRIST JESUS DID NOT SEEK SOLUTIONS TO THE PROBLEMS OF THE PEOPLE BY FOLLOWING THE CONCEPTS OF GLOBAL SOCIALISM. JESUS DID NOT SEEK THE COUNSEL OF SOCIALIST LEADERS BECAUSE HE ALREADY KNEW WHAT WAS IN THEIR HEARTS (JEREMIAH 17:9-11, JOHN 2:23-25; 8:43-44; 10:10, 2 TIMOTHY 3:13).

**WE CAN FIND NO BETTER EXAMPLE TO FOLLOW THAN THAT OF OUR LORD AND SAVIOR JESUS CHRIST. HOW DID JESUS MINISTER TO THE POOR IN THE FIRST CENTURY?** During His ministry on earth, our Lord Jesus ministered to the poor in five primary ways. They are: 1) Christ Jesus provided salvation to their souls [i.e., *gospel* proclamation]. 2) Jesus prayed for them [i.e., prayer support]. 3) Our **LORD** taught them [i.e., education]. 4) Christ counseled them [i.e., Biblical Christian counseling]. 5) Our Savior shared food with them [voluntary generosity to those in poverty]. This is how we should minister to people living in poverty.

While we wholeheartedly agree with the need for good, responsible stewardship of God’s creation and maintaining clean energy, air, water and soil, as Bible-believing *Christians*, we respectfully disagree with the globalist “plan” presented in LAUDATO SI’ for the following valid reasons:

1) Christian spirituality is different than “universal spirituality” or “ecological spirituality.” Christian spirituality is based on a personal relationship with God our Father through personal faith in His resurrected, eternal Son - Christ Jesus (John 1:12-13; 3:1-7; 14:1-24; 17:1-3, Acts 4:12, 1 Timothy 2:5-6, Hebrews 7:25). We receive Christian spirituality by means of being spiritually *“born again”* of God’s Spirit through personal faith in Jesus and His *gospel* message (Mark 1:14-15, John 1:12-13; 3:1-18, Romans 1:16-17; 10:8-14, 1 Corinthians 15:1-4).

Jesus said, “...repent...and believe the gospel.” (Mark 1:15) The apostle John explained, “*But as many as received him [Jesus], to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.*”

Additionally, the apostle Paul proclaimed to *Christians* at Corinth, “*Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God.*” (1 Corinthians 2:12 KJV) In this Bible text Paul clearly distinguished between “*the spirit of the world*” and “*the spirit which is of God.*” According to this text, as *Christians*, we are not to receive “*the spirit of the world.*” Rather, we are to receive “*the spirit which is of God.*” This refers to the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit is called “*the Spirit of truth*” who will guide us into “*all truth*” as revealed in John 16:13. The Holy Spirit indwells every born-again *Christian* (John 14:17-31, Romans 8:9-11, 1 Corinthians 3:16, 2 Corinthians 13:5, 1 John 2:26-27).

The *Holy Spirit*, however, is not living in the soul of an unsaved person. God is not the spiritual Father or source of “spirituality” of a human being who rejects Jesus and His biblical message of salvation. See John 3:36; 8:31-47, 1 Corinthians 12:13 and 1 John 3:10; 5:1-21. In Galatians 3:26 the apostle Paul wrote to *Christians* saying, “*For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus.*” The New Testament Scriptures never teach us that we are all children of God without faith in Christ Jesus. We must each make the personal decision to put our faith in Jesus and His *gospel* message in order to become a genuine “*child of God*” (John 1:12) Consequently, according to the Holy Bible, there are two different spiritual families. 1) *God’s* spiritual family 2) The *Devil’s* spiritual family This means that there are two different kinds of “spirituality.” Therefore, in reality, “universal spirituality” is impossible in the spiritual realm. You either have *God’s* spirituality or you have the *Devil’s* spirituality.

Moreover, in 2 Corinthians 4:4 the apostle Paul identified “*the spirit of the world*” as “*the god of this world.*” He is a fallen angel (a spirit being) who reveals himself under various names. He is called “spirit of the age (or ages)”, “the god of this age”, “light-bearer”, “*the Devil*” or “*Lucifer*”). He blinds the minds of unbelievers to prevent them from believing the message of “*the gospel of Christ*” and being “*saved*” (John 3:16-18, Romans 1:16-17; 10:1). See also Isaiah 14:12-17 (KJV), Ezekiel 28:1-26, 1 Corinthians 3:18-23 and Revelation 12:1-17. Universal (or global) spirituality is referring to world spirituality. The spirituality of this world comes from “*the spirit of the world.*” The “*spirit of the world*” is “*the god of this world*” (also known in the Scriptures as “*the Devil*”, “*red dragon*”, “*Satan*” or “*Lucifer*”). Subsequently, according to the Holy Scriptures given by inspiration of God, world spirituality comes from “the god of this world” who is the Devil. Consequently, as authentic *Christians*, we must wholeheartedly reject “universal (or global) spirituality.”

By contrast, as Bible-believing *Christians*, we serve only the (singular) true and living *LORD GOD* of Israel. In John 17:14-19 our Lord Jesus taught His *disciples* that they were in the world but “not of the world.” Jesus prayed to God the Father concerning His followers. He said, “*I have given them thy word [The words of Jesus are recorded in the New Testament Scriptures.]; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.” Therefore, as Christ’s twenty-first century followers, we do not seek any form of “universal (or global) spirituality” of this world. This certainly includes not seeking New Age “ecological spirituality.”*

2) Christian solidarity (or unity) is different than “universal solidarity” or “global solidarity.” In LAUDATO SI’ the authors declare, “We require a new and universal solidarity.” (14.) This is the same as saying that they require conformity to the leftist, New Age religious and political “universalism” of Jesuit Roman Catholic priest Pierre Teilhard de Chardin, S.J. and “the plan” of the Jesuit Order. With all due respect, this looks like something we would read coming from the “Court of the Holy Office of the Inquisition” of the Roman Catholic church during the Middle Ages.

Whereas, there is a clear difference in the Holy Scriptures between the world’s false unity and the authentic, biblical “*unity*” which is produced by the *Holy Spirit* only among true believers in Christ Jesus. True Christian *unity* is centered in Christ Jesus and obedience to His teachings recorded in the New Testament Scriptures (John 17:1-17, Ephesians 4:1-32, Galatians 3:26-29).

But not all “unity” is from *JEHOVAH GOD*. The *Devil* also has the ability to “unite” his people for a “common” cause. In the Scriptures we see examples of people being united in rebellion against Jehovah God to disobey His commands and do evil works as in Genesis 11:1-4, Matthew 27:1-2 and Mark 3:6. As *Christians*, we are warned and commanded by our Lord Jesus to, “*Take heed that no man deceive you.*” (Matthew 24:4-5) Therefore, we affirm that a unity with false spirituality, false teachings and false teachers is, and always will be, A FALSE UNITY.

3) *Christians* can be good stewards of our *LORD*’s creation without seeking to “reconcile (or re-connect) with Mother Earth” or “creation.” The earth is not a person or divinity. Moreover, true *Christians* do not embrace the pagan doctrine of Monism. The Creator and His creation are not the same (Romans 1:20-32). Consequently, we do not seek a spiritual “union” with Mother Earth.

Another important observation comes to mind. It is not “Mother Earth” “who sustains and governs us.” (1.) Rather, it is our omnipotent living *LORD GOD of Israel* who daily sustains and governs us (Psalm 103, 145-150, Acts 17:25-26, Colossians 1:13-18, Revelation 1:8). Mother Earth is not God. As a result, nowhere in the Bible are we taught that we have sinned against “Mother Earth” and therefore must be reconciled to it.

This fact leads us to one more question. How are human beings different than animals? Man was created “in the image of God” (Genesis 1:26-27). Animals were not created “in the image of God.” This makes human beings different than animals. God created us with two additional parts: 1. A conscience (John 8:9, 2 Corinthians 4:2, 1 Peter 3:16-21). 2. An eternal soul that will live forever in Heaven or in the Lake of Fire (Ecclesiastes 12:7, Matthew 10:28; 25:41-46, John 14:1-3, 1 Peter 1:4, Revelation 14:11; 20:10-15; 21:8).

As a result of being created with a conscience and an eternal soul, two additional facts emerge: 1. We are accountable to our Creator for all of our actions and attitudes (Acts 17:30-31, John 12:48, Hebrews 9:27, Revelation 20:10-15). 2. God has created us with a spiritual dimension that only He can fill (John 4:13-14, 1 Thessalonians 5:23). Thus, we correctly conclude that each of us truly need God in our lives. We need His salvation. We need His mercy, forgiveness, free gift of eternal life, grace, strength, peace, hope, comfort, wisdom, discernment, presence, provision and protection. We believe our God is wise enough and powerful enough to help those who diligently seek Him (Hebrews 11:6).

Moreover, in the Holy Bible we discover the importance of being reconciled to God the

Father through personal faith in His Son – Christ Jesus and His “*once for all*” sacrifice for our sins “*forever*” (Hebrews 10:10-14). We learn that Jesus came to the earth on a mission of love in order to reconcile people to God the Father (Romans 5:8-11, 2 Corinthians 5:17-21, Ephesians 2:11-22, Colossians 1:12-29). In Romans 5:8-11 the apostle Paul explained, “*But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him. For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life. And not only so, but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement.*”.

Therefore, there is no valid need to seek reconciliation with “Mother Earth.” “Mother Earth” is not our God. We have already reconciled to our one, true and living God “*forever*” through personal faith in our Lord Jesus and His one time death for our sins (Romans 3:20-26, Hebrews 10:10-14, 1 John 2:1-2).

4) Nowhere in the Holy Bible are we instructed to seek a “union” or “solidarity” with creation or creatures. Whereas, this is a practice found in pagan New Age spirituality, Western Occultism, Spiritism and Animism. But our one, true living LORD GOD and Creator commands us not to worship, venerate, serve or seek a spiritual “union” with creation in place of Him. By contrast, the ancient ungodly pagans of the Babylonian Mystery Religion practiced a distorted, false “spirituality” and sought a mystical “union” with “Mother Earth,” the Sun, Moon and stars (Romans 1:20-32). Over the centuries, the essential elements of the religion of Babylon (worship of the sun god, priesthood, rites, symbols, customs, teachings) were preserved in the ancient MYSTERY RELIGIONS of Egypt, Persia, India, Greece and Rome. As a result, significant elements of the Roman Mysteries had their origin in this ancient, pagan Babylonian religious system.

Beginning in the fourth century during the reign of Emperor Constantine, many of the rites, symbols, teachings and customs of the ROMAN MYSTERIES were added to Christian teachings in a compromised mixture (creating “a new synthesis”) in the Roman Catholic church. EMPEROR CONSTANTINE PRACTICED RELIGIOUS SYNCRETISM. While professing to believe in the Christian God, he also venerated “the Unconquered Sun” (*Sol Invictus*). At the dedication of his “triumphal arch” in 315 A.D., Constantine honored the pagan goddess Victoria and had sacrifices given to the pagan Roman gods Apollo, Diana and Hercules. (12) Consequently, it is essential to remember that Romanism includes sun worship and pagan spirituality.

Whereas, according to the Holy Scriptures, sun worship is an act of idolatry. Likewise, earth worship is an act of idolatry. See Deuteronomy 4:19; 17:2-3; 18:9-14, 2 Kings 23:5, Jeremiah 8:2 and Ezekiel 8:15-18. The LORD our God commands, “*I am the LORD thy God, which brought thee out of the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage. Thou shalt have none other gods before me. Thou shalt not make thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above [such as an image of Mary, a saint or an angel], or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the waters beneath the earth: thou shalt not bow down thyself unto them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me, and shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love me and keep my commandments.*” (Deuteronomy 5:6-10 KJV)



In addition to the previous commandment, which includes the prohibition of bowing down to an image of the sun or any other false god or serving and worshiping them, the **LORD (JEHOVAH)** God warns His people (Israel) of the consequences of practicing idolatry: *“If there be found among you, within any of thy gates which the LORD thy God giveth thee, man or woman, that hath wrought wickedness in the sight of the LORD thy God, in transgressing his covenant, and hath gone and served other gods, and worshipped them, either the sun, or moon, or any of the host of heaven, which I have not commanded;...”*  
(Deuteronomy 17:2-3 KJV)

5) In the Scriptures we are taught to responsibly care for and protect our animals and our land (responsible stewardship). However, nowhere in the Holy Bible do we find “environmental degradation” regarded as a sin against God of which we must repent. In fact, to claim that this is sin is to create a new twenty-first century category of “sins” with no credible basis in God’s Word – the Holy Bible (2 Timothy 2:14-17). It is, in reality, to create a new religion – a New Age false religion.

6) Nowhere in the teachings of Jesus or His true, first-century apostles do we see a command to repent of “pollution” or a sin against the air, plants, birds or animals. In the Scriptures of truth *“sin is the transgression of the law”* of God (1 John 3:4). This refers to God’s eternal, moral law. God’s laws are His commands recorded in the Holy Bible (John 14:15-24, Romans 13:8-10, 1 John 2:3-5; 5:1-5). Sin is an action against God and against other human beings (Psalm 32:1-6; 51:1-11, Matthew 5:23-24; 18:15-18).

Whereas, pollution is an issue of practicing cleanliness. It is a matter of respecting God’s creation and being a good steward of His creation. We are right to oppose pollution because it is harmful to human beings, animals and plants. But pollution is not regarded as a sin in the Holy Bible. It is not right for us to re-define sin as it has already been clearly revealed to the *church* by special revelation from God in the God-inspired Holy Scriptures (1 Thessalonians 2:13, 2 Timothy 3:16-17, 2 Peter 1:19-21). Furthermore, it is God, not a man, who determines what is sin and what is not sin. No pope, cardinal, bishop, pastor, church, angel or human being has a valid God-given right or authority to re-define “sin” or add a new category of “sin” to the *church* contrary to that biblical definition and teaching which God has already given to *“the saints”* in the first century recorded in the New Testament Scriptures (*“the faith which was once delivered unto the saints”* – Jude 3).

Along with the biblical teaching regarding sin, in the New Testament we receive *“the gospel of Christ”* (Mark 1:14-15, Romans 1:15-17, 1 Corinthians 15:1-4). *The* [singular] *gospel* is defined in 1 Corinthians 15:3-4. The apostle Paul proclaimed, *“For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures; and that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures:...”* (1 Corinthians 15:3-4) This is *the* [singular] *gospel* message which came to us not by a pope, but *“...by the revelation of Jesus Christ”* (Galatians 1:11-12). This is the same biblical message revealed from God by which we are *“saved”* (Romans 1:16). But nowhere in the teachings of Jesus or His first century apostles do we find *“the gospel of environmentalism.”* Those who are advocating the New Age *“ecological spirituality”* and *“green theology”* in LAUDATO SI’ are, in effect, claiming that they have a *“new revelation”* for the church and for all humanity.

Whereas, true *Christians* are not seeking a *“new revelation”* from God. God has already given us His supreme and complete *“revelation”* through His Son – Jesus Christ (Hebrews 1:1-

3). Paul taught that *“Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners...”* (1 Timothy 1:15). The apostle did not teach that “Christ came into the world to save Mother Earth.” Subsequently, those who are advocating the new revelation of “ecological spirituality” and “green theology” presented in LAUDATO SI’ must avoid becoming the source of a new “gospel of environmentalism” for many people. This new gospel may easily divert people away from the true, biblical message of *“the gospel of Christ”* which can eternally save their souls from sin. See 2 Corinthians 11:3-4 and Galatians 1:6-10.

Moreover, Jesus commanded His *disciples* to go and *“preach the gospel to every creature [meaning to every human being]...”* and to make *disciples* of Christ by *“Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you...”* (Matthew 28:18-20, Mark 16:15-16). But nowhere among the commands of Christ in the New Testament do we find a command to go and make environmental activists in all nations. We do find a command of Jesus given to His *disciples* to *“beware...of the doctrine of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees”* which includes *“teaching for doctrines the commandments [or opinions] of men”* in place of “the commandment of God.” (Matthew 16:6-12, Mark 7:7-9).

Also, Pope Francis is not God in human flesh as was our Lord Jesus (Isaiah 9:6, Matthew 1:23, John 1:1; 8:58-59; 10:30; 20:28, Titus 2:13, Hebrews 1:1-14, Revelation 1:8). Subsequently, we believe that the teachings or views of a denomination, Roman Catholic pope, cardinal or bishop are not equal in authority with the teachings of the one, true *“head [singular] of the church”* - Christ Jesus (Ephesians 5:23-24, Colossians 1:17-19). Christ’s true teachings are already recorded in the New Testament. As a result, we conclude that our Lord Jesus is not the true spiritual source of the New Age spirituality presented in LAUDATO SI’. This encyclical is, in reality, a new, man-made theology/ideology.

7) Nowhere in the Holy Bible are we taught to love “Mother Earth,” “plants,” “birds” or “animals.” In the Scriptures we are taught to love God and love people (Matthew 22:34-40). In addition, we are taught to care for our animals. In Proverbs 12:10 we read, *“A righteous man regardeth the life of his beast [animal]: but the tender mercies of the wicked are cruel.”* In like manner, the apostle Paul exhorted, *“For it is written in the law of Moses, Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the ox that treadeth out the corn. Doth God take care for oxen?”* (1 Corinthians 9:9). Also, according to Exodus 23:12 our animals should be given rest on the Sabbath day. But this is as far as the Holy Scriptures address this issue. We may respect creation without engaging in the love and worship of nature.

8) In LAUDATO SI’ several of the Scriptures cited are twisted out of their historical, biblical contexts by the authors in order to fit the new twenty-first century environmental ideology. Whereas, in 2 Timothy 2:15 *Christians* are instructed to rightly use and correctly interpret the Holy Scriptures. We are warned against careless misinterpretation or twisting the Scriptures out of their contexts in order to support the false philosophies and erroneous opinions or theories of people (2 Peter 3:16). In LAUDATO SI’ several Scriptures are misinterpreted and twisted out of their contexts in order to support New Age “ecological spirituality” and the new “green theology.”

For example, in LAUDATO SI’ Revelation 12:1 is misinterpreted as referring to Mary in place of Israel or the *church*. In like manner, Mary is portrayed as “the Mother and Queen of all creation.” (241.) This is clearly Mariolatry. These words exalt Mary to the status of being a female goddess to be worshipped and to whom we pray. But, as true, Bible-believing

*Christians*, we do not pray to Mary. Mary is not our God or our Mediator in the presence of God the Father. In fact, nowhere in the Holy Scriptures do we find instructions to pray to God our Father or to our Lord Jesus in the name of Mary.

Whereas, according to the Scriptures of truth, our Lord Jesus is *the* [singular] *mediator* between God the Father and mankind (John 14:6, Acts 4:12, 1 Timothy 2:5-6, Hebrews 7:25). The apostle Paul proclaimed, *“For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus; who gave himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time.”* (1 Timothy 2:5-6) Moreover, our Lord Jesus taught His true *disciples* to pray to God the Father *“in my name”* no less than six times in John chapters 14-16 (John 14:13-14; 15:16; 16:23-26). Therefore, in obedience to the very clear instructions of our Lord Jesus to His first century apostles, it is to God our Father that we must present our prayers in the name of His eternal Son - Jesus.

Additionally, according to the Scriptures, there is only one LORD of all creation – JEHOVAH GOD. The worship of *“the queen of heaven,”* “perpetual virgin” or “Mother goddess” was the idolatrous practice of ancient paganism not genuine Christianity. See Jeremiah chapters 7-8 and 44. Whereas, in Psalm 96:5 Jehovah declares, *“For all the gods of the nations are idols: but the LORD [YHVH] made the heavens.”* Subsequently, in 1 Corinthians 10:14 *Christians* are clearly commanded to *“flee from idolatry.”*

Similarly, in LAUDATO SI’ on pages 51-52 Genesis 4:9-11 is portrayed as meaning that Cain “ruptured” his relationship with “the earth” by killing his brother. In like manner, Genesis 6:5-6 is viewed as Noah “recovering and respecting the rhythms inscribed by nature”. This Bible text says nothing about “rhythms inscribed by nature”. The authors forced their own opinion on the text. Additionally, on page 53 Leviticus 25:10 is said to mean that “the gift of the earth with its fruits belong to everyone”. Of course, this interpretation supports the “collective ownership of the earth” by “everyone” [i.e., Global Socialism]. Similarly, Leviticus 25:23 is taken out of its biblical context to support the claim in the previous sentence against “absolute ownership” or the right to control the use of private property by owners.

9) To teach a new “green theology” and “ecological spirituality” to *Christians* is to add a new theology (a new doctrine) to *“the faith which was [only] once delivered unto the saints”* in the first-century (Jude 3). It is to change the Christian faith to conform to the social[ist] views of sinful humanity. Whereas, *“the faith”* (the body of teachings of Jesus and His true apostles recorded in the New Testament Scriptures) was only once delivered to *the saints* in the first century. *“The faith” is not an evolving theology* to which we may add new theologies or blend it with the false philosophies of this world to create *“a new synthesis”* (such as a new green theology) when so desired. The true Christian *faith* does not “change” in order to conform to man’s “social development” or erroneous, new philosophical views.

Now this biblical truth is absolutely essential to our having an accurate understanding of Christian doctrine. Was *“the faith”* truly only once delivered to *“the saints”* in the first century, or is *“the faith”* an evolving theology (“progressive theology”) to which we may add new theologies? We choose to side with Jude 3. Church leaders in the twenty-first century have no God-given right to change or add to *“the faith”* which was only once delivered to *the saints* by Christ Jesus in the first century.

10) The apostle Paul proclaimed, *“...where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.”* (2 Corinthians 3:17). By contrast, the forming of a “global society” and “a true world political

authority” will help prepare the way for the rise of the prophetically foretold *antichrist* and his totalitarian global regime (Revelation 13). In effect, this is precisely what the global “plan” of LAUDATO SI’ does. On page 122 the authors proclaim, “Interdependence obliges us to think of one world with a common plan”. (164.) Of course, they fail to mention that leftists in the Vatican have worked for many years to help create the “interdependence.”

Whereas, no authentic *Christian* should have a part in helping the global *antichrist* rise to power. In Revelation chapter 13 God warns us through the apostle John of a time to come when a global leader known as “*the beast*” (called “*antichrist*” in 1 John 2:18) will be in “control” of a global, totalitarian government system of banking and economy in which all “global citizens” will be required by law to take a global, economic “*mark*” in order to “*buy or sell*.” Those who receive this global, economic “*mark*,” whether in the form of a seal, microchip, QR code or other method, will be sealing the eternal perdition of their souls. See Daniel 7:23-28; 9:27; 11:30-39 and Revelation 14:9-12; 18:1-6.

Genuine believers in Christ Jesus will reject the *antichrist*’s global “*mark*,” rule and global, totalitarian system of government, banking and economy. How close are we to the rise of this prophetically foretold global government system of banking, economic “control” and rule of the *antichrist*? Read Revelation chapters 13-19 in order to fully understand what is coming. See the 2019 article entitled “*Just say NO! to Lucifer’s totalitarian plan of a global “cashless” society*” at: [instituteofbiblicaldiscipleship.com](http://instituteofbiblicaldiscipleship.com)

Each person has a choice. It is a decision to serve our *Lord Jesus* or to serve *the Devil* and his coming *antichrist*. You may choose to be a citizen of Heaven by faith in *Christ Jesus* or a “world citizen” of the coming world government of *the antichrist*. Choose Heaven or Hell. Choose freedom or global slavery and tyranny. As for me and my house, we choose *Jesus, Heaven and freedom*. We choose to praise, follow and serve our Lord Jesus Christ in God-given *freedom*. We will not serve or worship the global *antichrist* of Revelation 13-19. Furthermore, we refuse to be made deceived slaves living in blind social conformity to the *antichrist*, a satanic world government or a totalitarian globalist system of “control” of finances and economic development.

11) On page 46 of LAUDATO SI’ the author(s) write, “The Catholic Church is open to dialogue with philosophical thought; this has enabled her to produce various syntheses between faith and reason. The development of the Church’s social teaching represents such a synthesis with regard to social issues; this teaching is called to be enriched in taking up new challenges.” (63.) Jesuit-trained Professor Adam Johann Weishaupt, who was professor of civil law at the Jesuit University of Ingolstadt and founder of the Illuminatenorden, could not have possibly stated it any better.

In clear contrast, the apostle Paul warned authentic *Christians*, “Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ. For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily. And ye are complete in him [Jesus], which is the head [singular] of all principality and power:...” (Colossians 2:8-10 KJV)

From her origin in the fourth century during the reign of Emperor Constantine, the “Roman” Catholic church has practiced the “Hegelian dialectic” of “change” concerning the teachings and practices of Christianity and paganism. The Hegelian dialectic, as stated by Heinrich Moritz Chalybaeus, includes three stages of evolution:

1) There is a thesis (a teaching, concept, or theory). 2) There is a reaction to the thesis called an antithesis. 3) The tension created by the clash of the thesis and antithesis results in an effort to reconcile the differences. This compromise or solution is known as a synthesis. (13) It is very important to observe that THE NEW SYNTHESIS INVOLVES A CHANGE FROM THE THESIS. But our *LORD GOD* declares, “*For I am the LORD, I change not;...*” (Malachi 3:6) In Hebrews 13:8 we read, “*Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever.*” This Bible text clearly indicates that our Lord Jesus does not change.

When applied to Christian morality, doctrinal beliefs and practices in the church, the Hegelian principle is disastrous. Why? Because this is a satanic, evolutionary, false philosophy of the world that results in blending and compromise. It presupposes no thesis such as an eternal doctrinal truth or moral absolute (via special revelation from God) which cannot be changed. Thus, the Hegelian dialectic applied to Christianity undermines belief in “*sound doctrine*” and obedience to the Scriptures (John 14:15-24).

For example, in the teachings of the Scriptures we have God-breathed, eternal truth by means of special revelation (John 17:6-17, 2 Timothy 3:16-17, 2 Peter 1:19-21). We are instructed by Jesus to continue in His Word – the teachings of Christ recorded in the New Testament (John 8:31-32; 17:6-17). We do not need to reconcile biblical truth with the false teachings and philosophies of the world in order to win people to Christ Jesus. This blend creates theological relativism (2 Timothy 4:1-4).

Likewise, in the Scriptures we find moral absolutes - God’s commands. If we attempt to reconcile the *LORD’s* moral instructions with the disobedient theories, practices and lifestyles of unbelievers, we create moral relativism. For genuine *Christians*, there is no compromise between obedience to God and disobedience to God. We have no desire to blend obedience with disobedience. The two concepts cannot be reconciled.

In contrast to the Roman Catholic model, our Lord Jesus and His first century apostles strongly refuted attempts to SYNTHESIZE OR ASSIMILATE pagan philosophies, priesthood, rituals, teachings, symbols and customs with Christianity. This is made clear in the teachings of Christ Jesus and the apostles recorded in the New Testament Scriptures (Acts 15:27-29; 21:25, Romans 16:17-19, 2 Corinthians 6:14-18; 11:1-15, Colossians 2:8-10, Ephesians 4:14-24; 5:11, 2 Peter 2:1-22, 1 John 4:1-6, 2 John 1-9, Revelation 2:6; 2:14-16).

Therefore, following the example of our Lord Jesus Christ and His first-century apostles, we choose not to compromise or synthesize our biblical beliefs and Christian morality with man’s false philosophies in order to please those living in disobedience to God and His instructions recorded in the Holy Scriptures (2 Peter 3:17-18).

Moreover, the message of “universal solidarity” is not limited to the writings of the Vatican and the Jesuits. The influence of the teachings of Religious and Political Universalism found in Freemasonry is far reaching. For example, consider the writings of H. G. Wells. Inspired by Darwinism, Fabian Socialism and the Theosophy of Freemason, Fabian Socialist, Theosophist Annie Besant and Freemason, Theosophist Helena Blavatsky, H. G. Wells wrote the book entitled *THE NEW WORLD ORDER* which was originally published in 1940. This esoteric doctrine of the creation of a “New World Order” had a tremendous impact on key leaders in the West, throughout the twentieth century. These include U.S. President Franklin Roosevelt, Vice-President Henry Wallace, President Richard Nixon, President George Bush and many other leaders. In fact, during the past eight decades, Well’s book has been used as a practical blueprint for the incremental global establishment of the “New World Order.”

Several years prior to the founding of the “United Nations”, Mr. Wells, who was a British Socialist and very influential author of the twentieth century, advocated in this book: 1) “the World State” in Chapter 12; 2) a “United States of the World” in Chapter 7; 3) a “great synthesis of nations” in Chapter 11; 4) “a secular movement toward a single world order” in Chapter 11; 5) “world community” in Chapter 10; 6) “a new world order” in Chapters 8, 10, 11, 12; 7) “world socialism” in Chapters 8, 10; 8) “world citizenship” in Chapter 12; 9) “new world money” in Chapter 12; 10) “world collectivization” in Chapters 4, 7, 10, 11; 11) “internationalism” in Chapter 12; 12) “socialization” in Chapter 12; 13) “collective unity” in Chapters 11, 14; ) self-realization” in Chapters 7, 12; 15) “international policeman” term used three times in Chapter 7; 16) “disarmament police” found twice in Chapter 12; “etc. (14)

Keep in mind that Mr. Wells and other Fabian Socialists were influenced by the teachings of Freemason, Fabian Socialist, Theosophist Annie Besant who aided Helena Blavatsky in writing the *The Secret Doctrine*. This work advocates the esoteric theory of seven “spiritual races” – a “doctrine of devils” embraced by Adolf Hitler and other deceived students of esotericism. (15)

Also, in the 1992 book entitled *Earth in the Balance - Ecology and the Human Spirit* by former Vice-President Al Gore we find the same destructive philosophy of Jean-Jacques Rousseau revived with elements of Monism, Universalism and the global Omega Point vision of Jesuit Roman Catholic priest Pierre Teilhard de Chardin. (16) Author Dennis Cuddy has prepared a chronology of quotes which identify proponents of the New World Order and show its development. For the complete list log on to <http://www.freerepublic.com/focus/f-rlc/1145562/posts>

12) Thousands of credible scientists have rejected the current “Progressive” climate change ideology. For example, see the enlightening video presentation entitled “The Global Warming Myth” by Dr. Noah Robinson of the Oregon Institute of Science and Medicine at <http://www.oism.org/> Also, see the e-book entitled *Confessions of a Climate Scientist: The Global Warming Hypothesis is an Unproven Hypothesis* by Mototaka Nakamura (17)

In the 12 December, 2019 article entitled “100 scientific papers: CO2 has miniscule effect on climate” we read, “Increasing evidence destroys primary claim of alarmists. Within the past few years, more than 50 papers have been added to a compilation of scientific studies that refute the primary claim of climate-change activists that CO2 causes global warming. The papers compiled by the NoTricksZone website, now numbering 106, find that CO2 has a miniscule effect on climate. Words such as “negligible” are used to describe CO2's effect on the climate...

...A 2019 paper, for example, noted that the “enhancement of the atmospheric greenhouse effect due to the increase in the atmospheric greenhouse gases is often considered as responsible for global warming.” But the analysis by Costas Varotsos and M.N. Efstathiou of the National and Kapodistrian University of Athens “did not show a consistent warming with gradual increase (in CO2) in low to high latitudes in both hemispheres, as it should be from the global warming theory.” “Based on these results and bearing in mind that the climate system is complicated and complex with the existing uncertainties in the climate predictions, it is not possible to reliably support the view of the presence of global warming in the sense of an enhanced greenhouse effect due to human activities,” the researchers write.” (18)

Likewise, in the 20 September 2006 article entitled “Human- Caused Global Warming Slight So Far” by Meteorologist Michael J. Oard we read, “...There are also a number of scientists who

believe global warming, so far, has been slight. They believe the doomsayers have not proven their case for the expected huge temperature increase for a doubling of carbon dioxide, and that increased carbon dioxide may have a net beneficial effect.” Read this excellent article at: <http://www.answersingenesis.org/environmental-science/climate-change/human-caused-global-warming-slight-so-far/>

In fact, so far, more than 31,000 scientists have signed the Oregon Petition Project which affirms: “There is no convincing scientific evidence that human release of carbon dioxide, methane, or other green house gases is causing or will, in the foreseeable future, cause catastrophic heating of the Earth’s atmosphere and disruption of the Earth’s climate.” See petition at: <http://www.oism.org/pproject/s33p37.htm>.

Thankfully, there is hope on planet Earth. Our hope is in the *LORD*. We are reminded of God’s promise in Genesis 8:22. The *LORD* said, *“While the earth remaineth, seedtime and harvest, and cold and heat, and summer and winter, and day and night shall not cease.”*

Furthermore, we find it difficult to believe in the credibility of a religious institution, the Roman Catholic church, which has helped incite, plan, counsel and decree the murder of more 50 million Protestants, Ana-Baptists, Baptists and Jews in her [un]holy inquisitions, [un]holy wars, massacres and assassinations over the centuries. (19) (20) (21) (22) (23) (24) (25) (26) (27) (28) (29) (30) (31) (32) (33) (34) See Revelation 19:1-3. We find it impossible to embrace the claim of “moral authority” of a religion guilty of centuries of mass murder, sexual abuse of many thousands of children by her clergy, systematic cover up of these crimes, aiding Nazi war criminals escape to other countries at the end of WW2, financial scandals and numerous other crimes against humanity, etc. For additional information concerning this subject read chapters 3-11 of this book. (35)

In conclusion, miniscule climate change or not, nobody in their right mind would want to help establish a totalitarian, global government of globalist elites (an oligarchy of the arrogant) in “control” of all human activity, bodies of land and water, wildlife, industries, etc. in his or her nation [i.e., U.N. Agenda 21 and U.N. Agenda 2030]. (36) (37) (38) (39) (40)

If “Progressives” and “Global Socialists” sincerely desire to live under the kind of despotic “control” proposed in U.N. Agenda 21 and U.N. Agenda 2030, let them move to North Korea or Vatican City. But, as for us, we choose to live in *freedom*. Let us clean up our own communities. We do not need esoteric, New Age “ecological spirituality,” a new “green theology” or an invalid and unwanted totalitarian, global rule. God’s Word – the Holy Bible is still our standard of truth in the twenty-first century. We choose King Jesus and obedience to His eternal Word. The apostle Paul warned true *Christians*, *“If any man love not the Lord Jesus Christ, let him be A-nath-e-ma Mar-an-a-tha.”* (1 Corinthians 16:22 KJV) Daniel said, *“...but the wise shall understand.”* (Daniel 12:10) Respectfully, Nolan McFadden

Ω

## End Notes

1. [https://w2.vatican.va/content/dam/francesco/pdf/encyclicals/documents/papa-francesco\\_20150524\\_enciclica-laudato-si\\_en.pdf](https://w2.vatican.va/content/dam/francesco/pdf/encyclicals/documents/papa-francesco_20150524_enciclica-laudato-si_en.pdf)
2. “Aviso di Conferenza Stampa,” Vatican Bulletin, 10 June 2015  
[en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Laudato-si](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Laudato-si)
3. Pierre Teilhard de Chardin, *The Phenomenon of Man*, (New York, NY, Harper and Row, 1959), pp. 250-275 [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pierre\\_Teilhard\\_de\\_Chardin](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pierre_Teilhard_de_Chardin)
4. “An Evaluation of *Earth in the Balance: Ecology and the Human Spirit* (1992 edition)” by Nolan McFadden, ([instituteofbiblicaldiscipleship.com](http://instituteofbiblicaldiscipleship.com), 2000, revised 2018)
5. “Pope Blames Markets for Environment’s Ills” by Francis X. Rocca, 18 June, 2015, THE WALL STREET JOURNAL, [wsj.com/articles/pope-delivers-powerful-message-on-climate-change-1434621606](http://wsj.com/articles/pope-delivers-powerful-message-on-climate-change-1434621606)
6. Ibid., “Pope Blames Markets for Environment’s Ills” by Francis X. Rocca, 18 June, 2015, THE WALL STREET JOURNAL
7. “Pope Francis, in Sweeping Encyclical, Calls for Swift Action on Climate Change” by Jim Yardley and Laurie Goodstein, THE NEW YORK TIMES, 18 June, 2015, [nytimes.com/2015/06/19/world/Europe/pope-francis-in-sweeping-encyclical-calls-for-swift-action-on-climate-change.html](http://nytimes.com/2015/06/19/world/Europe/pope-francis-in-sweeping-encyclical-calls-for-swift-action-on-climate-change.html)
8. “How Pope Francis Became the Leader of the Global Left” by Francis X. Rocca, THE WALL STREET JOURNAL 22 December 2016, [wsj.com/articles/how-pope-francis-became-the-Leader-of-the-global-left-1482431940](http://wsj.com/articles/how-pope-francis-became-the-Leader-of-the-global-left-1482431940)
9. Malachi Martin, *THE JESUITS The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church*, (New York, NY, Simon & Schuster, Inc., 1987), pp. 15-17
10. Ibid., *THE JESUITS The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church*, pp. 16-17
11. Ibid., *THE JESUITS The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church*, p. 302
12. [https://es.wikipedia.org/wiki/Constantino\\_I](https://es.wikipedia.org/wiki/Constantino_I)
13. <http://www.en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Dialectic>
14. H. G. Wells, *THE NEW WORLD ORDER*, (London, Secker and Warburg, 1940)
15. Gary Kah, *The New World Religion*, (Noblesville, IN, Hope International Publishing, 1998), pp. 39-41
16. Al Gore, *Earth in the Balance: Ecology and the Human Spirit*, (New York, NY, Houghton Mifflin Company, 1992), pp. 204, 213, 364
17. Mototaka Nakamura, *Confessions of a Climate Scientist: The Global Warming Hypothesis is an Unproven Hypothesis*, (e-book from Kindle at Amazon.com, 2018)
18. [wnd.com/2019/12/100-scientific-papers-co2-miniscule-effect-climate/](http://wnd.com/2019/12/100-scientific-papers-co2-miniscule-effect-climate/)
19. Loraine Boettner, *Roman Catholicism*, (Philadelphia, PA, THE PRESBYTERIAN AND REFORMED PUBLISHING COMPANY, 1962)
20. Juan Antonio Llorente, *A CRITICAL HISTORY OF THE INQUISITION OF SPAIN*, (based on the English Edition published in 1823), (Williamstown, MA, The John Lilburne Company, 1967)
21. Jose Toribio Medina, *HISTORIA DEL TRIBUNAL DEL SANTO OFICIO DE LA INQUISICION EN MEXICO*, (Edited by Julio Jimenez Rueda), (Mexico D.F., Mexico, Ediciones Fuente Cultural, 1905)



22. Walter Montano, *BEHIND THE PURPLE CURTAIN*, (COWMAN PUBLICATIONS, Incorporated, POST OFFICE BOX 9812, LOS FELIZ STATION, Los Angeles 27, CA, 1950)
23. Samuel Morland, *The History of the Evangelical Churches of the Valleys of Piedmont, Volume I*, (Paris, AR, The Baptist Standard Bearer, 2001)
24. Anthony Gavon, *A HISTORY OF POPERY: GIVING A FULL ACCOUNT OF ALL THE CUSTOMS OF THE PRIESTS AND FRIARS, AND THE RITES AND CEREMONIES OF THE PAPAL CHURCH*, (Hartford, CASE, TIFFANY AND BURNHAM, 1848)
25. Joseph Zacchello, *Secrets of Romanism*, (Neptune, NJ, LOIZEAUX BROTHERS, 1948 FIRST EDITION, 1977 REVISED)
26. Alexander Hislop, *THE TWO BABYLONS OR THE PAPAL WORSHIP PROVED TO BE THE WORSHIP OF NIMROD AND HIS WIFE*, (New York, NY, LOIZEAUX BROTHERS PUBLISHERS, 1943)
27. Ralph Woodrow, *Babylon Mystery Religion-Ancient and Modern*, (Riverside, CA, Ralph Woodrow Evangelistic, 1981)
28. J. F. Love, *THE PAPAL INVASION OR ROMAN CATHOLIC METHODS TO DATE*, (Nashville, TN, SUNDAY-SCHOOL BOARD SOUTHERN BAPTIST CONVENTION, 1912)
29. Charles Miller, *A DOMINANT ROMANISM – ITS RELIGIOUS AND POLITICAL SIGNIFICANCE*, (New York, NY, Vantage Press, Inc., 1959)
30. Avro Manhattan, *VATICAN IMPERIALISM IN THE TWENTIETH CENTURY*, (Grand Rapids, MI, ZONDERVAN PUBLISHING HOUSE, 1965)
- 31.. John Ankerberg, John Weldon, Dillon Burroughs, *THE FACTS ON ROMAN CATHOLICISM*, (Eugene, OR, HARVEST HOUSE PUBLISHERS, 2009)
32. C. Chiniquy, *FIFTY YEARS IN THE CHURCH OF ROME*, (London, ROBERT BANKS & SON, RACQUET COURT FLEET STREET, E.C., 1899)
33. Malachi Martin, *THE DECLINE AND FALL OF THE ROMAN CHURCH*, (New York, G. P. Putnam's Sons, 1981)
34. Rene Fulop Miller, *THE POWER AND SECRET of THE JESUITS*, (London, G. P. PUTNAM'S SONS, 1930)
35. Nolan McFadden, *Vatican Influence: The Other Side of the Roman Catholic Church Unveiled*, (instituteofbiblicaldiscipleship.com, 2019), Chapters 3-11
36. "Your Hometown & the United Nations' Agenda 21" by William Jasper, 10 February, 2011, [www.thenewamerican.com](http://www.thenewamerican.com)
37. William F. Jasper, *GLOBAL TYRANNY, STEP BY STEP...The United Nations and the Emerging New World Order* (Appleton, Wisconsin, Western Islands, 1992)
38. Cliff Kincaid, *Global Bondage: The UN Plan to Rule the World* (Lafayette, Louisiana, Vital Issues Press, 1996)
39. Cliff Kincaid, *THE SWORD OF REVOLUTION AND THE COMMUNIST APOCALYPSE*, (Owings, MD, America's Survival, Inc., 2015)
40. Gary Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*, (Lafayette, LA, Huntington House Publishers, 1992)

## Appendix C

### A Synopsis of Pope Paul VI's *POPULORUM PROGRESSIO*

by Nolan McFadden

#### A

The document known as *POPULORUM PROGRESSIO* is a Roman Catholic social encyclical given at Rome on 26 March, 1967. The Latin words *Populorum Progressio* are translated literally to English as *Progress of the Peoples*. This writing has had a major impact in helping to advance Global Socialism/Progressivism in the Global Era. For more than five decades *POPULORUM PROGRESSIO* has inspired leftist activism throughout the world.

Pope Paul VI's *POPULORUM PROGRESSIO* is a letter which presents **a leftist synthesis of views** including elements of the false philosophies of Socialism/Progressivism, Humanism, Occult Globalism, Anti-Capitalism, Religious and Political Universalism expressed in the religious language of Roman Catholicism. Common Marxist/Communist phrases such as “the common good,” “common task,” “common activity,” “common development,” “common market,” “common future,” “international social[ist] justice,” “world community” and “integration” (harmonious, social) are used in the letter. Paul VI shared the motive of his encyclical in the second sentence of the introduction: **“The progressive development of peoples** is an object of deep interest and concern to the [Roman Catholic] Church...” The scope of the letter is found in *Our Journeys* 4. Paul VI declared, **“On being elected pope, We became the father of all men.”** In *A Problem for All Men* 3. Paul VI wrote, “Today it is most important for people to understand and appreciate that **the social question ties all men together, in every part of the world.**” Likewise, in *Justice and Peace* 5. Paul VI proclaimed, **“So today We earnestly urge all men to pool their ideas and their activities [i.e. synthesis] for man's complete development and the development of all mankind.”** [i.e., Political Universalism]

Also, Pope Paul VI's views concerning private property are explained in the section called *The Use of Private Property* 23. Paul VI affirmed, “...the right to private property is not absolute and unconditional. No one may appropriate surplus goods solely for his own private use when others lack the bare necessities of life.” In *Three Major Duties* 44. Pope Paul VI proposed the redistribution of wealth from “the wealthier nations” to “developing nations.” In *Superfluous Wealth* 49. Pope Paul VI wrote, “We must repeat that the superfluous goods of wealthier nations ought to be placed at the disposal of poorer nations.”

*Populorum Progressio* diminishes the rights of the owners of private property. In *Issues and Principles* 22 Pope Paul VI declared, “Thus, under the leadership of justice and in the company of charity, created goods should flow fairly to all. [i.e., redistribution of goods to developing countries] (20) All other rights, whatever they may be, including the rights of property and free trade, are to be subordinated to this principle...Redirecting these rights back to their original purpose [i.e., community use] must be regarded as an important an urgent social duty...the right of private property may never be exercised to the detriment of the [collective] common good...the common good sometimes demands their expropriation. Vatican II affirms this emphatically. (24) [i.e., Catholic Socialism]”

In the section entitled *A New Humanism Needed* 20. Pope Paul VI called for “a new humanism.” This is referred to as “a transcendent humanism” in *Man's Supernatural Destiny* 16. In *Authentic Development* 14. Paul VI stated, “The development We speak of here cannot be restricted to economic growth alone. To be authentic, it must be well rounded; it must foster the development of

each man and of the whole man. As an eminent specialist on this question has rightly said: “We cannot allow economics to be separated from human realities, nor development from the civilization in which it takes place. **What counts for us is man—each individual man, each human group, and humanity as a whole.**” [i.e., Humanism]

Likewise, in *Dangers and Ideals* 28. Paul VI wrote, “Considered from a Christian point of view, work has an even loftier connotation. **It is directed to the establishment of a supernatural order here on earth, (31) a task that will not be completed until we all unite** to form that perfect manhood...” In *Justice at Every Level* 59. Paul VI wrote, “**Free trade can be called just only when it conforms to the demands of social[ist] justice.**” In *Population Growth* 37. Paul VI encouraged “public authorities” to intervene in the matter of “reducing the birth rate.” He wrote, “There is no doubt that public authorities can intervene in this matter, within the bounds of their competence. They can instruct citizens on this subject and adopt appropriate measures, so long as these are in conformity with the dictates of the moral law and the rightful freedom of married couples is preserved completely intact.”

Moreover, in the section entitled *Toward an Effective World Authority* 78. Pope Paul VI gave “wholehearted support” to the United Nations General Assembly declaring, “Your vocation is to bring not just some peoples but all peoples together as brothers [i.e., Universalism]...Who can fail to see the need and importance of thus gradually coming to the establishment of a world authority [i.e., world government] capable of taking effective action on the juridical and political planes?” Subsequently, in *To All Men of Good Will* 83. Paul VI proclaimed, “Delegates to international organizations, public officials, gentlemen of the press, teachers and educators – all of you must realize that you have your part to play in the construction of a new world order...”

Consequently, in *POPULORUM PROGRESSIO* we see Vatican influence in action actively advancing the false, leftist ideologies of Global Socialism/Progressivism, Humanism, Occult Globalism, Anti-Capitalism, Religious and Political Universalism in the new era. But, from His true, righteous and eternal perspective, our *LORD* declares, “*Neither repented they of their murders, nor of their sorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts.*”

(Revelation 9:21, KJV) “*Maranatha.*” (1 Corinthians 16:22 KJV)

Source: [w2.vatican.va/content/paul-vi/en/encyclicals/documents/hf-p-vi\\_enc\\_26031967\\_populorum.html](http://w2.vatican.va/content/paul-vi/en/encyclicals/documents/hf-p-vi_enc_26031967_populorum.html)

Ω

## Appendix D

### A Synopsis of Pope John XXIII's *PACEM IN TERRIS*

by Nolan McFadden

#### A

***PACEM IN TERRIS*** is a Roman Catholic encyclical given by Pope John XXIII to “*Our Venerable Brethren the Patriarchs, Primates, Archbishops, Bishops, and all other Local Ordinaries who are at Peace and in Communion with the Apostolic See, and to the Clergy and Faithful of the entire Catholic World, and to all Men of Good Will.*” The letter was given at St. Peter’s in Rome on 11 April, 1963. This is the first Roman Catholic encyclical addressed to Catholics and “**to all Men of Good Will**” outside of the Catholic church. It was written with the purpose of advancing **universal peace, truth, justice, charity and liberty**. Also, universal human rights are defended. In this encyclical we find elements of the world’s false philosophies including Humanism, Progressivism, Occult Globalism, social gospel, Religious and Political Universalism blended with Roman Catholic social teachings. We observe the words “**the (universal) common good**” frequently used in this letter.

In the section entitled *Order in Human Beings* 7. Pope John XXIII wrote, “Men's common interests make it imperative that at long last **a world-wide community of nations** be established.” In *Rights* 11. John XXIII declared, “But first We must speak of man's rights. Man has the right to live. He has the right to bodily integrity and to the means necessary for the proper development of life, particularly food, clothing, shelter, medical care, rest, and, finally, the necessary social services. In consequence, he has the right to be looked after in the event of ill health; disability stemming from his work; widowhood; old age; enforced unemployment; or whenever through no fault of his own he is deprived of the means of livelihood.”

In the section *Economic Rights* 18. we read, “In the economic sphere, it is evident that a man has the inherent right not only to be given the opportunity to work, but also to be allowed the exercise of personal initiative in the work he does. (14) In *The Right to Emigrate and Immigrate* 25. John XXIII proclaimed, “Again, every human being has the right to freedom of movement and of residence within the confines of his own State. **When there are just reasons in favor of it, he must be permitted to emigrate to other countries and take up residence there.(22) The fact that he is a citizen of a particular State does not deprive him of membership in the human family, nor of citizenship in that universal society, the common, world-wide fellowship of men.**” [i.e., global citizenship]

In *An Attitude of Responsibility* 34. John XXII affirmed, “Each man should act on his own initiative, conviction, and sense of responsibility, not under the constant pressure of external coercion or enticement. There is nothing human about a society that is welded together by force. Far from encouraging, as it should, **the attainment of man's progress and perfection**, it is merely an obstacle to his **Freedom.**” In *Social Life in Truth, Justice, Charity and Freedom* 35. John XXIII stated, “And so will it be, if each man acknowledges sincerely his own rights and his own duties toward others. Human society, as We here picture it, demands that men be guided by **justice**, respect the rights of others and do their duty. It demands, too, that they be animated by such love as will make them feel the needs of others as their own, and induce them **to share their goods with others**, and to strive in the world to make all men alike heirs to the noblest of intellectual and spiritual values.”

In *Characteristics of the Present Day* 42.-43. Pope John XXIII wrote, “Finally, we are confronted in this modern age with a form of society which is evolving on entirely new social and political lines. Since all peoples have either attained political independence or are on the way to attaining it, soon no nation will rule over another and none will be subject to an alien power.<sup>43</sup> Thus all over the world men

are either the citizens of an independent State, or are shortly to become so; nor is any nation nowadays content to submit to foreign domination. The longstanding inferiority complex of certain classes because of their economic and social status, sex, or position in the State, and the corresponding superiority complex of other classes, is rapidly becoming a thing of the past.” In *Equality of Men* 44. Today, on the contrary the conviction is widespread that **all men are equal in natural dignity**; and so, on the doctrinal and theoretical level, at least, no form of approval is being given to racial discrimination.”

In *Attainment of the Common Good is the Purpose of the Public Authority* 54. John XXIII said, “The attainment of **the common good** is the sole reason for the existence of civil authorities. In working for **the common good**, therefore, the authorities must obviously respect its nature, and at the same time adjust their legislation to meet the requirements of the given situation.”

Likewise, in *Essentials of the Common Good* 55.-56. John XXIII explained, “**For the common good**, since it is intimately bound up with human nature, can never exist fully and completely unless the human person is taken into account at all times. Thus, attention must be paid to the basic nature of **the common good** and what it is that brings it about. (39)56. We must add, therefore, that it is in the nature of **the common good** that every single citizen has the right to share in it—although in different ways, depending on his tasks, merits and circumstances. Hence every civil authority must strive to promote **the common good** in the interest of all, without favoring any individual citizen or category of citizen. As Pope Leo XIII insisted: “The civil power must not be subservient to the advantage of any one individual, or of some few persons; inasmuch as it was established **for the common good of all.**” (40) Nevertheless, considerations of **justice and equity** can at times demand that those in power pay more attention to the weaker members of society, since these are at a disadvantage when it comes to defending their own rights and asserting their legitimate interests.”

In *Responsibilities of the Public Authority, and Rights and Duties of Individuals* 60.-61. John XXIII wrote, “It is generally accepted today that **the common good** is best safeguarded when personal rights and duties are guaranteed. The chief concern of civil authorities must therefore be to ensure that these rights are recognized, respected, co-ordinated, defended and promoted, and that each individual is enabled to perform his duties more easily. For “to safeguard the inviolable rights of the human person, and to facilitate the performance of his duties, is the principal duty of every public authority.” (45) 61. Thus any government which refused to recognize human rights or acted in violation of them, would not only fail in its duty; its decrees would be wholly lacking in binding force.(46) In *Citizens’ Participation in Public Life* 74. John XXIII spoke of “**the progressive development of human society.**” In *Contacts Between Races* 100. the need of “**progressive development and self-realization**” is presented.

Moreover, in *Need for Disarmament* 112. John XXIII called for **the banning of nuclear weapons** saying, “Hence **justice, right reason**, and the recognition of man's dignity cry out insistently for a cessation to the arms race. The stock-piles of armaments which have been built up in various countries must be reduced all round and simultaneously by the parties concerned. **Nuclear weapons must be banned.** A general agreement must be reached on **a suitable disarmament program, with an effective system of mutual control.**” In IV. RELATIONSHIP OF MEN AND OF POLITICAL COMMUNITIES WITH THE WORLD COMMUNITY 130.-131. John XXIII pointed out, “There is also a **growing economic interdependence between States. National economies are gradually becoming so interdependent that a kind of world economy is being born from the simultaneous integration of the economies of individual States.** And finally, each country's **social progress**, order, security and peace are necessarily linked with **the social progress**, order, security and peace

of every other country.<sup>131</sup> From this it is clear that no State can fittingly pursue its own interests in **isolation** from the rest, nor, under such circumstances, can it develop itself as it should. **The prosperity and progress of any State is in part consequence, and in part cause, of the prosperity and progress of all other States.**" [i.e., Globalism]

Pope John XXIII subsequently presented reasons for the establishment of **the United Nations as the necessary universal "public authority"** in *The Principle of Subsidiarity* 140. saying, "The special function of **this universal authority** [i.e., global governing] must be to evaluate and find a solution to economic, social, political and cultural problems which affect **the universal common good**. These are problems which, because of their extreme gravity, vastness and urgency, must be considered too difficult for the rulers of individual States to solve with any degree of success."

In *Modern Developments* 142.-145. John XXIII gave his approval to the U.N. commenting, "The United Nations Organization has the special aim of maintaining and strengthening peace between nations, and of encouraging and assisting friendly relations between them, based on the principles of **equality**, mutual respect, and extensive cooperation in every field of human endeavor.<sup>143</sup> A clear proof of the farsightedness of this organization is provided by the Universal Declaration of Human Rights passed by the United Nations General Assembly on December 10, 1948. The preamble of this declaration affirms that the genuine recognition and complete observance of all the **rights and freedoms** outlined in the declaration is a goal to be sought by all peoples and all nations...We think the document should be considered a step in the right direction, an approach toward **the establishment of a juridical and political ordering of the world community**...It is therefore Our earnest wish that the United Nations Organization may be able **progressively to adapt its structure and methods of operation** to the magnitude and nobility of its tasks. May the day be not long delayed when **every human being** can find in this organization an effective safeguard of his personal rights; those rights, that is, which derive directly from his dignity as a human person, and which are therefore **universal, inviolable and inalienable**. This is all the more desirable in that men today are taking an ever more active part in the public life of their own nations, and in doing so they are showing an increased interest in the affairs of **all peoples**. [i.e., Globalism] **They are becoming more and more conscious of being living members of the universal family of mankind.**" [i.e., Political Universalism / Universal Brotherhood of Mankind as taught in Freemasonry]

Then, John XXIII reminded Roman Catholics in *Philosophies and Historical Movements* 160, "As far as Catholics are concerned, the decision rests primarily with those who take a leading part in the life of the community, and in these specific fields. They must, however, act in accordance with the principles of the natural law, and observe the [Roman Catholic] Church's social teaching and the directives of ecclesiastical authority. For it must not be forgotten that the [Roman Catholic] Church has the right and duty not only to safeguard her teaching on faith and morals, but also to exercise her authority over her sons by intervening in their external affairs whenever a judgment has to be made concerning the practical application of this teaching."

In conclusion, the apostle Paul warned us, "**Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy** [i.e., Progressivism, Socialism, Humanism, Monism, Political Universalism, Religious Universalism, Occult Globalism, Romanism, liberation theology and social[ist] gospel] *and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ. For in him [Christ Jesus] dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily. And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principality and power:*" (Colossians 2:8-10 KJV) In like manner, Paul explained, "Now we [genuine Christians] *have received, not the spirit of*

***the world, but the spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God. Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual.”*** (1 Corinthians 2:12-13 KJV) ***“Maranatha.”*** (1 Corinthians 16:22 KJV) ***“Even so, come, Lord Jesus.”*** (Revelation 22:20 KJV)

**Source:** [http://w2.vatican.va/content/john-xxiii/en/encyclicals/documents/hf\\_j-xxiii\\_enc\\_11041963\\_pacem.html](http://w2.vatican.va/content/john-xxiii/en/encyclicals/documents/hf_j-xxiii_enc_11041963_pacem.html)

**Ω**

**© 2018 Nolan McFadden   copies permitted by author**

## Appendix E

### Open Letter from Catholic Archbishop Carlo Maria Viganò to President Donald J. Trump 25 October, 2020

<https://www.lifesitenews.com/news/abp-vigano-warns-trump-about-great-reset-plot-to-subdue-humanity-destroy-freedom>

Open\_Letter\_to\_POTUS.pdf

#### OPEN LETTER TO THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA DONALD J. TRUMP

Sunday, October 25, 2020  
*Solemnity of Christ the King*

Mister President,

Allow me to address you at this hour in which the fate of the whole world is being threatened by a global conspiracy against God and humanity. I write to you as an Archbishop, as a Successor of the Apostles, as the former Apostolic Nuncio to the United States of America. I am writing to you in the midst of the silence of both civil and religious authorities. May you accept these words of mine as the “voice of one crying out in the desert” (Jn 1:23).

As I said when I wrote my letter to you in June, this historical moment sees the forces of Evil aligned in a battle without quarter against the forces of Good; forces of Evil that appear powerful and organized as they oppose the children of Light, who are disoriented and disorganized, abandoned by their temporal and spiritual leaders.

Daily we sense the attacks multiplying of those who want to destroy the very basis of society: the natural family, respect for human life, love of country, freedom of education and business. We see heads of nations and religious leaders pandering to this suicide of Western culture and its Christian soul, while the fundamental rights of citizens and believers are denied in the name of a health emergency that is revealing itself more and more fully as instrumental to the establishment of an inhuman faceless tyranny.

A global plan called **the Great Reset** is underway. Its architect is a global élite that wants to subdue all of humanity, imposing coercive measures with which to drastically limit individual freedoms and those of entire populations. In several nations this plan has already been approved and financed; in others it is still in an early stage. Behind the world leaders who are the accomplices and executors of this infernal project, there are unscrupulous characters who finance the *World Economic Forum* and *Event 201*, promoting their agenda.

The purpose of the *Great Reset* is the imposition of a health dictatorship aiming at the imposition of liberticidal measures, hidden behind tempting promises of ensuring a universal income and cancelling individual debt. The price of these concessions from the International Monetary Fund will be the renunciation of private property and adherence to a program of vaccination against Covid-19 and Covid-21 promoted by Bill Gates with the collaboration of the main pharmaceutical groups. Beyond the enormous economic interests that motivate the promoters of the *Great Reset*, the imposition of the vaccination will be accompanied by the requirement of a health passport and a digital ID, with the consequent contact tracing of the population of the entire world. Those who do not accept these measures will be confined in detention camps or placed under house arrest, and all their assets will be confiscated.



Mr. President, I imagine that you are already aware that in some countries the *Great Reset* will be activated between the end of this year and the first trimester of 2021. For this purpose, further lockdowns are planned, which will be officially justified by a supposed second and third wave of the pandemic. You are well aware of the means that have been deployed to sow panic and legitimize draconian limitations on individual liberties, artfully provoking a world-wide economic crisis. In the intentions of its architects, this crisis will serve to make the recourse of nations to the *Great Reset* irreversible, thereby giving the final blow to a world whose existence and very memory they want to completely cancel. But this world, Mr. President, includes people, affections, institutions, faith, culture, traditions, and ideals: people and values that do not act like automatons, who do not obey like machines, because they are endowed with a soul and a heart, because they are tied together by a spiritual bond that draws its strength from above, from that God that our adversaries want to challenge, just as Lucifer did at the beginning of time with his “*non serviam*.”

Many people – as we well know – are annoyed by this reference to the clash between Good and Evil and the use of “apocalyptic” overtones, which according to them exasperates spirits and sharpens divisions. It is not surprising that the enemy is angered at being discovered just when he believes he has reached the citadel he seeks to conquer undisturbed. What is surprising, however, is that there is no one to sound the alarm. The reaction of the deep state to those who denounce its plan is broken and incoherent, but understandable. Just when the complicity of the mainstream media had succeeded in making **the transition to the New World Order** almost painless and unnoticed, all sorts of deceptions, scandals and crimes are coming to light.

Until a few months ago, it was easy to smear as “conspiracy theorists” those who denounced these terrible plans, which we now see being carried out down to the smallest detail. No one, up until last February, would ever have thought that, in all of our cities, citizens would be arrested simply for wanting to walk down the street, to breathe, to want to keep their business open, to want to go to church on Sunday. Yet now it is happening all over the world, even in picture-postcard Italy that many Americans consider to be a small enchanted country, with its ancient monuments, its churches, its charming cities, its characteristic villages. And while the politicians are barricaded inside their palaces promulgating decrees like Persian satraps, businesses are failing, shops are closing, and people are prevented from living, traveling, working, and praying. The disastrous psychological consequences of this operation are already being seen, beginning with the suicides of desperate entrepreneurs and of our children, segregated from friends and classmates, told to follow their classes while sitting at home alone in front of a computer.

In Sacred Scripture, Saint Paul speaks to us of “the one who opposes” the manifestation of the *mystery of iniquity*, the *kathèkon* (2 Thess 2:6-7). In the religious sphere, this obstacle to evil is the Church, and in particular the papacy; in the political sphere, it is those who impede the establishment of the New World Order.

As is now clear, the one who occupies the Chair of Peter has betrayed his role from the very beginning in order to defend and promote the globalist ideology, supporting the agenda of the deep church, who chose him from its ranks.

Mr. President, you have clearly stated that you want to defend the nation – *One Nation under God*, fundamental liberties, and non-negotiable values that are denied and fought against today. It is you, dear President, who are “the one who opposes” the deep state, the final assault of the children of darkness.

For this reason, it is necessary that all people of good will be persuaded of the epochal importance of the imminent election: not so much for the sake of this or that political program, but because of the

general inspiration of your action that best embodies – in this particular historical context – that world, our world, which they want to cancel by means of the lockdown. Your adversary is also our adversary: it is the Enemy of the human race, He who is “a murderer from the beginning” (Jn 8:44).

Around you are gathered with faith and courage those who consider you the final garrison against the world dictatorship. The alternative is to vote for a person who is manipulated by the deep state, gravely compromised by scandals and corruption, who will do to the United States what Jorge Mario Bergoglio is doing to the Church, Prime Minister Conte to Italy, President Macron to France, Prime Minister Sanchez to Spain, and so on. The blackmailable nature of Joe Biden – just like that of the prelates of the Vatican’s “magic circle” – will expose him to be used unscrupulously, allowing illegitimate powers to interfere in both domestic politics as well as international balances. It is obvious that those who manipulate him already have someone worse than him ready, with whom they will replace him as soon as the opportunity arises.

And yet, in the midst of this bleak picture, this apparently unstoppable advance of the “Invisible Enemy,” an element of hope emerges. The adversary does not know how to love, and it does not understand that it is not enough to assure a universal income or to cancel mortgages in order to subjugate the masses and convince them to be branded like cattle. This people, which for too long has endured the abuses of a hateful and tyrannical power, is rediscovering that it has a soul; it is understanding that it is not willing to exchange its freedom for the homogenization and cancellation of its identity; it is beginning to understand the value of familial and social ties, of the bonds of faith and culture that unite honest people. This *Great Reset* is destined to fail because those who planned it do not understand that there are still people ready to take to the streets to defend their rights, to protect their loved ones, to give a future to their children and grandchildren. The leveling inhumanity of the globalist project will shatter miserably in the face of the firm and courageous opposition of the children of Light. The enemy has Satan on its side, He who only knows how to hate. But on our side, we have the Lord Almighty, the God of armies arrayed for battle, and the Most Holy Virgin, who will crush the head of the ancient Serpent. “If God is for us, who can be against us?” (Rom 8:31).

Mr. President, you are well aware that, in this crucial hour, the United States of America is considered the defending wall against which the war declared by the advocates of globalism has been unleashed. Place your trust in the Lord, strengthened by the words of the Apostle Paul: “I can do all things in Him who strengthens me” (Phil 4:13). To be an instrument of Divine Providence is a great responsibility, for which you will certainly receive all the graces of state that you need, since they are being fervently implored for you by the many people who support you with their prayers.

With this heavenly hope and the assurance of my prayer for you, for the First Lady, and for your collaborators, with all my heart I send you my blessing.

God bless the United States of America!

Carlo Maria Viganò

*Tit. Archbishop of Ulpiana*

*Former Apostolic Nuncio to the United States of America*

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

1. "In historic first, pope will address Congress," by Alan Fram, Associated Press, 6 February 2015, *Austin American Statesman*, p. A3
2. Avro Manhattan, *VATICAN IMPERIALISM IN THE TWENTIETH CENTURY*, (Grand Rapids, MI, ZONDERVAN PUBLISHING HOUSE, 1965), pp. 13-14
3. "12 political Converts to Catholicism – Besides Newt" by Dan Gilgoff, posted March 30, 2009, <http://www.usnews.com/news/blogs/god-andcountry/2009/03/30/12-political-converts-to-catholicism--besides-newt>
4. *Catechism of the Catholic Church*, (Libreria Editrice Vaticana, United States Catholic Conference, Inc., 1994), 1036, 1821, 2005, 2010
5. Ibid., *Catechism of the Catholic Church*, pp. 268-269
6. Dave Hunt, *A Woman Rides the Beast*, (Eugene, OR, HARVEST HOUSE PUBLISHERS, 1994), pp. 475-479
7. John Ankerberg, John Weldon, Dillon Burroughs, *THE FACTS ON ROMAN CATHOLICISM*, (Eugene, OR, HARVEST HOUSE PUBLISHERS, 2009), pp. 81-83
8. Wilson Ewin, *YOU CAN LEAD ROMAN CATHOLICS TO CHRIST*, (QUEBEC BAPTIST MISSIONS, QUEBEC, CANADA, 1981), p. 41
9. Ibid., *YOU CAN LEAD ROMAN CATHOLICS TO CHRIST*, p. 11
10. Ibid., *YOU CAN LEAD ROMAN CATHOLICS TO CHRIST*, p. 15
11. Ludwig Ott, *Fundamentals of Catholic Dogma*, (Rockford, IL, Tan Books, 1974), pp. 340-341
12. J. F. Love, *THE PAPAL INVASION OR ROMAN CATHOLIC METHODS TO DATE*, (Nashville, TN, SUNDAY-SCHOOL BOARD SOUTHERN BAPTIST CONVENTION, 1912), pp. 13-14
13. Ibid., *THE PAPAL INVASION OR ROMAN CATHOLIC METHODS TO DATE*, pp. 7-10, 13-14
14. Ibid., *YOU CAN LEAD ROMAN CATHOLICS TO CHRIST*, p. 22
15. Ibid., *YOU CAN LEAD ROMAN CATHOLICS TO CHRIST*, p. 22
16. Sarah Tusa, *The Enlightenment*, (Lamar University, Beaumont, TX, 1994)
17. H. G. Wells, *THE NEW WORLD ORDER*, (London, Secker and Warburg, 1940)
18. Ibid., *YOU CAN LEAD ROMAN CATHOLICS TO CHRIST*, p. 22-23
19. Ibid., *YOU CAN LEAD ROMAN CATHOLICS TO CHRIST*, p. 23
20. Nino Lo Bello, *THE VATICAN EMPIRE*, (Trident Press, 1968), pp. 11-12
21. Ibid., *YOU CAN LEAD ROMAN CATHOLICS TO CHRIST*, p. 75
22. J. H. W. G. Liebschuetz, *CONTINUITY AND CHANGE IN ROMAN RELIGION*, (Oxford, Oxford University Press, 1979), pp. 277, 291-299
23. Charles Miller, *A DOMINANT ROMANISM – ITS RELIGIOUS AND POLITICAL SIGNIFICANCE*, (New York, NY, Vantage Press, Inc., 1959), pp. 81-85
24. Loraine Boettner, *Roman Catholicism*, (Philadelphia, PA, THE PRESBYTERIAN AND REFORMED PUBLISHING COMPANY, 1962), pp. 7-10
25. R. M. Ogilvie, *THE ROMANS AND THEIR GODS In the Age of Augustus*, (New York, NY, W. W. NORTON & COMPANY, INC.), pp. 106-108

26. Robert Neville, *THE WORLD OF THE VATICAN*, (New York, NY, HARPER & ROW PUBLISHERS, 1962), pp. 9-10
27. Ibid., *THE WORLD OF THE VATICAN*, p. 10
28. Ibid., *A Woman Rides the Beast*, pp. 46-47
29. Ibid., *A Woman Rides the Beast*, pp. 203-204
30. Ralph Woodrow, *Babylon Mystery Religion-Ancient and Modern*, (Riverside, CA, Ralph Woodrow Evangelistic, 1981), p. 82
31. Joseph Zacchello, *Secrets of Romanism*, (Neptune, NJ, LOIZEAUX BROTHERS, 1948 FIRST EDITION, 1977 REVISED), pp. 14-15
32. Ibid., *Secrets of Romanism*, pp. 15-16
33. Ibid., *Catechism of the Catholic Church*, (552) p. 141
34. Ibid., *Secrets of Romanism*, pp. 13-14
35. *WEBSTER'S NEW WORLD DICTIONARY OF THE AMERICAN LANGUAGE* (COLLEGE EDITION), (New York, THE WORLD PUBLISHING COMPANY, 1955), p. 694
36. Malachi Martin, *THE DECLINE AND FALL OF THE ROMAN CHURCH*, (New York, G. P. Putnam's Sons, 1981), p. 140
37. Ibid., *A Woman Rides the Beast*, pp. 204-205
38. Ibid., *THE DECLINE AND FALL OF THE ROMAN CHURCH*, p. 144
39. Ibid., *THE DECLINE AND FALL OF THE ROMAN CHURCH*, pp. 148-149
40. Ibid., *THE DECLINE AND FALL OF THE ROMAN CHURCH*, p. 142
41. Ibid., *THE DECLINE AND FALL OF THE ROMAN CHURCH*, pp. 150-151
42. John Emerich Edward Dalberg Acton, *Letter to Bishop Mandell Creighton*, 5 April, 1887, published in *Historical Essays and Studies*, edited by J.N. Figgis and R.V. Laurence, (London: Macmillan, 1907)
43. J. B. Rowell, *PAPAL INFALLIBILITY ITS COMPLETE COLLAPSE BEFORE A FACTUAL INVESTIGATION*, (Grand Rapids, MI, KREGEL PUBLICATIONS, 1963), INTRODUCTION v-vi
44. Ibid., *PAPAL INFALLIBILITY ITS COMPLETE COLLAPSE BEFORE A FACTUAL INVESTIGATION*, pp. 83-86
45. R. P. C. Hanson, R. H. Fuller, *The Church of ROME A DISSUASIVE*, (Greenwich, CT, The Seabury Press), pp. 130-135
46. Ibid., *THE PAPAL INVASION OR ROMAN CATHOLIC METHODS TO DATE*, pp. 7-8, 10
47. Ibid., *THE PAPAL INVASION OR ROMAN CATHOLIC METHODS TO DATE*, pp. 13- 14
48. Anthony Gavon, *A HISTORY OF POPERY: GIVING A FULL ACCOUNT OF ALL THE CUSTOMS OF THE PRIESTS AND FRIARS, AND THE RITES AND CEREMONIES OF THE PAPAL CHURCH*, (Hartford, CASE, TIFFANY AND BURNHAM, 1848), pp. 289-290
49. Merrill Unger, *Unger's Bible Dictionary*, (Chicago, IL, Moody Press), p. 68
50. Spiros Zodhiates, *Hebrew-Greek Key Study Bible*, (Chattanooga, TN, AMG Publishers, 1991), p. 1690
51. George Ladd, *The Blessed Hope – A Biblical Study of The Second Advent and The*

*Rapture*, (Grand Rapids, MI, Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1956), pp. 31-33

52. Ibid., *Catechism of the Catholic Church*, p. 289
53. Ibid., *Catechism of the Catholic Church*, p. 292
54. Ibid., *WEBSTER'S NEW WORLD DICTIONARY OF THE AMERICAN LANGUAGE (COLLEGE EDITION)*, p. 903
55. Ibid., *WEBSTER'S NEW WORLD DICTIONARY OF THE AMERICAN LANGUAGE (COLLEGE EDITION)*, p. 903
56. *CATHOLIC ENCYCLOPEDIA, VOLUME X*, (New York, NY, ROBERT APPLETON COMPANY, 1911), p. 6
57. *CATHOLIC ENCYCLOPEDIA, VOLUME V*, (New York, NY, ROBERT APPLETON COMPANY, 1909), p. 572
58. Ibid., *Roman Catholicism*, pp. 168-169, 175
59. Ibid., *Catechism of the Catholic Church*, pp. 344-345, 355
60. Ibid., *Roman Catholicism*, pp. 169-171, 174
61. Ibid., *YOU CAN LEAD ROMAN CATHOLICS TO CHRIST*, p. 40
62. Juan Antonio Llorente, *A CRITICAL HISTORY OF THE INQUISITION OF SPAIN*, (based on the English Edition published in 1823), (Williamstown, MA, The John Lilburne Company, 1967), pp. 1-4
63. Ibid., *Roman Catholicism*, pp. 425-430
64. Ibid., *Roman Catholicism*, p. 428
65. Ibid., *Roman Catholicism*, p.425
66. Ibid., *Roman Catholicism*, p. 430
67. Charles Wanamaker, *THE NEW INTERNATIONAL GREEK TESTAMENT COMMENTARY – THE EPISTLES TO THE THESSALONIANS*, (Grand Rapids, MI, WILLIAM B. EERDMAN'S PUBLISHING COMPANY, 1990), DEDICATION page
68. W. E. Vine, *VINE'S EXPOSITORY DICTIONARY OF NEW TESTAMENT WORDS*, (Iowa Falls, IA, RIVERSIDE BOOK AND BIBLE HOUSE), p. 1157
69. Malachi Martin, *The Keys of This Blood The Struggle for World Dominion Between Pope John Paul II, Mikhail Gorbachev, and the Capitalist West*, (NEW YORK, SIMON AND SCHUSTER, SIMON & SCHUSTER BUILDING, ROCKEFELLER CENTER, 1230 AVENUE OF THE AMERICAS, NEW YORK, NY, 10020, 1990), p. 288
70. ST. THOMAS AQUINAS SUMMA THEOLOGICA COMPLETE ENGLISH EDITION IN FIVE VOLUMES, VOLUME THREE Ila Ilae 1-148, Translated by Fathers of the English Dominican Province, (New York, NY, Benziger Bros.), 1948, pp. 1218-1224
71. S. THOMAE AQUINATIS SUMMA THEOLOGICA, TOMUS QUARTUS SECUNDA SECUNDAE: I-XCI, DILIGENTER EMENDATA NICOLAI, SYLVII, BILLUART, ET C.- J. DRIOUX, NOTIS ORNATA, IN LIBRARIIS CONSOCIATIONIS SANCTI PAULI, 6, VIA DICTA CASSETTE, BARRI-DUCIS, VIA DICTA DE LA BANQUE, 36, FRIBURGI HELV., VIA DICTA GRAND'RUE, 13, TRAJECTI AD MOSAM, 1885), pp. INDEX II, 88-94
72. Philip Schaff, *HISTORY OF THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH, VOLUME VI*, (Grand Rapids, MI,

- WM. B. EERDMAN'S PUBLISHING COMPANY, 1952), pp. 533-538, 543- 545
73. Ibid., *Roman Catholicism*, p. 433
  74. Ibid., *A CRITICAL HISTORY OF THE INQUISITION OF SPAIN*, PREFACE xiii-xviii
  75. Huguenots article from the *Encyclopedia Britannica* (1911 edition), <http://www.1911encyclopedia.org/Huguenots> p. 3
  76. A. W. Ward, *The Cambridge Modern History, Volume III, Wars of Religion*, (Oxford, Cambridge University Press, 1904), p. 20
  77. Anthony Perrottet, "The Besieged and the Beautiful in Languedoc", 9 May, 2010, *The New York Times*
  78. Ibid., "The Besieged and the Beautiful in Languedoc"
  79. MD Sibly William, *The Chronicle of William of Puylaurens: The Albigensian Crusade and Its Aftermath*, (Suffolk, United Kingdom, Boydell Press, 2003), p. 128, and John C. Moore, *Pope Innocent III (1160/61-1216): To Root Up and to Plant*, (Notre Dame, IN, University of Notre Dame Press, 2009)
  80. Samuel Morland, *The History of the Evangelical Churches of the Valleys of Piedmont, Volume I*, (Paris, AR, The Baptist Standard Bearer, 2001)
  81. Ibid., *The History of the Evangelical Churches of the Valleys of Piedmont, Volume I*,
  82. John Horsch, *Mennonites in Europe*, (Crockett, KY, Rod and Staff Publishers, 1950), pp. 299-302
  83. John Foxe, *Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, (Blacksburg, VA, Wilder Publications, LLC, 2009)
  84. <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=kLBMQld2YC>
  85. Ibid., *Roman Catholicism*, pp. 434-437
  86. Ibid., *Roman Catholicism*, p. 437
  87. Jose Toribio Medina, *HISTORIA DEL TRIBUNAL DEL SANTO OFICIO DE LA INQUISICION EN MEXICO*, (Edited by Julio Jimenez Rueda), (Mexico D.F., Mexico, Ediciones Fuente Cultural, 1905)
  88. Walter Montano, *BEHIND THE PURPLE CURTAIN*, (COWMAN PUBLICATIONS, Incorporated, POST OFFICE BOX 9812, LOS FELIZ STATION, Los Angeles 27, CA, 1950), pp. 89-93
  89. Ibid., *BEHIND THE PURPLE CURTAIN*, p. 94
  90. Ibid., *BEHIND THE PURPLE CURTAIN*, p. 96
  91. Ibid., *BEHIND THE PURPLE CURTAIN*, pp. 97-98
  92. Ibid., *BEHIND THE PURPLE CURTAIN*, pp. 98-99
  93. Ibid., *BEHIND THE PURPLE CURTAIN*, pp. 99-100
  94. <http://www.compassdirect.org/english/country/mexico/>
  95. Ibid., *BEHIND THE PURPLE CURTAIN*, pp. 109-111, 114-116
  96. Ibid., *BEHIND THE PURPLE CURTAIN*, pp. 114-116
  97. Ibid., *BEHIND THE PURPLE CURTAIN*, pp. 117-122
  98. Ibid., *Baptist Faith and Martyrs' Fires*, pp. 573-574
  99. J. Crowley, *ROMANISM - A MENACE TO THE NATION*, (Aurora, MO, THE MENACE PUBLISHING COMPANY, 1912), p. 4

100. Ibid., *Roman Catholicism*, p. 127
101. C. Chiniquy, *FIFTY YEARS IN THE CHURCH OF ROME*, (London, ROBERT BANKS & SON, RACQUET COURT FLEET STREET, E.C., 1899), p. 466
102. Ibid., *FIFTY YEARS IN THE CHURCH OF ROME*, p. 463
103. Ibid., *FIFTY YEARS IN THE CHURCH OF ROME*, pp. 464-466
104. <http://www.iack.org/development.htm>
105. Alfred Marshall, *The NASB INTERLINEAR GREEK-ENGLISH New Testament*, (Grand Rapids, MI, Zondervan Publishing House, 1984), p. 1008
106. Jay Green, *The Interlinear Bible Hebrew-Greek-English*, (Hendrickson Publishers, 1985), p. 962
107. Rene Fulop Miller, *THE POWER AND SECRET of THE JESUITS*, (London, G.P. PUTNAM'S SONS, 1930), Preface
108. Ibid., *THE POWER AND SECRET of THE JESUITS*, from the section – “The Militant Saviour of the Jesuits,” pp. 12-13
109. “Jesuits” article from the *Encyclopedia Britannica* (1911 edition), <http://www.1911encyclopedia.org/Jesuits>
110. Ibid., “Jesuits,” *Encyclopedia Britannica*, p. 3
111. Malachi Martin, *THE JESUITS The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church*, (New York, NY, Simon & Schuster, Inc., 1987), pp. 190-191
112. Ibid., *THE JESUITS The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church*, p. 190
113. Ibid., *THE JESUITS The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church*, p. 191
114. Ibid., *THE JESUITS The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church*, p. 189
115. Ibid., “Jesuits,” *Encyclopedia Britannica*, p. 1
116. Stewart Rose, *Ignatius of Loyola and the Early Jesuits*, (1871), pp. 190-192
117. Ignatius Loyola, translated by Joseph O’Conner, *The Autobiography of St. Ignatius*, (1900), p. 37
118. Ibid., *The Autobiography of St. Ignatius*, pp. 47-57
119. Ibid., *THE POWER AND SECRET of THE JESUITS*, from the section “The Way to World Domination,” pp. 75-76
120. Ibid., *The Autobiography of St. Ignatius*, pp. 27-28
121. *Constitutiones Societatis Jesu, anno 1558*, (London, 1838), pp. 101-106
122. J. C. H. Aveling, *The Jesuits*, (New York, Stein and Day, 1982), p. 1
123. [http://www.en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Immigration\\_Reform\\_and\\_Control\\_Act\\_of\\_1986](http://www.en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Immigration_Reform_and_Control_Act_of_1986)
124. <http://www.cis.gov/ilink/docView/PUBLAW/HTML/PUBLAW/0-0-0-15.html>
125. Gary Kah, *The New World Religion*, (Noblesville, IN, Hope International Publishing, 1998), pp. 239-244
126. William Grady, *FINAL AUTHORITY A Christian’s Guide to the King James Bible*, (Schererville, IN, Grady Publications, 1993), pp. 198-199, 201
127. Ibid., *FINAL AUTHORITY*, p. 200

128. Ibid., *THE POWER AND SECRET of THE JESUITS*, pp. 354-357
129. Ibid., *FINAL AUTHORITY*, pp. 202-203
130. Malachi Martin, *The Keys of This Blood The Struggle for World Dominion Between Pope John Paul II, Mikhail Gorbachev, and the Capitalist West*, (NEW YORK, SIMON AND SCHUSTER, SIMON & SCHUSTER BUILDING, ROCKEFELLER CENTER, 1230 AVENUE OF THE AMERICAS, NEW YORK, NY, 10020, 1990), pp. 638-640
131. Ibid., *The Keys of This Blood The Struggle for World Dominion Between Pope John Paul II, Mikhail Gorbachev, and the Capitalist West*, pp. 15-19, 47, 49, 50, 638-640, 646, 656,
132. Ibid., *The Keys of This Blood The Struggle for World Dominion Between Pope John Paul II, Mikhail Gorbachev, and the Capitalist West*, p. 637
133. Ignatius Loyola, *Rules for Thinking with the Church* from *Documents of the Christian Church*, Third Edition, edited by Henry Bettenson, (Oxford, Oxford University Press, 1999), p. 272  
[http://wps.ablongman.com/long\\_longman\\_lwcdemo\\_1/0,9493,1532993-,00.html](http://wps.ablongman.com/long_longman_lwcdemo_1/0,9493,1532993-,00.html)
134. Edmond Paris, *THE SECRET HISTORY OF THE JESUITS*, (Ontario, CA, Chick Publications, 1982), chapter four – The Spirit of the Order
135. Loraine Boettner, *Roman Catholicism*, (Philadelphia, PA, THE PRESBYTERIAN AND REFORMED PUBLISHING COMPANY, 1962), pp. 425-437
136. Avro Manhattan, *The Vatican's Holocaust*, (Springfield, MO, Ozark Books, 1988)  
<http://www.reformation.org/holocaust.html>
137. W. J. Burgess, *Baptist Faith and Martyrs' Fires*, (Little Rock, AR, THE BAPTIST PUBLICATIONS COMMITTEE, 1964), pp. 573-574
138. "William of Orange" - [http://www.1911encyclopedia.org/William\\_of\\_Orange](http://www.1911encyclopedia.org/William_of_Orange)
139. "Gunpowder Plot" – [http://www.1911encyclopedia.org/Gunpowder\\_Plot](http://www.1911encyclopedia.org/Gunpowder_Plot)
140. Ibid., *THE SECRET HISTORY OF THE JESUITS*, chapter five – The Privileges of the Company
141. Ibid., *THE SECRET HISTORY OF THE JESUITS*, chapter five - The Privileges of the Company
142. Jonathan Wright, *GOD'S SOLDIERS Adventure, Politics, Intrigue and Power A History of the Jesuits*, (New York, NY, Doubleday, 2004), p. 13
143. Ibid., *GOD'S SOLDIERS Adventure, Politics, Intrigue and Power A History of the Jesuits*, p. 22
144. Ibid., *GOD'S SOLDIERS Adventure, Politics, Intrigue and Power A History of the Jesuits*, p. 7
145. Ibid., *GOD'S SOLDIERS Adventure, Politics, Intrigue and Power A History of the Jesuits*, p. 27
146. Ibid., *GOD'S SOLDIERS Adventure, Politics, Intrigue and Power A History of the Jesuits*, p. 34
147. Ibid., *GOD'S SOLDIERS Adventure, Politics, Intrigue and Power A History of the*



*Jesuits*, p. 31

148. Ibid., *GOD'S SOLDIERS Adventure, Politics, Intrigue and Power A History of the Jesuits*, p. 33
149. Ibid., *GOD'S SOLDIERS Adventure, Politics, Intrigue and Power A History of the Jesuits*, p. 53
150. Ibid., *THE SECRET HISTORY OF THE JESUITS*, Foreword
151. David Mitchell, *The Jesuits, a history*, (New York, NY, F. Watts, 1980), p. 208
152. <http://www.proclaiming the gospel.org> (March, 2014 newsletter)
153. Ibid., *The Keys of This Blood The Struggle for World Dominion Between Pope John Paul II, Mikhail Gorbachev, and the Capitalist West*, p. 44
154. Ibid., *THE SECRET HISTORY OF THE JESUITS*, Foreword
155. Ibid., *Roman Catholicism*, p. 127
156. Ibid., *The New World Religion*, pp. 239-244
157. *Obras Completas de San Ignacio de Loyola*, edicion Biblioteca de Autores Cristianos. Translated by Dwight Cristoanos; Madrid; 1952, p. 880
158. Ibid., *FIFTY YEARS IN THE CHURCH OF ROME*, p. 474
159. General Count Montholon (Charles Tristan), *History of the Captivity of Napoleon at St. Helena*, vol. ii (London, Henry Colburn, Publisher, 1846), p. 62
160. Jeremiah J. Crowley, *ROMANISM - A MENACE TO THE NATION*, (Aurora, MO, THE MENACE PUBLISHING COMPANY, 1912), pp. 194-196
161. Ibid., "Jesuits," pp. 6-8
162. Ibid., *FIFTY YEARS IN THE CHURCH OF ROME*, pp. 463-510
163. Alain Woodrow, *Jesuits: A Story of Power*, (London, Geoffrey Chapman, 1997), p. 105
164. Ibid., *THE JESUITS The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church*, pp. 303-317
165. Ibid., *THE JESUITS The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church*, pp. 15-17
166. Ibid., *THE JESUITS The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church*, pp. 16-17
167. Ibid., *THE JESUITS The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church*, p. 302
168. M. Hobart Seymour, *MORNINGS AMONG THE JESUITS AT ROME*, (Cincinnati, OH, B. F. Ells, 1850), pp. 149-151
169. Ibid., *MORNINGS AMONG THE JESUITS AT ROME*, pp. 154-159
170. Richard Bennett and Martin Buckingham, *FAR FROM ROME NEAR TO GOD*, (Lafayette, IN, Associated Publishers & Authors, Inc.), 1994.
171. Piers Compton, *The Broken Cross The Hidden Hand in the Vatican*, (Australia, Veritas Publishing, 1984), Parts 1-4
172. Ibid., *The Broken Cross The Hidden Hand in the Vatican*, Parts 5-14
173. Avro Manhattan, *THE VATICAN MOSCOW WASHINGTON ALLIANCE*, (Chino, CA,

Chick Publications, 1982), Preface

174. Gustavo Gutierrez, *A THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION History, Politics and Salvation*, (Maryknoll, New York, ORBIS BOOKS, 1973), p. xi
175. Ibid., *A THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION History, Politics and Salvation*, p. xi
176. *THE JESUITS The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church*, pp. 303-317
177. Ibid., *A THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION History, Politics and Salvation*, p. 35
178. Ibid., *WEBSTER'S NEW WORLD DICTIONARY OF THE AMERICAN LANGUAGE (COLLEGE EDITION)*, p. 902
179. David Noebel, *Understanding the Times*, (Eugene, OR, Harvest House Publishers, 1991), pp. 800, 817
180. Richard Wurmbrand, *Marx and Satan*, (Bartlesville, OK, Living Sacrifice Book Company, 1986)
181. Ibid., *A THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION History, Politics and Salvation*, p. 32
182. Ibid., *A THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION History, Politics and Salvation*, p. 237
183. Ibid., *A THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION History, Politics and Salvation*, pp. 112-113
184. Ibid., *A THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION History, Politics and Salvation*, p. 87
185. Ibid., *A THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION History, Politics and Salvation*, p. 36
186. Ibid., *A THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION History, Politics and Salvation*, p. 301
187. Ibid., *A THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION History, Politics and Salvation*, pp. 175-176
188. Ibid., *A THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION History, Politics and Salvation*, pp. 177-178
189. Ibid., *A THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION History, Politics and Salvation*, p. 158
190. Ibid., *A THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION History, Politics and Salvation*, p. 35
191. Ibid., *A THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION History, Politics and Salvation*, pp. 237-238
192. Ibid., *A THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION History, Politics and Salvation*, p. 278
193. Ibid., *A THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION History, Politics and Salvation*, p. 50
194. Ibid., *A THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION History, Politics and Salvation*, pp. 88-89
195. [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Shining\\_Path](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Shining_Path)
196. Ibid., *A THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION History, Politics and Salvation*, pp. 220-224
197. Ibid., *A THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION History, Politics and Salvation*, p. 89
198. Ibid., *A THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION History, Politics and Salvation*, p. 214
199. Ibid., *A THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION History, Politics and Salvation*, pp. 298-299
200. Ibid., *A THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION History, Politics and Salvation*, p. 291
201. Ibid., *A THEOLOGY OF LIBERATION History, Politics and Salvation*, p. 56
202. [http://www.caritas.org.pe/documentos/documento\\_conclusivo\\_aparecida.pdf](http://www.caritas.org.pe/documentos/documento_conclusivo_aparecida.pdf)
203. Ibid., *THE JESUITS The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church*, pp. 15-17
204. Ibid., *THE JESUITS The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church*, pp. 16-17
205. Ibid., *THE JESUITS The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic*

*Church*, p. 302

206. James H. Cone, *BLACK THEOLOGY AND BLACK POWER*, (New York, NY, The Seabury Press, 1969), p. 143
207. Wikipedia, "Black liberation theology" article
208. Ibid., *VATICAN IMPERIALISM IN THE TWENTIETH CENTURY*, pp. 160-161
209. Ibid., *VATICAN IMPERIALISM IN THE TWENTIETH CENTURY*, pp. 165-166
210. Ibid., *VATICAN IMPERIALISM IN THE TWENTIETH CENTURY*, pp. 169-170
211. Ibid., *FIFTY YEARS IN THE CHURCH OF ROME*, p. 479
212. <http://poy.time.com/2013/12/11/person-of-the-year-pope-francis-the-peoplespope/>
208. [http://www.huffingtonpost.com/michele-somerville/pope-francis-man-of-the-y\\_b\\_4461188.htm](http://www.huffingtonpost.com/michele-somerville/pope-francis-man-of-the-y_b_4461188.htm)
213. "The Pope's New Message of Mercy" by John Allen, Jr., *Newsmax*, January 2014 issue, (Newsmax Media, Inc., West Palm beach, FL), pp. 52-53
214. Ibid., "The Pope's New Message of Mercy" by John Allen, Jr., *Newsmax*, January 2014 issue, pp. 52-53
215. <http://www.esquire.com/blogs/mens-fashion/pope-francis-style-2013>
216. Ibid., "The Pope's New Message of Mercy" by John Allen, Jr., *Newsmax*, January 2014 issue, p. 55
217. Bill O'Reilly, *A Bold Fresh Piece of Humanity*, (New York, NY, Broadway Books, 2008), p. 5
218. Bill O'Reilly and Martin Dugard, *Killing Jesus A History*, (New York, NY, Henry Holt and Company, LLC, 2013), p. 2
219. Ibid., *A Bold Fresh Piece of Humanity*, pp. 3, 8
220. Wikipedia – *Bill O'Reilly* (political commentator) article, p. 5
221. John B. Wilder, *THE OTHER SIDE OF ROME*, (Grand Rapids, MI, Zondervan Publishing House, 1959), p. 155-156
222. Ibid., *THE OTHER SIDE OF ROME*, pp. 156-157
223. Wikipedia – "United States Department of Homeland Security" article, p. 1
224. B. F. Skinner, *Science and Human Behavior*, (Macmillan & Company, New York, NY, 1953)
225. Lewis Sella and Dan Hamburg, "Rule by fear or rule by law?" February 04, 2008, at [http://articles.sfgate.com/2008-02-04/opinions/17140386\\_1\\_martial-law-kbrnational-defense-authorizatio](http://articles.sfgate.com/2008-02-04/opinions/17140386_1_martial-law-kbrnational-defense-authorizatio)
226. Ibid., *Catechism of the Catholic Church*, 1994, pp. 361-374
227. James Aitken Wylie, *The Jesuits Their Moral Maxims Against Kings, Nations and Churches*, (Whitefish, MT, Kessinger Publishing, LLC, 2009, reprinted from the original 1881 edition)
228. <http://www.ridgeglobal.com>
229. [http://www.sourcewatch.org/index.php?title=Tom\\_Ridge](http://www.sourcewatch.org/index.php?title=Tom_Ridge)
230. Department of Homeland Security Report – 7 April, 2009, (U//FOU) Rightwing

- Extremism: Current Economic and Political Climate Fueling Resurgence in Radicalization and Recruitment <http://www.fas.org/irp/eprint/rightwing.pdf>
231. MIAC Strategic Report – “The Modern Militia Movement”, 20 February 2009  
Missouri State Highway Patrol document – <http://www.scribd.com/doc/13290698/The-Modern-Militia-MovementMissouri-MIAC-Strategic-Report-20Feb09->
232. PRNewswire, (United Business Media, Anoka, MN) 12 March 2012, “ATK Secures .40 Caliber Ammunition Contract with department of Homeland Security, U.S. Immigration and Customs Enforcement (DHS, ICE)”, PRNewswire via <http://www.COMTEX/--ATK/quotes/zigman/217145/quotes/nls/atKATK-1.05%>
233. Anthony Martin, “Report—Mexican Government furious over ATF gun smuggling scandal”, 27 March, 2011, <http://www.latimes.com/news/nationworld/nation/atf-fast-furious-sg,o,3828090>.
234. Gary LaFree and Bianca Bersani, “Hot Spots of Terrorism and Other Crimes in the United States, 1970-2008,” Final Report to Human Factors/Behavioral Sciences Division, Science and Technology Directorate, U.S. Department of Homeland Security, College Park, MD: START, 2012.  
[http://start.umd.edu/start/publications/research\\_briefs/LaFree\\_Bersani\\_HotSpotssofUSTerrorism.pdf](http://start.umd.edu/start/publications/research_briefs/LaFree_Bersani_HotSpotssofUSTerrorism.pdf)
235. Edited by R. A. Torrey, A. C. Dixon and Others, *The Fundamentals: A Testimony To The Truth*, (Los Angeles, CA, Bible Institute of Los Angeles, 1917), [http://www.eaec.org/bookstore/the\\_fundamentals.htm](http://www.eaec.org/bookstore/the_fundamentals.htm)
236. Penny Starr, “Rep. Sheila Jackson Lee Likens Islamic Radicals to ‘Christian Militants’ in U.S.” at CNSNews.com, June 16, 2011
237. Tim Graham, “Former PBS Anchor Attacks Christian ‘Fundamentalists’ As Resembling Islamic Radicals”, NewsBusters.org, March 13, 2007 (See also [mediaresearch.org](http://mediaresearch.org))
238. anonymous blog
239. <http://thehill.com/blogs/healthwatch/other/229313-vatican-catholic-churchcommitted-to-universal-healthcare-coverage-#ixzz2tAFS8BUv>
240. “Vatican urges global econ power”, Associated Press, recorded in *Daily American Republic*, October 24, 2011, p. 8A
241. Malachi Martin, *THE KEYS OF THIS BLOOD – THE STRUGGLE FOR WORLD DOMINIION BETWEEN POPE JOHN PAUL II, MIKHAIL GORBACHEV AND THE CAPITALIST WEST*, (New York, NY, Simon and Schuster, 1990), pp. 15-19
242. Gary Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*, (Lafayette, LA, Huntington House Publishers, 1993), p. 40
243. Ibid, *THE KEYS OF THIS BLOOD – THE STRUGGLE FOR WORLD DOMINIION BETWEEN POPE JOHN PAUL II, MIKHAIL GORBACHEV AND THE CAPITALIST WEST*, p. 343
244. Ibid., *En Route to Global Occupation*, pp. 38-39
245. Ibid., *The Fundamentals: A Testimony To The Truth*, Volume IV, p. 108
246. Ibid., *A Woman Rides the Beast*, pp. 161-163

247. Count Paul von Hoensbroech, *FOURTEEN YEARS A JESUIT A Record of Personal Experience and a Criticism* (Girton College, Cambridge, translated from German by Alice Zimmern, 1911, reproduced in electronic form in 2002), pp. 68-69
248. Ibid., *A Woman Rides the Beast*, pp. 174-175
249. Wikipedia – Catholic clergy sex abuse scandals <http://www.en.wikipedia.org>
250. <http://www.latimes.com/world/worldnow/la-fg-wn-un-catholic-church-abusivepriests-20140205,0,3036334.story#ixzz2tANaBwq5>
251. <https://www.attorneygeneral.gov/taking-action/press-releases/attorney-general-shapiro-details-findings-of-2-year-grand-jury-investigation-into-child-sex-abuse-by-catholic-priests-in-six-pennsylvania-dioceses/>
252. [http:// www.snapnetwork.org](http://www.snapnetwork.org)
253. William Grady, *FINAL AUTHORITY A Christian's Guide to the King James Bible*, (Schererville, IN, Grady Publications, 1993), pp.
254. W. J. Burgess, *Baptist Faith and Martyrs' Fires*, (Little Rock, AR, THE BAPTIST PUBLICATIONS COMMITTEE, 1964), pp. 573-574, from *BENEDICT'S HISTORY* in the section *SEARCHING FOR BAPTISTS TO PUNISH*
255. Brigitte Gabriel, *THEY MUST BE STOPPED*, (New York, NY, St. Martin's Press, 2008)
256. Ibid., *Marx and Satan* by Richard Wurmbrand
257. *ST. THOMAS AQUINAS SUMMA THEOLOGICA COMPLETE ENGLISH EDITION IN FIVE VOLUMES, VOLUME THREE Ila Ilae 1-148*, Translated by Fathers of the English Dominican Province, (New York, NY, Benziger Bros., 1948), pp. 1218-1224
258. Ibid., *THE OTHER SIDE OF ROME*, p. 153
259. Loraine Boettner, *Roman Catholicism*, (Philadelphia, PA, THE PRESBYTERIAN AND REFORMED PUBLISHING COMPANY, 1962)
260. Ibid., *THE OTHER SIDE OF ROME*, pp. 153-154
261. Ibid., *THE OTHER SIDE OF ROME*, FOREWORD
262. Ibid., *BEHIND THE PURPLE CURTAIN*, pp. INTRODUCTION, xi, 176-177
263. Jeff King, website of International Christian Concern, <http://www.persecution.org>
264. Julia Duin, "China accused of vast trade in organs: Harvests come from religious dissidents", (May 3, 2010 issue of *The Washington Times*)
265. James Vlahos, "Surveillance Society: New High-Tech Cameras Are Watching You", *Poplar Mechanics*, October 1, 2009
266. Wikipedia – *Surveillance* article, p. 4
267. Ibid, *Surveillance*, p. 3
268. Ibid, *Surveillance*, p. 1
269. Naomi Klein, "China's All-Seeing Eye", <http://www.RollingStone.com> , from Issue 1053 - May 29, 2008
270. National Security Strategy, 2010", released by the Obama Administration on 27 May, 2010, overview by COUNCIL on FOREIGN RELATIONS, pp. 1, 6-8

<http://www.cfr.org/defensehomeland-security/national-security-strategy-2010/p22232>  
and <http://www.whitehouse.gov/the-press-office/advancing-ourinterests-actions-support-presidents-national-se...>

271. Erwin Lutzer, *WHEN A NATION FORGETS GOD – 7 LESSONS WE MUST LEARN FROM NAZI GERMANY*, (Chicago, IL, Moody Publishers, 2010), p. 48
272. John Foxe, *FOXES' BOOK OF MARTYRS*, (Peabody, MA, HENDRICKSON PUBLISHERS, 2004), pp. 57-59
273. Ibid., *FOXES' BOOK OF MARTYRS*, pp. 59-62
274. Ibid., *FOXES' BOOK OF MARTYRS*, pp. 62-68
275. Ibid., *FOXES' BOOK OF MARTYRS*, pp. 67-70
276. Samuel Morland, *The History of the Evangelical Churches of the Valleys of Piedmont, Volume I*, (Paris, AR, The Baptist Standard Bearer, 2001)
277. Ibid., *The History of the Evangelical Churches of the Valleys of Piedmont, Vol. I*,
278. Ibid., *BEHIND THE PURPLE CURTAIN*, pp. 94-95
279. Ibid., *VATICAN IMPERIALISM IN THE TWENTIETH CENTURY*, pp. 408-409
280. Ibid., *BEHIND THE PURPLE CURTAIN*, pp. 249-250
281. Ibid., *BEHIND THE PURPLE CURTAIN*, p. 252
282. "Augustine of Hippo Quotes",  
[www.goodreads.com/author/quote/6819578.Augustine\\_of\\_Hippo](http://www.goodreads.com/author/quote/6819578.Augustine_of_Hippo)
283. Karl Keating, *What Catholics Really Believe—Setting the Record Straight*, (Ann Arbor, MI, Servant Publications, 1992), p. 112
284. Alexander Hislop, *THE TWO BABYLONS OR THE PAPAL WORSHIP PROVED TO BE THE WORSHIP OF NIMROD AND HIS WIFE*, (New York, NY, LOIZEAUX BROTHERS, PUBLISHERS, 1943), pp. 2-
285. <http://www.en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Dialectic>
286. James McCarthy in *The GOSPEL ACCORDING TO ROME*, (Eugene, OR, HARVEST HOUSE PUBLISHERS, 1995).